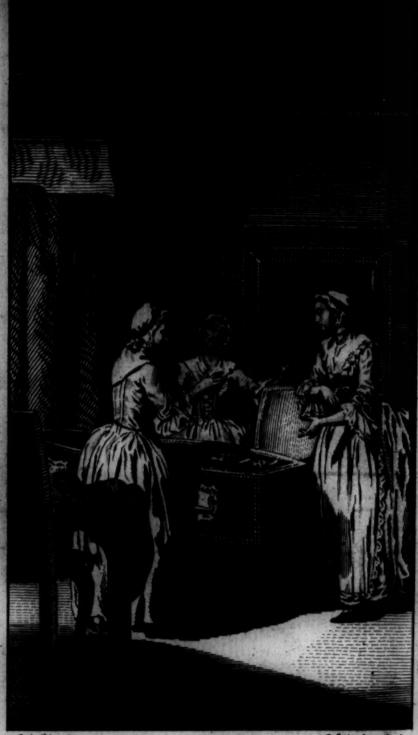


S. Wale dol.

algrigation Souls



S. Wale dol.

algrigation Souls

CLARISSA.

OR, THE

HISTORY

OFA

YOUNG LADY:

Comprehending

The most Important Concerns of Private LIFE.

And particularly flewing,

The Diftreffes that may attend the MISCONDUCT
Both of PARENTS and CHILDREN,

In Relation to MARRIAGE.

VOL. VII.

The SIXTH EDITION.



LONDON:

Printed for J. and F. RIVINGTON, R. BALDWIN, S. CROWDER, W. JOHNSTON, C. RIVINGTON, T. LOWNDES, T. DAVIES, J. JOHNSON and J. PAYNE, T. BECKET, W. GEIFFIE, F. NEWBERY, T. CABELL, and J. KNOX.

M DCC LXVIII.

CEARSON.



i a

a m

THE SERVE TO THE SERVE

THE

HISTORY

OF

CLARISSA HARLOWE.

VOL. VII.

LETTER I.

Mr. LOVELACE, To JOHN BELFORD, E/q:

Friday, July 28.



Have three Letters of thine to take notice of (a): But am divided in my mind, whether to quarrel with thee, on thy unmerciful reflections; or to thank thee, for thy acceptable particularity and diligence.

But several of my sweet Dears have I, indeed, in my time made to cry and laugh, before the cry could go off the other: Why may I not, therefore, curse and applaud thee in the same moment? So take both in one: And what follows, as it shall rise from my pen,

How often have I ingenuously confessed my sins against this excellent creature?---Yet thou never sparest me, altho' as bad a man as myself. Since then I get so little by my confessions, I had a good mind to try

B 2

(a) Letters xcvi. xcvii, xcviii. of Vol. VJ.

to defend myself; and that not only from antient and modern Story, but from common practice; and yet avoid repeating any-thing I have suggested before in

my own behalf.

Briefly then, from antient story first:---Dost thou not think, that I am as much entitled to forgiveness on Miss Harlowe's account, as Virgil's hero was on Queen Dido's? For what an ungrateful variet was that vagabond to the bospitable princess, who had willingly conferred upon him the last favour?---Stealing away (whence, I suppose, the ironical phrase of Trusty Trojan to this day) like a thief---Pretendedly indeed at the command of the gods; but could that be, when the errand he went upon was to rob other princes, not only of their dominions, but of their lives?---Yet this fellow is, at every word the pius Æneas with the immortal bard who celebrates him.

Should Miss Harlowe even break her heart (which Heaven forbid!) for the usage she has received (to say nothing of her disappointed pride, to which her death would be attributable, more than to reason) what comparison will ber fate hold to Queen Dido's? And have I half the obligation to her, that Æneas had to the Queen of Carthage? The latter placing a confidence, the former none, in her man ?--- Then, whom else have I robbed? Whom else have I injured? Her Brother's worthless life I gave him, instead of taking any man's; while the Trojan vagabond deftroyed his thousands. Why then should it not be the pius Lovelace, as well as the pius Æneas? For, doft thou think, had a conflagration happened, and had it been in my power, that I would not have faved my old Anchifes (as he did his from the Ilion bonfire) even at the expence of my Creufa, had I had a wife of that name?

But for a more modern instance in my favour---Have I used Miss Harlowe, as our famous MaidenQueen, as she was called, used one of her own blood, a Sister-Queen; who threw herself into her protection from her rebel-subjects; and whom she detained prisoner Eighteen years, and at last cut off her head? Yet do not honest Protestants pronounce her pious too?---And call her particularly their Queen?

terwards?

d

d

e)

fe

n-

n.

Then, as to the worst part of my treatment of this Lady---How many men are there, who, as well as I, have sought, by intoxicating liquors, first to inebriate, then to subdue? What signifies what the potations

were, when the same end was in view?

Let me tell thee, upon the whole, that neither the Queen of Carthage, nor the Queen of Scots, would have thought they had any reason to complain of cruelty, had they been used no worse than I have used the Queen of my heart: And then do I not aspire with my whole Soul to repair by marriage? Would the pius Æneas, thinkest thou, have done such a piece of justice by Dido, had she lived?

Come, come, Belford, let people run away with notions as they will, I am comparatively a very innocent man. And if by these, and other like reasonings, I have quieted my own conscience, a great end is an-

fwered. What have I to do with the world?

And now I fit me peaceably down to confider thy Letters.

I hope thy pleas in my favour (a), when she gave thee (so generously gave thee) for me, my Letters, were urged with an honest energy. But I suspect thee much for being too ready to give up thy client. Then thou hast such a misgiving aspect; an aspect, rather B

⁽a) See Letter zevii. of Vol. VI.

inviting rejection, than carrying persuasion with it; and art fuch an helitating, fuch an humming and hawing caitiff; that I shall attribute my failure, if I do fail, rather to the inability and ill looks of my advocate, than to my cause. Again, Thou art deprived of the force men of our cast give to arguments; for fhe won't let thee fwear !--- Art moreover a very heavy thoughtless fellow; tolerably only at a second rebound; a horrid dunce at the impromptu. These, encountering with fuch a Lady, are great disadvantages .-- And still a greater is thy balancing (as thou dost at present) between old Rakery and new Reformation: Since this puts thee into the same situation with her, as they told me at Leipfick Martin Luther was in, at the first public dispute which he held, in defence of his supposed new doctrines with Eckius. For Martin was then but a linfey-wolfey reformer. He retained some dogma's, which, by natural confequence, made others, that he held, untenable. So that Eckius, in some points, had the better of him. But, from that time, he made clear work, renounceing all that stood in his way: And then his doctrines ran upon all fours. He was never puzzled afterwards; and could boldly declare, that he would defend them in the face of angels and men; and to his friends, who would have diffuaded him from venturing to appear before the Emperor Charles the Fifth at Spires, That, were there as many devils at Spires, as tiles upon the houses, he would go. An answer that is admired by every Protestant Saxon to this day.

Since then thy unhappy aukwardness destroys the force of thy arguments, I think thou hadst better (for the present however) forbear to urge her on the subject of accepting the reparation I offer; lest the continual teazing of her to forgive me should but strengthen her in her denials of forgiveness; till, for consistency sake, she'll be forced to adhere to a resolution so often avowed---Whereas, if lest to herself,

a little

a little time, and better health, which will bring on better spirits, will give her quicker resentments; those quicker resentments will lead her into vehemence; that vehemence will subside, and turn into expostulation and parley: My friends will then interpose, and guaranty for me: And all our trouble on both sides will be over. Such is the natural course of things.

I cannot endure thee for thy hopelefness in the Lady's recovery (a); and that in contradiction to the

Doctor and Apothecary.

Time, in the words of Congreve, thou fayest, will give encrease to her afflictions. But why so? Knowest thou not, that those words (so contrary to common experience) were applied to the case of a person, while passion was in its sull vigour?---At such a time, every one in a heavy grief thinks the same: But as Enthusiasts do by Scripture, so dost thou by the Poets thou hast read: Any-thing that carries the most distant allusion from either to the case in hand, is put down by both for gospel, however incongruous to the general scope of either, and to that case. So once, in a pulpit, I heard one of the former very vehemently declare himself to be a dead dog; when every man, woman, and child, were convinced to the contray by his howling.

I can tell thee, that, if nothing else will do, I am determined, in spite of thy buskin-airs, and of thy engagements for me to the contrary, to see her myself.

Face to face have I known many a quarrel made up, which distance would have kept alive, and widened. Thou wilt be a madder Jack than he in the Tale of a Tub, if thou givest an active opposition to this interview.

In short, I cannot bear the thought, that a woman whom once I had bound to me in the silken cords of Love, should slip through my singers, and be able, while my heart slames out with a violent passion for her,

B 4

te

le

⁽a) See Letter xcvii. of Vol. VI.

to despise me, and to set both Love and Me at defiance. Thou canst not imagine how much I envy thee, and her Dostor, and her Apothecary, and every one who I hear are admitted to her presence and conversation; and wish to be the one or the other in turn.

Wherefore, if nothing else will do, I will see her. I'll tell thee of an admirable expedient, just come

cross me, to save thy promise, and my own.

Mrs. Lovick, you say, is a good woman: If the Lady be worse, she shall advise her to send for a Parfon to pray by her: Unknown to her, unknown to the Lady, unknown to Thee (for so it may pass) I will contrive to be the man, petticoated out, and vested in a gown and cassock. I once, for a certain purpose, did assume the canonicals; and I was thought to make a fine sleek appearance; my broad rose-bound beaver became me mightily; and I was much admired upon the whole by all who saw me.

Methinks it must be charmingly apropos to see me kneeling down by her bed-side (I am sure I shall pray heartily) beginning out of the Common-prayer Book the Sick Office for the restoration of the languishing Lady, and concluding with an exhortation to charity

and forgiveness for Myself.

I will consider of this matter. But, in whatever shape I shall chuse to appear, of this thou mayst affure thyself, I will apprise thee beforehand of my visit, that thou mayst contrive to be out of the way, and to know nothing of the matter. This will save thy word; and, as to mine, can she think worse of me than she does at present?

An Indispensable of true Love and prosound Respect, in thy wise opinion (a), is absurdity or aukwardness. --- Tis surprising, that thou shouldst be one of those partial mortals, who take their measures of right and wrong from what they find themselves to be, and cannot help being !--- So aukwardness is a perfection in the

Let. 1. Clariffa Harlowe.

aukward!—At this rate, no man ever can be in the wrong. But I insist upon it, that an aukward sellow will do every-thing aukwardly: And if he be like thee, will, when he has done soolishly, rack his unmeaning brain for excuses as aukward as his sirst fault. Respectful Love is an inspirer of actions worthy of itself; and he who cannot shew it, where he most means it, manifests, that he is an unpolite rough creature, a persect Belford, and has it not in him.

But here thou'lt throw out that notable witticifin, that my outside is the best of me, thine the worst of thee; and that, if I set about mending my mind, thou wilt mend thy appearance.

But, pr'ythee, Jack, don't stay for that; but fet about thy amendment in dress when thou leavest off thy mourning; for why thouldst thou preposses in thy disfavour all those who never faw thee before?---It is hard to remove early-taken prejudices, whether of liking or distaste: People will bunt, as I may fay, for reasons to confirm first impressions, in compliment to their own fagacity: Nor is it every mind that has the ingenuousness to confess itself mistaken, when it finds itself to be wrong. Thou thyself art an adept in the pretended science of reading men; and, whenever thou art out, wilt study to find some reasons why it was more probable that thou shouldst have been right; and wilt watch every motion and action, and every word and fentiment, in the person thou hast once cenfured, for proofs, in order to help thee to revive and maintain thy first opinion. And, indeed, as thou feldom errest on the favourable side, human nature is fo vile a thing, that thou art likely to be right five times in fix, on the other : And perhaps it is but gueffing of others, by what thou findest in thy own heart, to have reason to compliment thyself on thy pence tration.

e

d

C

t,

s.

fe

nd

n-

he 11 Here is preachment for thy preachment: And I hope if thou likest thy own, thou wilt thank me for mine;

B 5

the

the rather, as thou mayest be the better for it, if thou wilt: Since it is calculated for thy own meridian.

Well, but the Lady refers my destiny to the Letter she has written, assually written, to Miss Howe; to whom it seems she has given her reasons why she will not have me. I long to know the contents of this Letter: But am in great hopes that she has so expressed her denials, as shall give room to think, she only wants to be persuaded to the contrary, in order

to reconcile herself to herself .-

I could make some pretty observations upon one or two places of the Lady's Meditation: But, wicked as I am thought to be, I never was fo abandoned, as toturn into ridicule, or even to treat with levity, things Sacred. I think it the highest degree of ill manners, to jest upon those subjects which the world in general look upon with veneration, and call Divine. I would not even treat the Mythology of the Heathen to a Heathen, with the Ridicule that perhaps would fairly lie from some of the absurdities that strike every common observer. Nor, when at Rome, and in other popish countries, did I ever behave indecently at those Ceremonies which I thought very extraordinary: For I faw fome people affected, and feemingly edified, by them; and I contented myself to think, tho' they were beyond my comprehension, that if they answered any good end to the many, there was Religion enough in them, or Civil Policy at least, to exempt them from the ridicule of even a bad man who had common fense and good manners.

Tor the like reason I have never given noisy or tumultuous instances of dislike to a New Play, if I thought it ever so indisferent: For I concluded, first, that every one was entitled to see quietly what he paid for: And, next, as the Theatre (the Epitome of the World) consisted of Pit, Boxes, and Gallery, it was hard, I thought, if there could be such a performance exhibited, as would not please somebody in

that

that mixed multitude: And, if it did, those somebodies had as much right to enjoy their own judgments undiffurbedly, as I had to enjoy mine.

This was my way of shewing my disapprobation; I never went again. And as a man is at his option, whether he will go to a Play or not, he has not the fame excuse for expressing his dislike clamorously as if

he were compelled to fee it.

I have ever, thou knowest, declared against those shallow Libertines, who could not make out their pretensions to wit, but on two subjects, to which every man of true wit will feorn to be beholden : PROFANE-NESS and OBSCENITY, I mean; which must shock the ears of every man or woman of sense, without answering any end, but of shewing a very low and abandoned nature: And, till I came acquainted with the brutal Mowbray [No great praise to myself from fuch a tutor I was far from making fo free as I now do, with oaths and curses; for then I was forced to outswear him sometimes, in order to keep him in his Allegiance to me his General: Nay, I often check myself to myself, for this empty unprofitable liberty of speech; in which we are outdone by the sons of the common-fewer.

All my vice is Women, and the Love of plots and intrigues; and I cannot but wonder, how I fell into those shocking freedoms of speech; since, generallyspeaking, they are far from helping forward my main end: Only, now-and-then, indeed, a little novice rifes to one's notice, who feems to think drefs, and eaths, and curses, the diagnostics of the Rakish spir rit she is inclined to favour : And indeed they are the only qualifications that fome who are called Rakes and Pretty fellows have to boast of. But what must the women be, who can be attracted by fuch emplyfouled profligates !-- Since wickedness with wit is hardly tolerable; but, without it, is equally shock-

B. 6

ing and contemptible.

1-

1

ıt,

he

ne

y,

in

at

There

There again is preachment for thy preachment; and thou wilt be apt to think, that I am reforming too: But no fuch matter. If this were New Light darting in upon me, as thy Morality feems to be to thee, fomething of this kind might be apprehended: But this was always my way of thinking; and I defy thee, or any of thy brethren, to name a time, when I have either ridiculed Religion, or talked obscenely. On the contrary, thou knowest how often I have checked that Bear in Love-matters Mowbray, and the finical Tourville, and thyself too, for what ye have called the Double-entendre. In Love, as in points that required a manly refentment, it has always been my maxim, to act, rather than talk; and I do affure thee, as to the first, the Women themselves will excuse the one sooner than the other.

As to the admiration thou expresses for the Books of Scripture, thou art certainly right in it. But 'tis strange to me, that thou wert ignorant of their Beauty, and noble Simplicity, till now. Their Antiquity always made me reverence them: And how was it possible that thou couldest not, for that reason, if for

no other, give them a perusal?

I'll tell thee a fhort Story, which I had from my Tutor, admonishing me against exposing myself by ignorant wonder, when I should quit College, to go

to town, or travel.

'The first time Dryden's Alexander's Feast fell into his hands, he told me, he was prodigiously charmed with it: And, having never heard anybody speak of it before, thought, as thou dost of * the Bible, that he had made a new discovery.

He haftened to an appointment which he had with feveral wits (for he was then in town) one of whom was a noted Critic, who, according to him, had more merit than good fortune; for all the little

' nibblers in wit, whose writings would not stand

the test of criticism, made it, he said, a common cause to run him down, as men would a mad dog.

The young gentleman (for young he then was) fet forth magnificently in the praises of that inimitable performance; and gave himself airs of second-band

merit, for finding out its beauties.

• The old Bard heard him out with a smile, which the collegian took for approbation, till he spoke; and then it was in these mortifying words: 'Sdeath,

Sir, where have you lived till now, or with what

fort of company have you converfed, young as you are, that you have never before heard of the finest

piece in the English Language?

This Story had fuch an effect upon me, who had ever a proud heart, and wanted to be thought a clever fellow, that, in order to avoid the like difgrace, I laid down two Rules to myself. The first. whenever I went into company where there were strangers, to hear every one of them speak, before I gave myself liberty to prate: The other, if I found any of them above my match, to give up all title to new discoveries, contenting myself to praise what they praised, as beauties familiar to me, tho' I had never heard of them before. And fo, by degrees, I got the reputation of a wit myself: And when I threw off all reftraint, and books, and learned conversation, and fell in with some of our brethren who are now wandering in Erebus, and with fuch others as Belton, Mowbray, Tourville, and Thyfelf, I fet up on my own Stock; and, like what we have been told of Sir Richard, in his latter days, valued myfelf on being the Emperor of the company; for, having fathomed the depth of them all, and afraid of no rival but thee, whom also I had got a little under (by my gaiety and promptitude at least) I proudly, like Addifon's Cato, delighted to give Laws to my little Senate.

LETTER II.

Mr. LOVELACE, To JOHN BELFORD, Efq:

BUT now I have cleared myfelf of any intentional Levity on occasion of my Beloved's Meditation; which, as you observe, is finely suited to her case (that is to say, as she and you have drawn her case); I cannot help expressing my pleasure, that by one or two verses of it [The arrow, Jack, and what she feared being come upon her!] I am encouraged to hope, what it will be very surprising to me if it do not happen: That is, in plain English, that the dear crea-

ture is in the way to be a Mamma.

This cursed Arrest, because of the ill effects the terror might have had upon her, in that hoped-for circumstances, has concerned me more than any other account. It would be the pride of my life to prove, in this charming Frost-piece, the Triumph of Nature over Principle, and to have a young Lovelace by fuch. an angel: And then, for its fake, I am confident fhe will live, and will legitimate it. And what a meritorious little Cherub would it be, that should lay an obligation upon both parents before it was born, which neither of them would be able to repay! -Could I be fure it is fo, I should be out of all pain for her recovery: Pain, I fay; fince, were she todie---[Die! abominable word! how I hate it!] I verily think I should be the most miserable man in the world.

As for the earnestness she expresses for death, she has found the words ready to her hand in honest Job; else she would not have delivered herself with such

ftrength and vehemence.

Her innate piety (as I have more than once obferved) will not permit her to shorten her own life, either by violence or neglect. She has a mind too noble for that; and would have done it before now,

had

1:

0

had the designed any such thing: For to do it, like the Roman Matron, when the mischief is over, and it can serve no end; and when the man, however a Tarquin, as some may think me in this action, is not a Tarquin in power, so that no national point can be made of it; is what she has too much good sense to think of.

Then, as I observed in a like case, a little while ago, the distress, when this was written, was strong upon her; and she saw no end of it: But all was darkness and apprehension before her. Moreover, has she it not in her power to disappoint, as much as she has been disappointed? Revenge, Jack, has induced many a woman to cherish a life, to which grief

and despair would otherwise have put an end.

And, after all, death is no fuch eligible thing, as Job in his calamities, makes it. And a death defired merely from worldly disappointments shews not a right mind, let me tell this Lady, whatever she may think of it (a). You and I, Jack, altho' not afraid, in the height of passion or resentment, to rush into those dangers which might be followed by a sudden and violent death, whenever a point of honour calls upon us, would shudder at his cool and deliberate approach in a lingering sickness, which had debilitated the spirits.

So we read of a famous French general [I forget as well the reign of the prince, as the name of the man] who, having faced with intrepidity the ghastly varlet on an hundred occasions in the field, was the most dejected of wretches, when, having

forfeited

⁽a) Mr. Lovelace could not know, that the Lady was so thoroughly fensible of the solidity of this doctrine, as she really was: For in her Letter to Mrs. Norton (No. xciv. of Vol. VI.) she says,—" Nor let it be imagined, that my present turn of mind proceeds from gloominess or melancholy: For, altho' it was brought on by disappointment (the world shewing me early, even at my first rushing into it, its true and ugly sace); yet I hope; that it has obtained a better root, and will every day more and more, by its fruits demonstrate to me, and to all my friends, that it has."

forfeited his life for treason, he was led with all the cruel parade of preparation, and surrounding guards, to the scaffold.

The poets fays well:

'Tis not the Stoic lesson, get by rote,
The pomp of words, and pedant dissertation,
That can support us in the bour of terror.
Books have taught cowards to talk nobly of it:
But when the trial comes, they start, and stand aghast.

Very true: For then it is the old man in the fable, with his bundle of sticks.

The Lady is well read in Shakespeare, our English pride and glory; and must sometimes reason with herself in his words, so greatly expressed, that the subject, affecting as it is, cannot produce anything greater.

Ay, but to die, and go we know not where;
To lie in cold obstruction, and to rot;
This sensible, warm motion to become
A kneaded clod; and the delighted spirit
To bathe in siery floods, or to reside
In thrilling regions of thick ribbed ice:
To be imprison d in the viewless winds,
Or blown, with restless violence, about
The pendent wirlds; or to be worse than wor
Of those that lawless and uncertain the ught
Imagines howling: 'Tis too horrible!
The weariest and most loaded worldly life,
That pain, age, penury, and imprisonment,
Can lay on nature, is a paradise
To what we fear of death.

I find, by one of thy three Letters, that my Beloved had some account from Hickman of my interview with Miss Howe, at Col. Ambrose's. I had a very agreeable time of it there; altho' severely rail-

lied

lied by feveral of the Affembly. It concerns me, however, not a little, to find our affair so generally known among the Flippanti of both Sexes. It is all her own fault. There never, furely, was fuch an odd little foul as this .-- Not to keep her own Secret, when the revealing of it could answer no possible good end; and when the wants not (one would think) to raise to herself either pity or friends, or to me enemies, by the proclamation !--- Why, Jack, must not all her own Sex laugh in their fleeves at her weakness? What would become of the peace of the world, if all women should take it into their heads to follow her example? What a fine time of it would the heads of families have? Their Wives always filling their ears with their confessions; their Daughters with theirs: Sifters would be every day fetting their Brothers about cutting of throats, if the Brothers had at heart the bonour of their families, as it is called; and the whole world would either be a scene of confusion; or cuckoldom as much the fashion as it is in Lithuania (a).

I am glad, however, that Miss Howe (as much as she hates me) kept her word with my Cousins on their visit to her, and with me at the Colonel's, to endeavour to persuade her friend to make up all matters by Matrimony; which, no doubt, is the best, nay, the only method she can take, for her own honour, and

that of her family.

I had once thoughts of revenging myself on that Vixen, and, particularly, as thou mayst (b) remember, had planned something to this purpose on the journey she is going to take, which had been talked of some time. But, I think---Let me see---Yes, I think, I will let this Hickman have her safe and en-

⁽a) In Lithuania, the women are faid to have so allowedly their gallants, called odjutores, that the husbands hardly ever enter upon any party of pleasure without them.

(b) See Vol. IV. p. 252, & seq.

of a mortal, and that I had made the worst of him:

And I am glad, for his own sake, he has not launch-

ed out too virulently against me to thee.

But thou feeft, Jack, by her refusal of money from him, or Miss Howe (a), that the dear Extravagant takes a delight in oddnesses, chusing to part with her cloaths, though for a song. Dost think she is not a little touched at times? I am asraid she is. A little spice of that infanity, I doubt, runs thro' her, that she had in a stronger degree, in the first week of my operations. Her contempt of life; her proclamations; her resusal of matrimony; and now of money from her most intimate friends; are sprinklings of this kind, and no other way, I think to be accounted for.

Her Apothecary is a good honest fellow. I like him much. But the filly dear's harping so continually upon one string, dying, dying, dying, is what I have no patience with. I hope all this melancholy jargon is owing entirely to the way I would have her to be in. And it being as new to her, as the Bible beauties to thee (b), no wonder she knows not what to make of herself; and so fancies she is breeding death, when the event will turn out

quite the contrary.

Thou art a forry fellow in thy remarks on the education and qualification of Smarts and Beaux of the Rakish order; if by thy We's and Us's thou meanest thyself or me (c): For I pretend to say, that the picture has no resemblance of Us, who have read and conversed as we have done. It may indeed, and I believe it does, resemble the generality of the sops and coxcombs about town. But That let them look to; for, if it affects not me, to what purpose thy random shot?---If indeed thou findest.

⁽a) See Letter xeviii of Vol. VI.

⁽b) Ibid. Letter xcvi.

findest, by the new light darted in upon thee, since thou hast had the honour of conversing with this admirable creature, that the cap sits thy own head, why then, according to the Qui capit rule, e'en take and clap it on: And I will add a string of bells to it, to complete thee for the fore-horse of the idiot team.

Altho' I just now said a kind thing or two for this fellow Hickman; yet I can tell thee, I could (to use one of my noble Peer's humble phrases) eat him up without a corn of salt, when I think of his impudence to salute my charmer twice at parting (a): And have still less patience with the Lady herself for presuming to offer her cheek or lip [Thou sayest not which] to him, and to press his clumsy sist between her charming hands. An honour worth a King's ransom; and what I would give---What would I not give? to have!---And then he, in return, to press her, as thou sayest he did, to his stupid heart; at that time, no doubt, more sensible than ever it was before!

By thy description of their parting, I see thou wilt be a delicate sellow in time. My mortification in this Lady's displeasure, will be thy exaltation from her conversation. I envy thee as well for thy opportunities, as for thy improvements: And such an impression has thy concluding paragraph (b) made upon me, that I wish I do not get into a Resormation humonr as well as thou: And then what a couple of lamentable puppies shall we make, howling in re-

citative to each other's discordant music!

Let me improve upon the thought, and imagine that, turned Hermits, we have opened the two old Caves at Hornsey, or dug new ones; and in each of our Cells set up a death's head, and an hourglass, for objects of contemplation---I have seen such a picture: But then, Jack, had not the old penitent

⁽a) See Letter xcviii. of Vol. VI.

What figures would a couple of brocaded or laced-waistcoated toupets make with their sour screw'd up half-cock'd faces, and more than half shut eyes, in a kneeling attitude, recapitulating their respective rogueries? This scheme, were we only to make trial of it, and return afterwards to our old ways, might serve to the better purpose by far, than Horner's in the Country Wise, to bring the pretty wenches to us.

Let me see; The Author of Hudibras has somewhere a description that would suit us, when met in one of our Caves, and comparing our dismal notes together. This is it. Suppose me described—

--- He sat upon his rump,
His head like one in doleful dump:
Betwixt his knees his hands apply'd
Unto his cheeks, on either side:
And by him, in another hole,
Sat stupid Belford, cheek by jowl.

I know thou wilt think me too ludicrous. think myself so. It is truly, to be ingenuous, a forced put: For my passions are so wound up, that I am obliged either to laugh or cry. Like honest drunken Jack Daventry [Poor fellow !--- What an unhappy end was his !] --- Thou knowest, I used to observe, that whenever he rose from an entertainment, which he never did fober, it was his way, as foon as he got to the door, to look round him, like a carrier pigeon just thrown up, in order to fpy out his course; and then, taking to his heels, he would run all the way home, tho' it were a mile or two, when he could hardly stand, and must have tumbled on his nose if he had attempted to walk moderately. This then be my excuse, in this my unconverted estate, for a conclusion so unworthy of the conclusion to thy third Letter. What

What a length have I run!--- Thou wilt own, that if I pay thee not in quality, I do in quantity: And yet I leave a multitude of things unobserved upon. Indeed I hardly at this present know what to do with myself but scribble. Tired with Lord M. who, in his recovery, has played upon me the Fable of the Nurse, the crying Child, and the Wolf---Tired with my Coufins Montague, though charming girls, were they not fo near of kin--- Tired with Mowbray and Tourville, and their everlasting identity --- Tired with the country---Tired of myself---Longing for what I have not --- I must go to town; and there have an interview with the Charmer of my Soul: For desperate diseases must have desperate remedies; and I only wait to know my doom from Miss Howe; and then, if it be rejection, I will try my fate, and receive my fentence at her feet .-- But I will apprife thee of it beforehand, as I told thee, that thou mayst keep thy Parole with the Lady in the best manner thou canft.

LETTER III.

Miss Howe, To Miss CLARISSA HARLOWE.

[In answer to hers of July 27. No. c. ci. in Vol. VI.]

Friday Night, July 28.

I Will now, my dearest friend, write to you all my mind, without reserve, on your resolution not to have this vilest of men. You gave me, in yours of Sunday the 23d, reasons so worthy of the pure mind of my Clarisla, in support of this your resolution, that nothing but Self-love, lest I should lose my everamiable friend, could have prevailed upon me to wish you to alter it.

Indeed, I thought it was impossible there could be (however desirable) so noble an instance given by any of our Sex, of a passion conquered, when there were

fo many inducements to give way to it. And, therefore I was willing to urge you once more to overcome your just indignation, and to be prevailed upon by the folicitations of bis friends, before you carried your resentments to so great a height, that it would be more difficult for you, and less to your honour, to comply, than if you had complied at first.

But now, my dear, that I fee you fixed in your noble resolution; and that it is impossible for your pure mind to join itself with that of so perjured a miscreant; I congratulate you most heartily upon it; and beg your pardon for but seeming to doubt, that Theory and Practice were not the same thing with my beloved Clarissa.

I have only one thing that faddens my heart on this occasion; and that is, the bad state of health Mr. Hickman (unwillingly) owns you are in. Hitherto you have well observed the doctrine you always laid down to me, That a censured person should first seek to be justified to herself, and give but a second place to the world's opinion of her; and, in all cases where the two could not be reconciled, have preferred the first to the last; and are, of consequence, well justified to your own heart, as well as to your Anna Howe. Let me therefore befeech you to endeavour, by all poffible means, to recover your health and spirits: And this, as what, if it can be effected, will crown the work, and shew the world, that you were indeed got above the base wretch; and, tho' put out of your course for a little while, could resume it again, and go on bleffing all within your knowledge, as well by your example, as by your precepts.

For Heaven's fake, then, for the world's fake, for the honour of our Sex, and for my fake, once more I befeech you, try to overcome this shock: And, if you can overcome it, I shall then be as happy as I wish to

be;

d

as

be

the

oft

no

ple

e

r

d

r

be; for I cannot, indeed I cannot, think of parting

with you, for many, many years to come.

The reasons you give for discouraging my wishes to have you near us, are so convincing, that I ought at present to acquiesce in them: But, my dear, when your mind is fully settled, as (now you are so absolutely determined in it, with regard to this wretch) I hope it will soon be, I shall expect you with us, or near us: And then you shall chalk out every path that I will set my foot in; nor will I turn aside either

to the right hand or to the left.

You wish I had not mediated for you to your friends. I wish so too; because my mediation was ineffectual; because it may give new ground for the malice of some of them to work upon; and because you are angry with me for doing so. But how, as I said in my former, could I sit down in quiet, when I knew how uneasy their implacableness made you?—But I will tear myself from the subject; for I see I shall be warm again—and displease you—And there is not one thing in the world that I would do, however agreeable to myself, if I thought it would disoblige you; nor any one that I would omit to do, if I knew it would give you pleasure. And indeed, my dear half-severe friend, I will try if I cannot avoid the fault as willingly as I would the rebuke.

For this reason, I forbear saying any-thing on so nice a subject as your Letter to your Sister. It must be right, because you think it so--and if it be taken as it ought, that will shew you that it is. But if it begets insults and revilings, as it is but too likely---I

find you don't intend to let me know it.

You were always so ready to accuse yourself for other peoples faults, and to suspect your own conduct, rather than the judgment of your relations, that I have often told you, I cannot imitate you in this. It is not a necessary point of belief with me, that all people in years are therefore wise; or that all young people

are

k

n

the

Soi

be

the

moi

ever

Mon

est p

have

grapl

It, as

 Y_0

1

are therefore rash and headstrong: It may be generally the case, as far as I know: And possibly it may be so in the case of my Mother and her Girl: But I will venture to say, that it has not yet appeared to be so between the principals of Harlowe-Place, and their

fecond daughter.

You are for excusing them beforehand for their expected cruelty, as not knowing what you have fuffered, nor how ill you are: They have beard of the former, and are not forry for it: Of the latter, they have been told, and I have most reason to know how they have taken it --- But I shall be far from avoiding the fault, and as furely shall incur the rebuke, if I say any more upon this subject. I will therefore only add at present, That your reasonings in their behalf shew you to be all excellence; their returns to you, that they are all-Do, my dear, let me end with a little bit of spiteful justice---But you won't, I know --- So I have done, quite done, however reluctantly: Yet if you think of the word I would have faid, don't doubt the justice of it, and fill up the blank with it.

You intimate that were I actually married, and Mr. Hickman to desire it, you would think of obliging me with a visit on the occasion; and that perhaps when with me, it would be difficult for you to remove far

from me.

Lord, my dear, what a stress do you seem to lay upon Mr. Hickman's desiring it!--To be sure he does, and would of all things desire to have you near us, and with us, if we might be so savoured---Policy, as well as veneration for you, would undoubtedly make the man, if not a sool, desire this. But let me tell you, that if Mr. Hickman, after Marriage, should pretend to dispute with me my friendships, as I hope I am not quite a sool, I should let him know how far his own quiet was concerned in such an impertinence; especially if they were such friendships as were contracted before I knew him.

I know I always differed from you on this subject; for you think more highly of a Husband's prerogative, than most people do of the Royal one. These notions, my dear, from a person of your sense and judgment, are no-way advantageous to us; inastruch as they justify that assuming Sex in their insolence; when hardly one out of ten of them, their opportunities considered, deserves any prerogative at all. Look thro' all the samilies we know; and we shall not find one-third of them have half the sense of their wives. And yet these are to be vested with prerogatives! And a woman of twice their sense has nothing to do but hear, tremble, and obey—And for conscience-sake too, I warrant!

But Mr. Hickman and I may perhaps have a little discourse upon these sort of subjects, before I suffer him to talk of the Day: And then I shall let him know what he has to trust to; as he will me, if he be a fincere man, what he pretends to expect from me. But let me tell you, my dear, that it is more in your power, than perhaps you think it, to basten the Day so much pressed for by my Mother, as well as wished-for by you-For the very Day that you can affure me, that you are in a tolerable state of health, and have discharged your Doctor and Apothecary, at their own motions, on that account-Some Day in a month from that defirable news, shall be it. So, my dear, make hafte and be well, and then this matter will be brought to effect in a manner more agreeable to your Anna Howe than it otherwise ever can.

n

L

Y

S,

s,

as

ke

H

ld

pe

ar

e;

1

I send this day, by a particular hand, to the Misses Montague your Letter of just reproduction of the greatest profligate in the kingdom; and hope I shall not have done amiss that I transcribe some of the paragraphs of your Letter of the 23d, and send them with it, as you at first intended should be done.

You are, it seems (and that too much for your Vol. VII.

health) employed in writing. I hope it is in penning down the particulars of your Tragical Story. And my Mother has put me in mind to press you to it, with a view, that one day, if it might be published under feigned names, it would be of as much use as honour to the Sex. My Mother says, she cannot help admiring you for the propriety of your resentment in your resusal of the wretch; and she would be extremely glad to have her advice of penning your sad Story complied with. And then, she says, your noble conduct throughout your trials and calamities will afford not only a shining example to your Sex; but at the same time (those calamities befalling Such a person) a fearful warning to the inconsiderate young creatures of it.

On Monday we shall set out on our journey; and I hope to be back in a fortnight, and on my return will have one pull more with my Mother for a London journey: And, if the pretence must be the buying of cloaths, the principal motive will be that of seeing once more my dear friend, while I can say, I have not finally given consent to the change of a Visitor into a Relation, and so can call myself Mr own, as

well as

Your,

ANNA Howe.

LETTER IV.

Mifs Howe, To the two Miffes Montague.

Dear Ladies,

Sat. July 29.

Have not been wanting to use all my interest with my beloved friend, to induce her to forgive and be reconciled to your kinsman (tho' he has so ill deserved it); and have even repeated my earnest advice to her on this head. This repetition, and the waiting for her Answer, having taken up time, have been the

the And and

frier

to

IN

W

(if

mo

he tiv

ner o

the cause, that I could not sooner do myself the ho-

nour of writing to you on this subject.

n

n

of

g

ve

or

25

rith

and

de-

rice

ait-

een

the

You will fee, by the inclosed, her immoveable refolution, grounded on noble and high-souled motives, which I cannot but regret and applaud at the same time: Applaud, for the justice of her determination, which will confirm all your worthy house in the opinion you had conceived of her unequalled merit; and regret, because I have but too much reason to apprehend, as well by that, as by the report of a gentleman just come from her, that she is in such a declining way as to her health, that her thoughts are very differently employed than on a continuance here.

The inclosed Letter she thought sit to send to me unsealed, that, after I had perused it, I might forward it to you: And this is the reason it is superscribed by myself, and sealed with my seal. It is very sull and peremptory; but as she had been pleased, in a Letter to me, dated the 23d instant (as soon as she could hold a pen) to give me more ample reasons why she could not comply with your pressing requests, as well as mine, I will transcribe some of the passages in that Letter, which will give one of the wickedest men in the world (if he sees them) reason to think himself one of the most unhappy, in the loss of so incomparable a wife as he might have gloried in, had he not been so superlatively wicked. These are the passages:

[See for these passages, Miss Harlowe's Letter, No. xci. of Vol. VI. dated July 23. marked with turned comma's thus "]

And now, Ladies, you have before you my beloved friend's reasons for her refusal of a man unworthy of the relation he bears to so many excellent persons: And I will add (for I cannot help it) that, the merit and rank of the person considered, and the vile manner of his proceedings, there never was a greater villainy committed: And since she thinks her sirst and

C 2

only

only fault cannot be expiated but by death, I pray to God daily, and will bourly from the moment I shall hear of that sad catastrophe, that He will be pleased to make him the subject of His vengeance, in some such way, as that all who know of his persidious crime, may see the hand of Heaven in the punishment of it!

You will forgive me, Ladies: I love not mine own Soul better than I do Miss Clarissa Harlowe. And the diffresses she has gone through; the persecution she fuffers from all her friends; the Curse she lies under, for his fake, from her implacable Father; her reduced health and circumstances, from high health and affluence; and that execrable Arrest and Confinement, which have deepened all her other calamities (and which must be laid at his door, as it was the act of his vile agents, that, whether from his immediate orders or not, naturally flowed from his preceding baseness); the Sex dishonoured in the eye of the world, in the person of one of the greatest ornaments of it; the unmanly methods, whatever they were (for I know not all as yet) by which he compaffed her ruin -All these considerations join to justify my warmth, and my execrations of a man, whom I think excluded by his crimes from the benefit even of christian forgiveness-And were you to see all she writes, and to know the admirable talents she is mistress of, you yourselves would join with me to admire her, and execrate him.

Believe me to be, with a high fense of your merits,

Dear Ladies,

Your most odedient bumble Servant,

ANNA HOWE.

Y

m

ca

m

9

I

n-

19

1

i-

5,

d

S,

E.

1-Y-land LETTER V.

Mrs. NORTON, To Miss CLARISSA HARLOWE.

My dearest young Lady, Friday, July 28.

I Have the consolation to tell you, that my Son is once again in an hopeful way, as to his health. He desires his duty to you. He is very low and weak. And so am I. But this is the first time that I have been able, for several days past, to sit up to write, or

I would not have been fo long filent.

Your letter to your Sister is received and answered. You have the answer by this time, I suppose. I wish it may be to your satisfaction: But am asraid it will not: For, by Betty Barnes, I find they were in a great serment on receiving yours, and much divided whether it should be answered or not. They will not yet believe that you are so ill, as (to my infinite concern) I find you are. What passed between Miss Harlowe and Miss Howe, has been, as I seared it would be, an aggravation.

I shewed Betty two or three passages in your Letter to me; and she seemed moved, and said, She would report them savourably, and would procure me a visit from Miss Harlowe, if I would promise to shew the same to her. But I have heard no more of that.

Methinks, I am forry you refuse the wicked man: But doubt not, nevertheless, that your motives for doing so are more commendable, than my wishes that you would not. But as you would be resolved, as I may say, on life, if you gave way to such a thought; and as I have so much interest in your recovery; I cannot sorbear shewing this regard to myself; and to ask you, If you cannot get over your just resentments?—But I dare say no more on this subject.

What a dreadful thing indeed was it for my dearest tender young Lady to be arrested in the Streets of Lon-

C 3

don!

don!—How does my heart go over again for you, what yours must have suffered at that time!—Yet this, to such a mind as yours, must be light, com-

pared to what you had fuffered before.

O my dearest Miss Clary, how shall we know what to pray for, when we pray, but that God's will may be done, and that we may be resigned to it!—When at Nine Years old, and afterwards at Eleven, you had a dangerous fever, how incessantly did we all grieve, and pray, and put up our vows to the Throne of Grace, for your recovery!—For all our lives were bound up in your life—Yet now, my dear, as it has proved (especially if we are soon to lose you) what a much more desirable event, both for you, and for us, would it have been, had we then lost you.

A fad thing to fay! But as it is in pure Love to you that I fay it, and in full conviction, that we are not always fit to be our own chusers, I hope it may be excusable; and the rather, as the same reslection will naturally lead both you and me to acquiesce under the present dispensation; since we are assured, that nothing happens by chance; and that the greatest good may, for ought we know, be produced from the heaviest

evils.

I am glad you are with fuch honest people; and that you have all your effects restored. How dreadfully have you been used, that one should be glad of such a

poor piece of justice as that?

Your talent at moving the passions is always hinted at; and this Betty of your Sister's never comes near me, that she is not full of it. But, as you say, whom has it moved, that you wished to move? Yet, were it not for this unhappy notion, I am sure your Mother would relent. Forgive me, my dear Miss Clary; for I must try one way to be convinced if my opinion be not just. But I will not tell you what that is, unless it succeeds. I will try, in pure Duty and Love to them, as to you.

E

r

a

as

tr

May Heaven be your support in all your trials, is the constant prayer, my dearest young Lady, of, Your ever affectionate Friend and Servant, JUDITH NORTON.

LETTER VI.

Mrs. NORTON, To Mrs. HARLOWE.

Friday, July 28. Honoured Madam, REING forbidden (without leave) to fend you any thing I might happen to receive from my beloved Miss Clary, and so ill, that I cannot attend to ask your leave, I give you this trouble, to let you know, that I have received a Letter from her; which, I think, I should hereafter be held inexcusable, as things may happen, if I did not defire permission to communicate to you, and that as foon as possible.

Applications have been made to the dear young Lady from Lord M. from the two Ladies his Sifters, and from both his Nieces, and from the wicked man himself, to forgive and marry him. This, in noble indignation for the usage she has received from him, the has absolutely refused. And perhaps, Madam, if you and the honoured family should be of opinion. that to comply with their wifnes is n w the propereft measure that can be taken, the circumstances of things may require your authority or advice, to induce her to change her mind,

I have reason to believe, that one motive for her refusal is her full conviction, that she shall not long be a trouble to any-body; and fo fhe would not give a Husband a right to interfere with her family, in relation to the Estate her Grandfather devised to her. But of this, however, I have not the least intimation from her. Nor would she, I dare say, mention it, as a reason, having still stronger reasons, from his vile

treatment of her, to refuse him.

t

1

d

af

m re

er or

be

m,

ay

The Letter I have received will shew how truly penipenitent the dear creature is; and if I have your permission, I will send it sealed up, with a copy of mine, to which it is an Answer. But as I resolve upon this step without her knowledge [and indeed I do] I will not acquaint her with it, unless it be attended with desireable effects: Because, otherwise, besides making me incur her displeasure, it might quite break her already half-broken heart. I am,

Honoured Madam, Your dutiful and ever-obliged Servant, JUDITH NORTON.

LETTER VII.

Mrs. HARLOWE, To Mrs. JUDITH NORTON.

WE all know your virtuous prudence, worthy woman: We all do. But your partiality to this your rash Favourite is likewise known. And we are no less acquainted with the unhappy body's power of painting her differs so as to pierce a stone.

Every one is of opinion, that the dear naughty creature is working about to be forgiven and received; and for this reason it is, that Betty has been forbidden [Not by me, you may be sure!] to mention any more of her Letters; for she did speak to my

Bella of some moving passages you read to her.

This will convince you, that nothing will be heard in her favour. To what purpose then should I mention any thing about her?--But you may be sure that I will, if I can have but one second. However, that is not at all likely, until we see what the consequences of her crime will be: And who can tell that?---She may ---How can I speak it, and my once darling daughter unmarried!---She may be with child!---This would perpetuate her stain. Her Bother may come to some harm; which God forbid!---One child's ruin, I hope, will not be followed by another's murder.

As

I

V

it

(h

D

As to her grief, and her present misery, whatever it be, she must bear with it; and it must be short of what I hourly bear for her! Indeed I am asraid nothing but her being at the last extremity of all will make her Father, and her Uncles, and her other

friends, forgive her.

Let. 7.

The easy pardon perverse children meet with, when they have done the rashest and most rebellious thing they can do, is the reason (as is pleaded to us every day) that so many sollow their example. They depend upon the indusgent weakness of their Parents tempers, and, in that dependence, harden their own hearts: And a little humiliation, when they have brought themselves into the foretold misery, is to be a sufficient atonement for the greatest perversences.

But for fuch a child as this [I mention what others hourly fay, but what I most forrowfully subscribe to] to lay plots and stratagems to deceive her Parents, as well as herself; and to run away with a Libertine; Can there be any atonement for her crime? And is she not answerable to God, to Us, to You, and to all the world who knew her, for the abuse of such ta-

lents as she has abused?

.

n

n

y

cd

n-

at

of

ay

ter

ild me

oe,

As

You say her heart is half-broken: Is it to be wondered at? Was not her fin committed equally against

warning, and the light of her own knowlege?

That be would now marry her, or that she would refuse him, if she believed him in earnest, as she has circumstanced herself, is not at all probable; and were I inclined to believe it, nobody else here would. He values not his relations; and would deceive them as soon as any others: His aversion to Marriage he has always openly declared; and still occasionally declares it. But if he be now in earnest; which every one who knows him must doubt; Which do you think (hating us too as he professes to hate and despite us all) would be most eligible here, To hear of her Death, or of her Marriage with such a vile man?

C 5

To all of us, yet, I cannot fay! For, Oh! my good Mrs. Norton, you know what a Mother's tenderness for the child of her heart would make her chuse, notwithstanding all that Child's faults, rather than lose her for ever!

But I must sail with the tide; my own judgment also joining with the general resentment; or I should make the unhappiness of the more worthy still greater [my dear Mr. Harlowe's particularly]; which is already more than enough to make them unhappy for the remainder of their days. This I know; If I were to oppose the rest, our Son would say out to find this Libertine; and who could tell what would be the issue of that with such a man of violence and blood as that Lovelace is known to be?

All I can expect to prevail for her, is, that in a week, or so, Mr. Brand may be sent up to enquire privately about her present state, and way of life, and to see she is not altogether destitute: For nothing she

writes herself will be regarded.

Her Father indeed has, at her earnest request, withdrawn the curse, which, in a passion, he laid upon her, at her first wicked slight from us. But Miss Howe [It is a sad thing, Mrs. Norton, to suffer so many ways at once] had made matters so dissicult by her undue Liberties with us all, as well by Speech in all companies, as by Letters written to my Bella, that we could hardly prevail upon him to hear her Letter read.

These Liberties of Miss Howe with us; the general Cry against us abroad, where-ever we are spoken of; and the visible, and not seldom audible disrespectfulness, which High and Low treat us with to our faces, as we go to and from Church, and even at Church (for no-where else have we the heart to go) as if none of us had been regarded hut upon her account; and as if she were innocent, we all in fault; are constant aggravations, you must needs think, to the whole family.

She has made my Lot heavy, I am fure, that was far from being light before !--- To tell you truth, I am. enjoined not to receive any-thing of hers, from any hand, without leave. Should I therefore gratify my yearnings after her, fo far as to receive privately the Letter you mention, what would the case be, but to torment myself, without being able to do her good?---And were it to be known --- Mr. Harlowe is fo paffionate--- And should it throw his Gout into his Stomach. as her rash Flight did --- Indeed, indeed, I am very unhappy!---For, Oh my good woman, the is my Child ftill !--- But unless it were more in my power--- Yet do-I long to fee the Letter---You fay it tells of her prefent way and circumstances. -- The poor child; who ought to be in possession of thousands !--- And will !---For her Father will be a faithful Steward for her.---But it must be in his own way, and at his own time.

And is the really ill? --- fo very ill? --- But the ought to

forrow .-- She has given a double measure of it.

But, in the Letter you have, does she, without referve, express her contrition? Has she in it no reflecting hints? Does she not aim at extenuations?--- If I
were to see it, will it not shock me so much, that my
apparent grief may expose me to harshnesses?---Can
it be contrived—

But to what purpose? --- Don't fend it--- I charge: you don't--- I dare not see it---

Yet—

But, alas !-

O forgive the almost distracted Mother! You can:
---You know how to allow for all this --- So I will!

let it go.--- I will not write over again this part of my Letter.

But I chuse not to know more of her, than is communicated to us all--No more than I dare own I have seen---And what some of them may rather communicate to me, than receive from me: And this for the sake of my outward quiet: Altho' my inward peace suffers more and more by the compelled reserve.

* *

I was forced to break off. But I will now try to

conclude my long Letter

I am forry you are ill. But if you were well, I could not, for your own fake, wish you to go up, as Betty tells us you long to do. If you went, nothing would be minded that came from you. As they already think you too partial in her favour, your going up would confirm it, and do yourself prejudice, and her no good. And as every-body values you here, I advise you not to interest yourself too warmly in her favour, especially before my Bella's Betty, till I can let you know a proper time. Yet to sorbid you to love the dear naughty creature, who can? O my Norton! you must love her!—And so must I!

I send you five guineas, to help you in your prefent illness, and your son's; for it must have lain heavy upon you. What a sad, sad thing, my dear good woman, that all your pains, and all my pains, for Eighteen or Nineteen years together, have, in so sew months, been rendered thus deplorably vain! Yet I must be always your friend, and pity you, for the very reason that I myself deserve overy one's pity.

ft

W

m

ha

Ye

Perhaps I may find an opportunity to pay you a vifit, as in your illness; and then may weep over the Letter you mention, with you. But, for the future, write nothing to me about the poor girl that you think may not be communicated to us all.

And I charge you, as you value my friendship, as you wish my peace, not to say any thing of a Letter you

you have from me, either to the naughty-one, or toany-body elfe. It was some little relief (the occasion given) to write to you, who must, in so particular a manner, share my affliction. A Mother, Mrs. Norton, cannot forget her Child, tho' that Child could abandon her Mother; and, in fo doing, run away with all her Mother's comforts !- As I can truly fay. is the cafe of

Your unbappy Friend, CHARLOTES HARLOWE.

LETTER VIII.

Miss CL. HARLOWE, To Mrs. JUDITH NORTON ..

Sat. July 29.

Congratulate you, my dear Mrs. Norton, with all my heart, on your Son's recovery; which I pray to God, with your own health, to perfect.

I write in some hurry, being apprehensive of the consequence of the hints you give of some method you propose to try in my favour [With my relations. I presume, you mean]: But you will not tell me what, you fay, if it prove unfuccessful

Now I must beg of you, that you will not take any flep in my favour, with which you do not first ac-

quaint me.

E

,

F

e

y

3

r

u

I have but one request to make to them, besides what is contained in my Letter to my Sister; and I would not, methinks, for the fake of their own future peace of mind, that they should be teazed fo, by your well-meant kindness, and that of Miss Howe. as to be put upon denying me that. And why should more be asked for me than I can partake of? More than is absolutely necessary for my own peace?

You suppose I should have my Sister's Answer to my Letter by the time yours reached my hand. I have it: And a fevere one, a very fevere one, it is. Yet, considering my fault in their eyes, and the pro-THE TIL LOT SE VOCATIONS

l

ple

W

66

66

4

vocations I am to suppose they so newly had from my dear Miss Howe, I am to look upon it as a favour, that it was answered at all. I will send you a copy of it soon; as also of mine, to which it is an Answer.

I have reason to be very thankful, that my Father has withdrawn that heavy Malediction, which affected me so much---A Parent's Curse, my dear Mrs. Norton! What Child could die in peace under a Parent's Curse? so literally fulfilled too as this has been in what relates to this life?

My heart is too full to touch upon the particulars of my Sister's Letter. I can make but one atonement for my fault. May that be accepted! And may it soon be forgotten, by every dear relation, that there was such an unhappy Daughter, Sister, or Niece, as Clariffa Harlowe!

My Cousin Morden was one of those, who was so earnest in prayer for my recovery, at Nine and Eleven years of age, as you mention. My Sister thinks he will be one of those, who will wish I never had had a being. But pray, when he does come, let me hear of it with the first.

You think, that were it not for that unhappy notion of my moving talent, my Mother would relent. What would I give to fee her once more, and, althounknown to her, to kis but the hem of her garment!

Could I have thought, that the last time I saw her would have been the last, with what difficulty should I have been torn from her embraced seet!---And when, screened behind the yew-hedge on the 5th of April last (a), I saw my Father, and my Uncle Antony, and my Brother and Sister, how little did I think, that That would be the last time I should ever see them; and, in so short a space, that so many dreadful evils would befal me!

But I can write nothing but what must give you trouble. I will therefore, after repeating my desire

that you will not intercede for me but with my previous confent, conclude with the affurance, that I am, and ever will be, w ay tob of saitendal bear branch

Your most affectionate and dutiful, CLARISSA HARLOWE.

LETTER IX.

Mis AR. HARLOWE, To Miss CL. HARLOWE, In answer to hers of Friday, July 21. Letter xcv. of Vol VI]

O my unhappy loft Sifter ! Thursday, July 27. WHAT a miserable hand have you made of your romantic and giddy expedition !-- I pity you at my heart.

You may well grieve and repent!--Lovelace has left you!---In what way or circumflances, you know best.

I wish your conduct had made your case more pitiable. But 'tis your own feeking!

God help you!---For you have not a friend willlook upon you!---Poor, wicked, undone creature! --- Fallen, as you are, against warning, against expostulation, against duty!

But it fignifies nothing to reproach you. I weep

over you.

3

t:

e

S.

0

S

d

10

)-

t.

o"

t!

75

 \mathbf{Id}^{r}

nd

of

n-

er

ny:

ou

re

at

My poor Mother !-- Your rashness and folly have made her more miserable than you can be .-- Yet she

has befought my Father to grant your request.

My Uncles joined with her: for they thought there was a little more modesty in your Letter than in the Letters of your pert advocate: And my Father is pleased to give me leave to write; but only these words for him, and no more: "That he withdraws " the Curse he laid upon you, at the first hearing of " your wicked flight, so far as it is in his power to-" do it; and hopes that your present punishment " may be all that you will meet with. For the rest, "He will never own you, nor forgive you; and " grieves he has fuch a Daughter in the world."

t

t

0

to

n

ra

ba

All this, and more you have deserved from him, and from all of Us. But what have you done to this abandoned Libertine, to deserve what you have met with at his bands?—I fear, I fear, Sister!—But no more!—A blessed four months work have you made of it.

By Brother is now at Edinburgh, feat thither by my Father [tho' he knows not this to be the motive] that he may not meet your triumphant deluder.

why, then, did he abandon you? He had kept you till he was tired of you, no question; and it is not likely he would wish to have you but upon the terms

you have already without all doubt been bis.

You ought to advise your friend Miss Howe to concern herself less in your matters than the does, except she could do it with more decency. She has written three Letters to me: Very insolent ones. Your favourer, poor Mrs. Norton, thinks you know nothing of the pert creature's writing. I hope you don't. But then the more impertinent the writer. But, believing the fond woman, I sat down the more readily to answer your Letter; and I write with less severity I can tell you, than otherwise I should have done, if I had answered it at all.

Monday last was your birth-day. Think, poor ungrateful wretch, as you are! how we all used to keep it; and you will not wonder to be told, that we ran away from one another that day. But God give you true penitence, if you have it not already! And it will be true, if it be equal to the shame and the forrow you have given us all:

Your offlicted Sifter,
ARABELLA HARLOWS.

Your Cousin Morden is every day expected in England. He, as well as others of the family, when he comes to hear what a bleffed piece of work you have made of it, will with you never had had a being.

t

1

t.

8

13

n

.

t

14

0

I

10

0 .

e

re :

d

16

ghe

ve

LETTERX

Miss Charissa Harlowe, To Miss Howe. Sunday, July 30.

Y OU have given me great pleasure, my dearest friend, by your approbation of my reasonings, and of my resolution founded upon them, never to have Mr. Lovelace. This approbation is so right a thing, give me leave to say, from the nature of the case, and from the strict honour and true dignity of mind, which I always admired in my Anna Howe, that I could hardly tell to what, but to my evil destiny, which of late would not let me please any-body, to attribute the advice you gave me to the contrary.

But let not the ill state of my health, and what that may naturally tend to, sadden you I have told you, that I will not run away from life, nor avoid the means that may continue it, if God see fit: And

if he do not, who shall repine at his will?

of your Love, and of my own Character, in my greater trials, that will be a happiness to both on reflection.

The shock which you so earnestly advise me to try to get above, was a shock, the greatest that I could receive. But, my dear, as it was not occasioned by my fault, I hope I am already got above it. I hope I am.

I am more grieved (at times however) for others, than for myself. And so I ought. For as to myself, I cannot but reflect, that I have had an escape, rather than a loss, in missing Mr. Lovelace for a husband--Even had he not committed the vilest of all outrages.

Let any one, who knows my Story, collect his character from his behaviour to me, before that outrage; and then judge, whether it was in the least probable that such a man should make me happy. But

to collect his character from his principles with regard to the Sex in general, and from his enterprizes upon many of them, and to confider the Cruelty of his Nature, and the Sportiveness of his Invention, together with the high opinion be has of himself, it will not be doubted that a Wife of his must have been miserable; and more miserable if the loved him, than the could have been were she to be indifferent to him.

A twelvementh might very probably have put a period to my life; fituated as I was with my friends; perfecuted and harraffed as I had been by my Brother and Sister; and my very heart torn in pieces by the wilful, and (as it is now apparent) premeditated sufpenses of the man, whose gratitude I wished to engage, and whose protection I was the more entitled to expect, as he had robbed me of every other, and reduced me to an absolute dependence upon himself. Indeed I once thought that it was all his view to bring me to this (as he hated my family); and uncomfortable enough for me, if it had been all.

Can it be thought, my dear, that my heart was not more than half broken (happy as I was before I knew Mr. Lovelace) by fuch a grievous change in my circumstances?---Indeed it was. Nor perhaps was the wicked violence wanting to have cut short, though poshibly not so very short, a life that he has

sported with.

Had I been his but a month, he must have possessed the Estate on which my relations had set their hearts; the more to their regret, as they hated him as much

as he hated them.

Have I not reason, these things considered, to think myself happier without Mr. Lovelace than I could bave been with him ? --- My will too unviolated; and very little, nay, not any-thing as to him, to reproach myself with?

But with my Relations it is otherwise. They indeed deferve to be pitied. They are, and no doubt will long be, unhappy.

rd

on

Ta-

ner

be

e;

uld

pe-

is;

her

the

uf-

en-

led

and

elf.

ing

ort-

Was

re I

in

naps

ort,

has

fled

rts;

uch

nink

ould

and

bach

eed

Riw

To

To judge of their refentments and of their conduct, we must put ourselves in their situation :--- And while they think me more in fault than themselves (whether my favourers are of their opinion, or not) and have a right to judge for themselves, they ought to have great allowances made for them; my Parents especially. They stand at least self-acquitted (that cannot I); and the rather, as they can recollect, to their pain, their past indulgencies to me, and their unquestionable Love.

Your partiality for the friend you so much value. will not eafily let you come into this way of thinking. But only, my dear, be pleafed to confider the

matter in the following light.

Here was my MOTHER, one of the most prudent persons of her Sex, married into a family, not perhaps so happily tempered as herself; but every one of which she had the address, for a great while, absolutely to govern as she pleased by her directing wisdom, at the same time that they knew not but her prescriptions were the dictates of their own hearts; fuch a fweet Art had the of conquering by feeming to yield. Think, my dear, what must be the pride and the pleasure of such a Mother, that in my Bother she could give a Son to the family the distinguished with her Love, not unworthy of their wishes; a Daughter, in my Sister, of whom she had no reason to be ashamed; and in me a second Daughter, whom every-body complimented (fuch was their partial favour to me) as being the still more immediate likeness of herself? · How, felf-pleafed, could she smile round upon a family she had so blessed! What compliments were ' paid her upon the example she had given us, which was followed with fuch hopeful effects! With what a noble confidence could she look upon her dear Mr. Harlowe, as a person made happy by her; and be delighted to think, that nothing but purity ftreamed from a fountain fo pure!

Now, my dear, reverse, as I daily do, this charming prospect. See my dear Mother, forrowing in her Closet; endeavouring to suppress her forrow at her Table, and in those retirements where forrow was before a stranger: Hanging down her pensive head: Smiles no more beaming over her benign aspect: Her virtue made to suffer for faults he could not be guilty of: Her patience continually tried (because she has more of it than any other) with repetitions of faults the is as much wounded by, as those can be from whom she so often hears of them: Taking to herself, as the fountain-head, a taint which only had infected one of the under-currents: Afraid to open her lips (were the willing) in my favour, left it should be thought she has any byas in her own mind to failings that never could have been suspected in here Robbed of that, pleasing merit, which the Mother of well-nurtured and hopeful children may glory in: Every one who visits her, or is visited by her, by dumb shew, and looks that mean more than words can express, condoling where they used to congratulate: The affected filence wounding: The compassionating look reminding: The half-suppressed figh in them, calling up deeper fighs from her; and their averted eyes, while they endeavour to restrain the rising tear, provoking tears from her that will not be restrained.

n

f

b

P

m

W

CO

ha

on

gi

w

tag

ma

Bu

im

tim

no

When I consider these things, and, added to these, the pangs that tear in pieces the stronger heart of my FATHER, because it cannot relieve itself by those tears which carry the torturing grief to the eyes of softer spirits: The overboiling tumults of my impatient and uncontroulable BROTHER, piqued to the heart of his honour, in the fall of a Sister, in whom he once gloried: The pride of an ELDER SISTER, who had given unwilling way to the honours paid over her head to

one born after her: And, lastly, the dishonour I have brought upon Two UNCLES, who each contended which should most savour their then happy Niece: When, I say, I reslect upon my sault in these strong, yet just lights, what room can there be to censure any-body but my unhappy self? And how much reason have I to say, If I justify myself, mine own heart shall condemn me: If I say I am perfect, it shall also prove me perverse?

Here permit me to lay down my pen for a few

moments.

S

7

15

e

er

er

ts

i-

ch

fo

he

ps

be

4in

ere

ner

ory

er,

nan

to

The

up-

mon

our

ber

l to

nger

ieve

griet

tu-

RO-

the

The

un-

d to

4one

* *

You are very obliging to me, intentionally, I know, when you tell me, It is in my power to haften the day of Mr. Hickman's happiness. But yet, give me leave to say, that I admire this kind affurance less than any other paragraph of your Letter.

In the first place you know it is not in my power to say when I can dismiss my physician; and you should not put the Celebration of a Marriage intended by yourself, and so desirable to your Mother, upon so precarious an issue. Nor will I accept of a compliment, which must mean a slight to her.

If any-thing could give me a relish for life, after what I have suffered, it would be the hopes of the continuance of the more than Sisterly Love, which has, for years, uninterruptedly bound us together as one mind.---And why, my dear, should you defer giving (by a tie still stronger) another friend to one, who has so few?

I am glad you have fent my Letter to Miss Montague. I hope I shall hear no more of this unhappy man.

I had begun the particulars of my Tragical Story: But it is so painful a task, and I have so many more important things to do, and, as I apprehend, so little time to do them in, that, could I avoid it, I would go no farther in it.

Then,

1

h

h

0

fo

I

A

V

de

I

b

fo

da

ar

m

m

lo

hi

kn

fp

Then, to this hour, I know not by what means feveral of his machinations to ruin me were brought about; fo that fome material parts of my fad Story must be desective, if I were to sit down to write it. But I have been thinking of a way that will answer the end wished for by your Mother and You full as well;

perhaps better.

Mr. Lovelace, it seems, has communicated to his friend Mr. Belford all that has passed between himself and me, as he went on. Mr. Belford has not been able to deny it. So that (as we may observe by the way) a poor young creature, whose indiscretion has given a Libertine power over her, has a reason she little thinks of, to regret her folly; since these wretches, who have no more honour in one point than in another, scruple not to make her weakness a part of their triumph to their Brother-Libertines.

I have nothing to apprehend of this fort, if I have the justice done me in his Letters, which Mr. Belford affures me I have: And therefore the particulars of my Story, and the base Arts of this vile man, will, I think, be best collected from those very Letters of his (If Mr. Belford can be prevailed upon to commuicate them); to which I dare appeal with the same truth and servor as he did, who says---Oh that one would hear me! and that mine adversary had written a book!
---Surely, I would take it upon my shoulders, and hind it to me as a crown! For I covered not my transgressions as Adam, by hiding mine iniquity in my bosom.

There is one way which may be fallen upon to induce Mr. Belford to communicate these Letters; since he seems to have (and declares he always had) a sincere abhorrence of his friend's baseness to me: But that, you'll say, when you hear it, is a strange one. Nevertheless, I am very earnest upon it at

present.

It is no other than this:

I think to make Mr. Belford the Executor of my

Last Will [Don't be surprised]: And with this view I permit his visits with the less scruple: And every time I fee him, from his concern for me, am more and more inclined to do fo. If I hold in the same mind, and if he accept the Trust, and will communicate the materials in his power, those, joined with what you can furnish, will answer the whole end.

I know you will flart at my notion of fuch an Exe-But pray, my dear, confider, in my present circumstances, what I can do better, as I am empowered to make a Will, and have confiderable matters in

my own disposal.

8

it

t.

e

,

18

lf

n

10

as

be

fe

nt

2

ve

rd

of

I

nis

ate

th

uld

k!

ind

ef-

to

rs;

ad)

ne:

ige

at

my

Your Mother, I am fure, would not confent that You should take this office upon you. It might subject Mr. Hickman to the infults of that violent man. Mrs. Norton cannot, for feveral reasons respecting My Brother looks upon what I ought to have, as his right: My Uncle Harlowe is already one of my Trustees (as my Cousin Morden is the other) for the Estate my Grandfather left me: But you see I could not get from my own family the few guineas I left behind me at Harlowe-Place; and my Uncle Antony once threatened to have my Grandfather's Will controverted. My Father ! --- To be fure, my dear, I could not expect that my Father would do all I wish should be done: And a Will to be executed by a Father for a Daughter, (parts of it, perhaps, abfolutely against his own judgment) carries somewhat daring and perscriptive in the very word.

If indeed my Coufin Morden were to come in time, and would undertake this Trust--- But even him it might subject to hazards; and the more, as he is a man of great spirit; and as the other man (of as great) looks upon me (unprotected as I have long been) as

his property.

Now Mr. Belford, as I have already mentioned, knows every-thing that has passed. He is a man of spirit, and it seems, as fearless as the other, with

more

1

W

fh

At

in

ha

We

cit

you

me

gra be

V

more humane qualities. You don't know, my dear, what instances of sincere humanity this Mr. Belford has shewn, not only on occasion of the cruel Arrest, but on several occasions since. And Mrs. Lovick has taken pains to enquire after his general character; and hears a very good one of him, for justice and generosity in all his concerns of Meum and Tuum, as they are called: He has a knowlege of Law-matters; and has two Executorships upon him at this time, in the discharge of which his honour is unquestioned.

All these reasons have already in a manner determined me to ask this favour of him; although it will have an odd sound with it to make an intimate friend

of Mr. Lovelace my Executor.

This is certain: My brother will be more acquiescent a great deal in such a case with the Articles of my Will, as he will fee that it will be to no purpose to controvert some of them, which else, I dare fay, he would controvert, or perfuade my other friends to do fo. And who would involve an Executor in a Law-fuit, if they could help it? --- Which would be the case, if any-body were left. whom my Brother could hope to awe or controul; fince my Father has possession of all, and is absolutely governed by him. [Angry spirits, my dear, as I have often feen, will be overcome by more angry ones, as well as fometimes be difarmed by the meek.]--- Nor would I wish, you may believe, to have effects torn out of my Father's hands: While Mr. Belford, who is a man of fortune (and a good oeconomist in his own affairs) would have no interest but to do justice.

Then he exceedingly presses for some occasion to shew his readiness to serve me: And he would be able to manage his violent friend, over whom he has more

influence than any other person.

But, after all, I know not, if it were not more eligible by far, that my Story, and my Self too, should be forgotten as soon as possible. And of this I shall

have the less doubt, if the character of my Parents [You will forgive me, my dear] cannot be guarded against the unqualified bitterness, which, from your affectionate zeal for me, has fometimes mingled with your ink-A point that ought, and (I infift upon it) must be well confidered of, if any-thing be done which your Mother and you are defirous to have done. The generality of the world is too apt to oppose a duty-And general duties, my dear, ought not to be weakened by the justification of a fingle person, however unhappily circumstanced.

My Father has been fo good as to take off the heavy Malediction he laid me under. I must be now folicitous for a Last Blessing; and that is all I shall prefume to petition for. My Sister's Letter, communicating this grace, is a fevere one: But as she writes to me as from every-body, how could I expect

it to be otherwise?

d

d

16

7. ill

nd

ac. les

ur.

are

her xe-

nich

my

Fa-

ned

ften

well

ould

ut of

man

fairs

on to

e able more

more

hould I fhall have

If you fet out to-morrow, this Letter cannot reach you till you get to your Aunt Harman's. shall therefore direct it thither, as Mr. Hickman instructed me.

I hope you will have met with no inconveniences in your little journey and voyage; and that you will have found in good health all whom you wish to see well.

If your relations in the little Island join their folicitations with your Mother's commands, to have your nuptials celebrated before you leave them, let me beg of you, my dear, to oblige them. How grateful will the notification that you have done fo, be to

Your ever faithful and affectionate

CL. HARLOWE!

VOL. VII.

 \mathbf{D}

LET-

LETTER XI.

Miss CLARISSA HARLOWE, To Miss HARLOWE.

Saturday, July 29.

Repine not, my dear Sister, at the Severity you have been pleased to express in the Letter you savoured me with; because that Severity was accompanied with the grace I had petitioned for; and because the reproaches of mine own heart are stronger than any other person's reproaches can be: And yet I am not half so culpable as I am imagined to be: As would be allowed, if all the circumstances of my unhappy Story were known; and which I shall be ready to communicate to Mrs. Norton, if she be commissioned to enquire into them; or to you, my Sister, if you can have patience to hear them.

I remembered with a bleeding heart what day the 24th of July was. I began with the eve of it; and I passed the day itself—as it was sit I should pass it. Nor have I any comfort to give to my dear and ever-honoured Father and Mother, and to you, my Bella, but This—That, as it was the first unhappy Anniversary of my Birth, in all probability, it will be the

laft.

Believe me, my dear Sister, I say not this, merely to move compassion; but from the best grounds. And as, on that account, I think it of the highest importance to my peace of mind to obtain one further sayour, I would chuse to owe to your intercession, as my Sister, the leave I beg, to address half a dozen lines (with the hope of having them answered as I wish) to either or to both my honoured Parents, to beg their Last Blessing.

This Bleffing is all the favour I have now to alk: It is all I dare to ask: Yet am I asraid to rush at once, tho' by Letter, into the presence of either. And if I did not ask it, it might seem to be owing

0

n

W

m

la

gl

it

yo

to

to fav

In

affi

opp

thi

exp

u

.

15

::

19

be

be

ny

he

it.

erila,

the

rely

And

im-

ther

lion,

ozen

asl

, to

alk:

th at

ither.

Wing

to stubbornness and want of duty, when my heart is all humility and penitence. Only, be so good as to embolden me to attempt this task—Write but this one line, "Clary Harlowe, you are at liberty to "write as you desire." This will be enough—And shall, to my last hour, be acknowleded as the greatest favour, by

Your truly penitent Sister,

CLARISSA HARLOWE.

LETTER XII.

Mrs. Norton, To Miss CLARISSA HARLOWE.

My dearest young Lady, Monday, July 31.

Must indeed own, that I took the liberty to write to your Mother, offering to inclose to her, if she gave me leave, yours of the 24th: By which I thought the would fee what was the state of your mind; what the nature of your last troubles was, from the wicked Arrest; what the people are where you lodge; what propofals were made you from Lord M's family; also your fincere penitence; and how much Miss Howe's writing to them, in the terms she wrote in, diffurbed you-But, as you have taken the matter into your own hands, and forbid me, in your last, to act in this nice affair unknown to you, I am glad the Letter was not required of me-And indeed it may be better that the matter lie wholly between you and them; fince my affection for you is thought to proceed from partiality.

They would chuse, no doubt, that you should owe to themselves, and not to my humble mediation, the savour for which you so earnestly sue, and of which I would not have you despair: For I will venture to assure you, that your Mother is ready to take the first opportunity to shew her maternal tenderness: And this I gather from several hints I am not at liberty to

explain myfelf upon.

D 2

I long

y

I long to be with you, now I am better, and now my Son is in a fine way of recovery. But is it not hard, to have it fignified to me, that at prefent it will not be taken well, if I go?—I fuppose, while the Reconciliation, which I hope will take place, is negotiating by means of the correspondence so newly opened between You and your Sister. But if you would have me come, I will rely on my good intentions, and risque every one's displeasure.

Mr. Brand has business in town; to solicit for a Benefice which it is expected the incumbent will be obliged to quit for a better preferment: And when there, he is to enquire privately after your way of

life, and of your health.

He is a very officious young man; and, but that your Uncle Harlowe (who has chosen him for this errand) regards him as an oracle, your Mother had ra-

ther any-body elfe had been fent.

He is one of those puzzling, over-doing gentlemen, who think they see farther into matters than any-body else, and are fond of discovering mysteries where there are none, in order to be thought shrewd men.

I can't fay I like him, either in the pulpit or out of it: I who had a Father one of the foundest divines and finest scholars in the kingdom; who never made an oftentation of what he knew; but loved and venerated the Gospel he taught, preferring it to all other learning; to be obliged to hear a young man depart from his Text as soon as he has named it (so contrary, too, to the example set him by his learned and worthy principal (a), when his health permits him to preach); and throwing about, to a Christian and Country audience, scraps of Latin and Greek from the Pagan Classics; and not always brought in with great propriety neither (if I am to judge by the only way given me to judge of them, by the English

v

t

18

u

1.

e

n

of

at

r-

a-

e• an

es

vd

ut

es

de re-

all

an

(fo

led

its

ian

eek

in

the

lish he he puts them into); is an indication of fomething wrong, either in his head, or his heart, or both; for, otherwise, his Education at the University must have taught him better. You know, my dear Miss Clary, the honour I have for the Cloth: It is owing to that, that I say what I do.

I know not the day he is to set out; and as his enquiries are to be private, be pleased to take no notice of this intelligence. I have no doubt, that your life and conversation are such, as may defy the scrutinies

of the most officious enquirer.

I am just now told, that you have written a second Letter to your Sister: But am afraid they will wait for Mr. Brand's report, before further savour will be obtained from them; for they will not yet believe you

are fo ill as I fear you are.

But you would foon find, that you have an indulgent Mother, were she at liberty to act according to her own inclination. And this gives me great hopes, that all will end well at last: For I verily think that you are in the right way to a Reconciliation. God give a blessing to it, and restore your health, and you to all your friends, prays

Your ever-affectionate
JUDITH NORTON.

Your good Mother has privately fent me five guineas: She is pleased to say, to help us in the illness we have been afflicted with; but, more likely, that I might send them to you, as from myself. I hope, therefore, I may send them up, with ten more I have still left.

I will fend you word of Mr. Morden's arrival, the

moment I know it.

If agreeable, I should be glad to know all that passes between your relations and you.

D3 LET.

LETTER XIII.

Miss CLARISSA HARLOWE, To Mrs. NORTON.

Wednesday, Aug. 2.

YOU give me, my dear Mrs. Norton, great pleafure in hearing of yours and your Son's recovery. May you continue, for many, many years, a bleffing to each other!

You tell me, that you did actually write to my Mother, offering to inclose to her mine of the 24th past: And you say, It was not required of you. That is to say, altho' you cover it over as gently as you could, that your offer was rejected; which makes it evident, that no plea will be made for me. Yet, you bid me hope, that the grace I sued for would, in time, be granted.

The grace I then fued for was indeed granted: But you are afraid, you fay, that they will wait for Mr. Brand's report, before favour will be obtained in return to the fecond Letter which I wrote to my Sister: And you add, That I have an indulgent Mother, were she at liberty to act according to her own

inclination; and that all will end well at last.

But what, my dear Mrs. Norton, what is the grace I fue for in my fecond Letter?—It is not that they will receive me into favour—If they think it is, they are mistaken. I do not, I cannot expect that: Nor, as I have often said, should I, if they would receive me, bear to live in the eye of those dear friends whom I have so grievously offended. 'Tis only, simply, a Blessing I ask: A Blessing to die with; not to live with.—Do they know that? And do they know, that their unkindness will perhaps shorten my date? So that their favour, if ever they intend to grant it, may come too late.

Once more, I defire you not to think of coming to me. I have no uneafines now, but what proceed

from

from the apprehension of seeing a man I would not see for the world, if I could help it; and from the Severity of my nearest and dearest relations: A Severity entirely their own, I doubt; for you tell me, that my Brother is at Edinburgh! You would therefore heighten their Severity, and make yourself enemies besides, if you were to come to me—Don't you

fee that you would?

1.

y

h

u.

as

ch

e.

10

1:

or

in

1-

0-

NI

ce

ey

ney

Or,

ive

nds

ly,

not

hey

my l to

ing

eed

Mr. Brand may come, if he will. He is a Clergyman, and must mean well; or I must think so, let him say of me what he will. All my sear is, that, as he knows I am in disgrace with a family whose esteem he is desirous to cultivate; and as he has obligations to my Uncle Harlowe and to my Father; he will be but a languid acquitter—Not that I am assaid of what he, or any body in the world, can hear as to my conduct. You may, my revered and dear friend, indeed you may, rest satisfied, that That is such as may warrant me to challenge the enquiries of the most officious.

I will fend you copies of what passes, as you defire, when I have an Answer to my second Letter. I now-begin to wish, that I had taken the heart to write to my Father himself; or to my Mother, at least; instead of to my Sister; and yet I doubt my poor Mother can do nothing for me of herself. A strong consederacy, my dear Mrs. Norton (a strong consederacy indeed!) against a poor girl, their Daughter, Sister, Niece!—My Brother, perhaps, got it renewed before he lest them. He needed not—His work is done; and more than done.

Don't afflict yourself about money-matters on my account. I have no occasion for money. I am glad my Mother was so considerate to you. I was in pain for you, on the same subject. But Heaven will not permit so good a woman to want the humble blessings she was always satisfied with. I wish every individual of our samily were but as rich as you!—O my Mamma

D 4

Norton, you are rich! You are rich indeed!—The true Riches are fuch Content as you are bleffed with,—And I hope in God, that I am in the way to be rich too.

Adieu, my ever-indulgent friend. You fay, all will be at last happy---And I know it will--I confide that it will, with as much security, as you may, that I will be to my last hour

Your ever grateful and affectionate

CL. HARLOWE.

at

al

fh

W

fo it L

m

go at

LETTER XIV.

Mr. LOVELACE, To JOHN BELFORD, Efq;

Tuesday, Aug. 1.

Am most confoundedly chagrined and disappointed: For here, on Saturday, arrived a messenger from Miss Howe, with a Letter to my Cousins (a); which I knew nothing of till yesterday; when Lady Sarah and Lady Betty were procured to be here, to sit in judgment upon it with the old Peer, and my two Kinswomen. And never was Bear so miserably baited as thy poor friend!---And for what?---Why, for the Cruelty of Miss Harlowe: For have I committed any new offence? And would I not have reinstated myself in her favour upon her own terms, if I could? And is it fair to punish me for what is my missortune, and not my fault? Such event-judging sools as I have for my relations! I am ashamed of them all.

In that of Miss Howe was inclosed one to ber from Miss Harlowe (b), to be transmitted to my Cousins, containing a final Rejection of me; and that in very vehement and positive terms; yet she pretends, that in this Rejection she is governed more by principle than passion—[Damn'd lye, as ever was told!] And, as a proof that she is, says, that she can forgive me, and does, on this one condition, That I will never molest

(a) See Letter iv. of this Volume. (b) See Letter ci, of Vol. VI.

e

.

11

at

t-

er

);

dy

to

ny

bly

ıy,

m-

in-

fI

nif-

3 28

1.

om

ins,

ery

that

ciple

nd,

me,

ever

vi.

molest her more—The whole Letter so written, as to make herself more admired, me more detested.

What we have been told of the agitations and workings, and fighings and fobbings, of the French Prophets among us formerly, was nothing at all to the Scene exhibited by these Maudlin Souls, at the reading of these Letters; and of some affecting pasfages extracted from another of my fair Implacable's to Miss Howe—Such lamentations for the loss of so charming a relation! Such applaudings of her virtue, of her exaltedness of foul and sentiment! Such menaces of dif-inherisons! I, not needing their reproaches to be stung to the heart with my own reflections, and with the rage of disappointment; and as fincerely as any of them admiring her- What ' the devil,' cried I, ' is all this for? Is it not enough .. ' to be despised and rejected? Can I help her im-' placable spirit?—Would I not repair the evils I ' have made her fuffer?'- Then was I ready to curle them all, herfelf and Miss Howe for company: And heartily I swore, that she should yet be mine.

I now swear it over again to thee—' Were her death to follow in a week after the knot is tied, by the Lord of Heaven, it shall be tied, and she shall die a Lovelace!'—Tell her so, if thou wilt: But, at the same time, tell her, that I have no view to her Fortune; and that I will solemnly resign that, and all pretensions to it, in whose favour she pleases, if she resign life issueless.—I am not so low-minded a wretch, as to be guilty of any sordid views to her sortune.—Let her judge for herself then, whether it be not for her honour rather to leave this world a

Lovelace than a Harlowe.

But do not think I will entirely rest a cause so near my heart, upon an advocate, who so much more admires his client's adversary, than his client. I will go to town in a sew days, in order to throw myself at her seet: And I will carry with me, or have at

D 5

hand.

hand, a refolute, well-prepared Parson; and the Ceremony shall be performed, let what will be the con-

fequence.

But if she will permit me to attend her for this purpose at either of the Churches mentioned in the Licence (which she has by her, and, thank Heaven! has not returned me with my Letters); then will I not disturb her; but meet her at the Altar in either Church, and will engage to bring my two Cousins to attend her, and even Lady Sarah and Lady Betty; and my Lord M. in person shall give her to me.

Or, if it will be still more agreeable to her, I will undertake, that either Lady Sarah or Lady Betty, or both, shall go to town, and attend her down; and the Marriage shall be celebrated in their presence, and in that of Lord M. either here or elsewhere, at

her own choice.

Do not play me booty, Belford; but fincerely and warmly use all the eloquence thou art master of, to prevail upon her to chuse one of these three methods. One of them she must chuse---By my Soul, she must.

Here is Charlotte tapping at my closet-door for admittance. What a devil wants Charlotte?---I will hear

no more reproaches !--- Come in, girl!

* * * *

My Cousin Charlotte, finding me writing on with too much earnessness to have any regard for politeness to her, and guessing at my subject, besought me to let her see what I had written.

I obliged her. And she was so highly pleased on seeing me so much in earnest, that she offered, and I accepted her offer, to write a Letter to Miss Harlowe; with permission to treat me in it as she thought fit.

I shall inclose a copy of her Letter.

When she had written it, she brought it to me, with apologies for the freedom taken with me in it:
But I excused it; and she was ready to give me a

fi

kiss for joy of my approbation: And I gave her two for writing it; telling her, I had hopes of success from it; and that I thought she had luckily hit it off.

Every one approves of it, as well as I; and is pleased with me for so patiently submitting to be abused, and undertaken for.—If it do not succeed, all the blame will be thrown upon the dear Creature's perversenes: Her charitable or forgiving disposition, about which she makes such a parade, will be justly questioned; and the pity of which she is now in full possession, will be transferred to me.

Putting therefore my whole confidence in this Letter, I postpone all my other alternatives, as also my going to town, till my Empress send an Answer to

my Coufin Montague.

1

r.

e, at

be

ta

ls.

st.

d-

ear

ith

res

to

on

1 br

Tar-

ight

me, n it: ne a

kils

But if she persist, and will not promise to take time to consider of the matter, thou mayest communicate to her what I had written, as above, before may Cousin entered; and, if she be still perverse, as all honour, that I must and will see her---But this with all honour, all humility: And, if I cannot move her in my favour, I will then go abroad, and perhaps never more return to England.

I am forry thou art, at this critical time, so busily employed, as thou informest me thou art, in thy Watsord affairs, and in preparing to do Belton justice. If thou wantest my affistance in the latter, command me. Tho' engrossed by this perverse Beauty, and plagued as I am, I will obey thy first summons.

I have great dependence upon thy zeal and thy friendship: Hasten back to her, therefore, and refume a task so interesting to me, that it is equally the subject of my dreams, as of my waking hours.

D 6

LET-

LETTER XV.

Miss Montague, To Miss CLARISSA HARLOWE.

Dearest Madam, Tuesday, Aug. 1.

ALL our family is deeply fensible of the injuries you have received at the hands of one of it, whom You only can render in any manner worthy of the relation he stands in to us all: And if, as an act of mercy and charity, the greatest your pious heart can shew, you will be pleased to look over his past wickedness and ingratitude, and suffer yourself to be our Kinfwoman, you will make us the happiest family in the world: And I can engage, that Lord M. and Lady Sarah Sadleir, and Lady Betty Lawrance, and my Sifter, who are all admirers of your virtues, and of your nobleness of mind, will for ever love and reverence you, and do every thing in all their powers to make you amends for what you have fuffered from Mr. Lovelace. This, Madam, we should not, however, dare to petition for, were we not affured, that Mr. Lovelace is most fincerely forry for his past vileness to you; and that he will, on his knees, beg your pardon, and vow eternal Love and Honour to you.

Wherefore, my dearest Cousin [How you will charm us all, if this agreeable style may be permitted!] for all our sakes, for his Soul's sake [You must, I am sure, be so good a Lady, as to wish to save a Soul!] and allow me to say, for your own same's sake, condescend to our joint request: And if, by way of encouragement, you will but say, you will be glad to see, and to be as much known personally, as you are by same, to Charlotte Montague, I will, in two days time from the receipt of your permission, wait upon you, with or without my Sister, and receive

V

fo

th

W

your further commands.

Let me, our dearest Cousin [We cannot deny ourselves

s

d

ır

er

re

ve

re

ry

nis nd

ill

I

: 2

ce,

of lad

rou

wo

ive

urlves felves the pleasure of calling you so; let me] intreat you to give me your permission for my journey to London; and put it in the power of Lord M. and of the Ladies of the family, to make you what reparation they can make you, for the injuries which a person of the greatest merit in the world has received from one of the most audacious men in it; and you will infinitely oblige us: and particularly her, who repeatedly presumes to style herself,

Your affectionate Coufin, and obliged Servant,
CHARLOTTE MONTAGUE.

LETTER XVI.

Mr. BELFORD, To ROBERT LOVELACE, Efq; Thursday Morning, Aug. 3, Six o'Clock.

Have been so much employed in my own and Belton's affairs, that I could not come to town till last night; having contented myself with sending to Mrs. Lovick, to know, from time to time, the state of the Lady's health; of which I received but very indifferent accounts, owing, in a great measure, to Letters or Advices brought her from her implacable samily.

I have now completed my own affairs; and, next week, shall go to Epsom, to endeavour to put Belton's Sister into possession of his own house, for him: After which, I shall devote myself wholly to your ser-

I was admitted to her presence last night; and found her visibly altered for the worse. When I went home, I had your Letter of Tuesday last put into my hands. Let me tell thee, Lovelace, that I insist upon the performance of thy engagement to me that thou will not personally molest her.

Mr. Belford dates again on Thursday morning Ten o'Clock; and gives an account of a conversation which which he had just held with the Lady upon the subject of Miss Montague's Letter to her, preceding, and upon Mr. Lovelace's alternatives, as mentioned in Letter xiv. which Mr. Belford supported with the utmost earnestness. But, as the result of this conversation will be found in the subsequent Letters, Mr. Belford's pleas and arguments in favour of his friend, and the Lady's answers, are omitted.

LETTER XVII.

Miss Clarissa Harlowe, To Miss Montague.

Dear Madam, Thursday, Aug. 3.

I AM infinitely obliged to you for your kind and condescending Letter. A Letter, however, which heightens my regrets, as it gives me a new instance of what a happy creature I might have been in an alliance so much approved of by such worthy Ladies; and which, on their accounts, and on that of Lord M. would have been so reputable to myself, and was once so desirable.

But indeed, indeed, Madam, my heart fincerely repulses the man, who, descended from such a samily, could be guilty, first, of such premeditated violence as he has been guilty of; and, as he knows, further intended me, on the night previous to the day he set out for Berkshire; and, next, pretending to spirit, could be so mean, as to wish to list into that samily a person he was capable of abasing into a companionship with the most abandoned of her Sex.

Allow me then, dear Madam, to declare with fervour, that I think I never could deferve to be ranked with the Ladies of a family fo splendid and so noble, if, by vowing Love and Henour at the Altar to such a violator, I could fanctif, as I may say, his unprecedented and elaborate wickedness.

Permit

(0

C

p

Je

7:

be

.8.

es,

el-

ut

in

nd

y's

nd

ch

ce

1-

S;

rd

as

ely far

ed rs,

he

ng

n-

er

1:

ed

le,

ch

·6.

nit

Permit me, however, to make one request to my good Lord M. and to Lady Betty and Lady Sarah, and to your kind self, and your Sister---It is, That you will all be pleased to join your authority and interests to prevail upon Mr. Lovelace not to molest me further.

Be pleased to tell him, That, if I am designed for Life, it will be very cruel in him to attempt to hunt me out of it; for I am determined never to see him more, if I can help it. The more cruel, because he knows, that I have nobody to defend me from him: Nor do I wish to engage any-body to his hurt, or to their own.

If I am, on the other hand, destined for *Death*, it will be no less cruel, if he will not permit me to die in peace---Since a peaceable and happy end I wish him. Indeed I do.

Every worldly good attend you, dear Madam, and every branch of the honourable family, is the wish of one, whose missortune it is, that she is obliged to disclaim any other title, than That of,

Dear Madam, Your and Their obliged and faithful Servant,

CLARISSA HARLOWE.

LETTER XVIII.

Mr. BELFORD, To ROBERT LOVELACE, Efq;

I AM just now agreeably surprised by the following Letter, delivered into my hands by a messenger from the Lady. The Letter she mentions, as inclosed (a), I have returned, without taking a copy of it. The contents of it will soon be communicated to you, I presume, by other hands. They are an absolute Rejection of thee---Poor Lovelace!

(a) See Mifs Harlowe's Letter No. xvii.

To JOHN BELFORD, Esq;

SIR. Aug. 3.

Y OU have frequently offered to oblige me in anything that shall be within your power: And I have such an opinion of you, as to be willing to hope, that at the times you made these offers, you meant more than mere compliment.

I have therefore two requests to make to you: The first I will now mention; the other, if this shall be

complied with, otherwise not.

It behoves me to leave behind me such an account as may clear up my conduct to several of my friends who will not at present concern themselves about me: And Miss Howe, and her Mother, are very solicitous that I will do so.

I am apprehensive that I shall not have time to do this; and you will not wonder that I have less and less inclination to set about such a painful task; especially as I find myself unable to look back with patience on what I have suffered; and shall be too much discomposed by the retrospection, were I obliged to make it, to proceed with the requisite temper in a task of still greater importance which I have before me.

It is very evident to me that your wicked friend has given you, from time to time, a circumstantial account of all his behaviour to me, and devices against me; and you have more than once assured me, that he has done my character all the justice I could wish for, both

by writing and speech.

Now, Sir, if I may have a fair, a faithful Specimen from his Letters or Accounts to you written upon some of the most interresting occasions, I shall be able to judge, whether there will or will not be a necessity for me, for my Honour's sake, to enter upon the solicited task.

You

h

d

a

W

n

h

of

0

Ju

of

for

dir

lia

Sir

far

A

thy

kno

up

the

the

cia

You may be assured, from my inclosed Answer to the Letter which Miss Montague has honoured me with (and which you'll be pleased to return me as soon as read) that it is impossible for me ever to think of your friend in the way I am importuned to think of him: He cannot therefore receive any detriment from the requested Specimen: And I give you my honour, that no use shall be made of it to his prejudice, in Law, or otherwise. And that it may not, after I am no more, I assure you, that it is a main part of my view that the passages you shall oblige me with shall be always in your own power, and not in that of any other person.

If, Sir, you think fit to comply with my request, the passages I would wish to be transcribed (making neither better nor worse of the matter) are those which he has written to you, on or about the 7th and 8th of June, when I was alarmed by the wicked pretence of a Fire; and what he has written from Sunday June 11, to the 19th. And in doing this you will

much oblige

e

it

9

le

e

nt

ds

. .

us

do

nd

e-

12-

00

I

n-

128

int

e;

nas

oth

ci-

ten

nall

e a

noc

Tou

Your humble Servant, Cl. HARLOWE.

Now, Lovelace, Since there are no hopes for thee of her returning favour---Since some praise may lie for thy ingenuousness, having never offered [as more diminutive minded Libertines would have done] to palliate thy crimes, by aspersing the Lady, or her Sex---Since she may be made easier by it---Since thou must sare better from thine own pen, than from hers---And, finally, Since thy actions have manifested, that thy Letters are not the most guilty part of what she knows of thee---I see not why I may not oblige her, upon her honour, and under the restrictions, and for the reasons she has given; and this without breach of the considence due to friendly communications; especially, as I might have added, Since thou gloriest in thy

thy pen, and in thy wickedness, and canst not be

a [bamed.

But, be this as it may, she will be obliged before thy remonstrances or clamours against it can come: So, pr'ythee now, make the best of it, and rave not; except for the fake of a pretence against me, and to exercise thy talent of execration: -- And, if thou likest to do so for these reasons, rave and welcome.

I long to know what the second request is: But this I know, that if it be any thing less than cutting the throat, or endangering my own neck, I will certainly comply; and be proud of having it in my power to

oblige her.

Madam.

And now I am actually going to be bufy in the Ertracts.

LETTER XIX.

Mr. BELFORD, To Miss CLARISSA HARLOWE.

Aug. 3, 4. VOU have engaged me to communicate to you, upon honour (making neither better nor work of the matter) what Mr. Lovelace has written to ma in relation to yourfelf, in the period preceding your going to Hamstead, and in that between the 11th and 19th of June: And you affure me, you have no vier in this request, but to see if it be necessary for you from the account he gives, to touch the painful sub-

M

lic

m

25

ad

m pr

Y

I)

lai

no hi

hi

jects yourself, for the sake of your own character. Your commands, Madam, are of a very delicate nature, as they may feem to affect the Secrets of priwate friendship: But as I know you are not capable of view, the motives to which you will not own; and as I think the communication may do some credit of my unhappy friend's character, as an ingenuous man; tho' his actions by the most excellent woman in the world have lost him all title to that of an bonourable one; I obey you with the greater chearfulness.

He then proceeds with his Extracts, and concludes them with an address to her in his friend's behalf in the following words;

And now, Madam, I have fulfilled your commands; and, I hope, have not dif-ferved my friend with you; fince you will hereby fee the juftice he does to your virtue in every line he writes. He does the fame in all his Letters, tho' to his own condemnation: And give me leave to add, that if this ever-amiable Sufferer can think it in any mane ner confistent with her honour to receive his Vows at the Altar, on his truly penitent turn of mind, I have not the least doubt, but that he will make her the best and tenderest of Husbands. What obliga-' tion will not the admirable Lady hereby lay upon 'all his noble family, who fo greatly admire her! and, I will prefume to fay, upon her own, when the unhappy family aversion (which certainly has been carried to an unreasonable height against him) fhall be got over, and a general Reconciliation takes ' place! For who is it, that would not give these two admirable persons to each other, were not his

Madam, whether, as you will be miftress of very de-

Madam, whether, as you will be mistress of very delicate particulars from me his friend, you should not in honour think yourself concerned to pass them by, as if you had never seen them; and not to take any advantage of the communication, not even in argument, as some perhaps might lie, with respect to the premeditated design he seems to have had, not against You, as You; but as against the Sex; over whom (I am forry I can bear witness myself) it is the villainous aim of all Libertines to triumph: And I would not, if any misunderstanding should arise between him and me, give him room to reproach me, that his losing of you, and (through his usage of you)

He

be

ore ne:

ot;

to

HOL

.

his

the

nly

r te

Ex.

E.

rou,

orle

me,

and

iev

you,

cate

pri-

of 2

and

t to

an;

rable

of his own friends, were owing to what perhaps he would call Breach of Trust, were he to judge rather by the event than by my intention.

I am, Madam, with the most profound veneration,

Your most faithful humble Servant,

J. BELFORD.

Tide

bn

an

ni

h:

me

be:

o

Hı

evi

ur

wi

be

ma

bee

org

E

n t

mak

mer

eal

ive

are

pre

the

caule

LETTER XX.

Miss CL. HARLOWE, To JOHN BELFORD, Esq. SIR, Friday, Aug. 4.

Hold myself extremely obliged to you for your communications. I will make no use of them, that you shall have reason to reproach either yourself or me with. I wanted no new lights to make the unhappy man's premeditated baseness to me unquestionable, as my Answer to Miss Montague's Letter

might convince you (a).

I must own in his favour, that he has observed some decency in his accounts to you of the most indecent and shocking actions. And if all his strangely communicative narrations are equally decent, nothing will be rendered criminally odious by them, but the vise heart that could meditate such contrivances as were much stronger evidences of his Inhumanity, than of his Wit: Since men of very contemptible parts and understanding may succeed in the vilest attempts, if they can once bring themselves to trample on the Sanctions, which bind man to man; and sooner upon an innocent person than upon any other; because such a one is apt to judge of the integrity of others hearts, by its own.

I find I have had great reason to think myself obliged to your intention in the whole progress of my sufferings. It is, however, impossible, Sir, to miss the natural inference on this occasion, that lies against his predetermined baseness. But I say the less, be-

cause you shall not think I borrow, from what you have communicated, aggravations that are not need-

ed.

he

her

on,

.

95

our

em,

felf

the

ue-

tter

me

ent

om.

wil

vile

rere

n of

and, if

the

pon

ause

ners.

felf

my

nis inst

be-

aule

And now, Sir, that I may spare you the trouble of offering any future arguments in his favour, let me ell you, That I have weighed every-thing thoroughly .-All that human vanity could fuggest---All that a defirable Reconciliation with my friends, and the kind respects of his own, could bid me hope for---The enjoyment of Miss Howe's friendship, the dearest consideration to me, now, of all worldly ones --- All these I have weighed : And the result is and was before you favoured me with these communications, that I have more fatisfaction in the hope, hat, in one month, there will be an end of All with me, than in the most agreeable things that could happen from an alliance with Mr. Lovelace, altho' I were o be affured he would make the best and tenderest of Husbands. But as to the rest; If, satisfied with the vils he has brought upon me, he will forbear all further perfecutions of me, I will, to my last hour, wish him good : Altho' he hath overwhelmed the faberless, and digged a pit for his friend: Fatherless may she well be called, and Motherless too, who has een denied all paternal protection, and motherly orgiveness.

AND now, Sir, acknowleging gratefully your favour n the Extracts, I come to the second request I had to make you; which requires a great deal of courage to mention: And which courage nothing but a great deal of distress, and a very destitute condition, can live. But, if improper, I can but be denied; and lare to say, I shall be at least excused. Thus, then,

preface it:

You fee, Sir, that I am thrown absolutely into the hands of strangers, who, although as kind and

my Memory receive from them any more protection than my Person, if either should need it.

If then I request it, of the only person possessed of materials that will enable him to do my character justice;

' And who has courage, independence, and abi-

lity to oblige me;

To be the protector of my memory, as I may fay:
And to be my Executor; and to fee some of my
dying requests performed;

And if I leave it to him to do the whole in his own

way, manner, and time; confulting, however, in requisite cases, my dear Miss Howe;

I prefume to hope, that this my fecond requel

may be granted.'

And if it may, These satisfactions will accrue we me from the savour done me, and the office undertaken:

'It will be an Honour to my Memory, with al those who shall know, that I was so well satisfied

the

ha

po

Sac

ma

ble

fha

bee the

who

of a

will

nece

be

nim

of my Innocence, that, having not time to write

my own Story, I could entrust it to the relation which the destroyer of my fame and fortunes has

given of it.

I shall not be apprehensive of involving any one in troubles or hazards by this task, either with my own relations, or with your friend; having dispositions to make, which perhaps my own friends will not be so well pleased with as it were to be wished they would be; as I intend not unreasonable ones. But you know, Sir, where Self is judge, matters

But you know, Sir, where Self is judge, matters, even with good people, will not always be right! judged of.

I shall also be freed from the pain of recollecting things, that my Soul is vexed at; and this at 1 time

57

a

an

.2c.

[ed

ter

bi-

ay;

my

WI in

uest

e to

der-

h all

sfied

vrite

ation

h25

one

n my

ilpo

s will vilbes

ones:

tters ightly

ecting

at a

time when its tumults should be allayed, in order to make way for the most important preparation.

4 And who knows, but that Mr. Belford, who already, from a principle of humanity, is touched at my misfortunes, when he comes to revolve the whole Story, placed before him in one ftrong light; and when he shall have the Catastrophe likewise before him; and shall become in a manner interefted in it; Who knows, but that, from a fill higher principle, he may fo regulate his future

actions as to find his own Reward in the Everlafting Welfare which is wished him by his

· Obliged Servant,

CLARISSA HARLOWE?

LETTER XXI.

Mr. Belford, To Miss CLARISSA HARLOWE.

Madam,

Friday, Aug. 4.

AM so sensible of the honour done me in yours of this day, that I would not delay for one moment the answering of it. I hope you will live to see many happy years; and to be your own Executrix in those points which your heart is most set upon. But, in case of survivorship, I most chearfully accept of the Sacred Office you are pleased to offer me; and you may absolutely rely upon my Fidelity, and if possible, upon the literal performance of every article you shall enjoin me.

The effect of the kind wish you conclude with, has been my concern ever fince I have been admitted to the honour of your conversation. It shall be my whole endeavour that it be not in vain. The happiness of approaching you, which this Trust, as I presume, will give me frequent opportunities of doing, must necessarily promote the desirable end; since it will be impossible to be a witness of your Piety, Equa-

nimity and other virtues, and not aspire to emulate

you. All I beg is, That you will not suffer any future Candidate, or Event, to displace me; unless some new instances of unworthiness appear either in the morals or behaviour of,

Madam,

Your most obliged and faithful Servant,
I. BELFORD.

LETTER XXII.

Mr. Belford, To Robert Lovelace, E/q;

Friday Night, Aug. 4.

or p

af pa

of

fti

re

pa

we fty

me

felf

affe

I

har

me

of th

I

She

ner

hat

efor

or a

he f

V

Have actually delivered to the Lady the Extracts fhe requested me to give her from your Letters. I do affure you that I have made the very best of the matter for you, not that conscience, but that friendship, could oblige me to make. I have changed or omitted some free words. The warm description of her person in the Fire-Scene, as I may call it, I have omitted. I have told her, that I have done justice to you, in the justice you have done to her unexampled virtue. But take the very words which I wrote to her immediately following the Extracts:

"And now, Madam,'--- See the paragraph marked with inverted commas ['thus] p. 67.

The Lady is extremely uneasy at the thoughts of your attempting to visit her. For Heaven's sake (your word being given) and for Pity's same (for she is really in a very weak and languishing way) let me beg of you not to think of it.

Yesterday afternoon she received a cruel Letter (as Mrs. Lovick supposes it to be, by the effect it had upon her) from her sister, in answer to one written last Saturday, entreating a Blessing and Forgiveness

from her parents.

She acknowledges, that if the fame decency and justice are observed in all your Letters as in the Extracts

tracts I have obliged her with (as I have affured her they are) she shall think herself freed from the necessity of writing her own story: And this is an advantage to thee which thou oughtest to thank me for.

But what thinkest thou is the second request she had to make to me? No other than that I would be her Executor !---Her motives will appear before thee in proper time; and then, I dare to answer, will be

fatisfactory.

n

1;

cts

TS.

the

nd-

10

of

ave

eto

pled

to

rked

ts of

fake

r the

t me

er (28

had

ritten

enels

nd ju-

e Ex-

tracts

You cannot imagine how proud I am of this Trust. I am asked I shall too soon come into the execution of it. As she is always writing, what a melancholy pleasure will the perusal and disposition of her papers assorted me! Such a sweetness of temper, so much patience and resignation, as she seems to be mistress of; yet writing of and in the midst of present distresses! How much more lively and affecting, for that reason, must her style be; her mind tortured by the pangs of uncertainty (the events then hidden in the womb of Fate) than the dry, narrative, unanimated style of persons, relating difficulties and dangers surmounted; the relator persectly at ease; and if himself unmoved by his own Story, not likely greatly to affect the Reader!

Saturday Morning, Aug. 5.

I AM just returned from visiting the Lady, and hanking her in person for the honour she has done me; and assuring her, if called to the Sacred Trust,

of the utmost fidelity and exactness.

I found her very ill. I took notice of it. She faid, she had received a fecond hard-hearted Letter from her fifter; and she had been writing a Letter (and hat on her knees) directly to her mother; which, before, she had not had the courage to do. It was or a Last Blessing, and Forgiveness. No wonder, he said, that I saw her affected. Now that I had Vol. VII.

The HISTORY of Vol. 7. accepted of the last charitable office for her (for which, as well as for complying with her other request, she thanked me) I should one day have all these letters before me: and could she have a kind one in return to that she had been now writing, to counterbalance the unkind one she had from her Sister, she might be induced to shew me both together—otherwise, for her Sister's sake, it were no matter how sew saw the poor Bella's Letter.

I knew she would be displeased if I had censured the cruelty of her relations: I therefore only said, That surely she must have enemies, who hoped to find their account in keeping up the resentments of

her friends against her.

It may be so, Mr. Belford, said she: the Unhappy never want enemies. One fault, wilfully committed, authorises the imputation of many more. Where the ear is opened to accusations, accusers will not be wanting; and every one will officiously come with Stories against a disgraced child, where nothing dare be said in her favour. I should have been wist in time, and not have needed to be convinced, by my own misfortunes, of the truth of what common experience daily demonstrates. Mr. Lovelace's base ness, my Father's inflexibility, my sister's reproaches are the natural consequences of my own rashness; is I must make the best of my hard lot. Only, as these consequences follow one another so closely, while they are new, how can I help being anew affected!

2

VO

for

ha

m

in

I asked if a letter written by myself, by he Doctor or Apothecary, to any of her friends, representing her low state of health, and great humility would be acceptable? Or if a journey to any of them would be of service, I would gladly undertake it is person, and strictly conform to her orders, to whom

foever she should direct me to apply.

She earnestly desired, that nothing of this fort might be attempted, especially without her knowledge and consent

consent. Miss Howe, she said, had done harm by her kindly-intended zeal; and if there were room to expect favour by mediation, she had really at hand a kind friend, Mrs. Norton, who for piety and prudence had sew equals; and who would let slip no opportunity to endeavour to do her service.

I let her know, that I was going out of town till Monday: She wished me pleasure; and said, she

should be glad to see me on my return.

Adieu!

LETTER XXIII.

Mis ARAB. HARLOWE, To Miss CL. HARLOWE.

[In Answer to hers of July 29. See NS xi.]

Sister CLARY, Thursday Morn. Aug. 3.

I Wish you would not trouble me with any more of your Letters. You had always a knack at writeing; and depended upon making every one do what you would when you wrote. But your Wit and your Folly have undone you. And now, as all naughty creatures do, when they can't help themselves, you come begging and praying, and make others as uneasy as yourself.

When I wrote last to you, I expected that I should

not be at rest.

And fo you'd creep on by little and little till you'll

want to be received again.

But you only hope for forgiveness, and a blessing, you say. A Blessing for what, Sister Clary? Think for what!---However, I re'd your letter to my Father and Mother.

I won't tell you what my Father faid---One who has the true fense you boast to have of your misdeeds, may guess, without my telling you, what a justly-incensed Father would say on such an occasion.

My poor Mother---O wretch! What has not your E 2 ungrateful.

er, ter

red id, to of

Jnully ore. will

ome hing wife

mon baseches

s; fo thefe while

Aed! y ha repre-

mility f them e it is

whom

might ge and consent ungrateful folly cost my poor Mother !--- Had you been less a darling, you would not, perhaps, have been so graceless: But I never in my life saw a cockered fa-

vourite come to good.

My heart is full, and I can't help writing my mind; for your crimes have difgraced us all; and I am afraid and ashamed to go to any public or private Assembly or Diversion: And why?---i need not say why, when your actions are the subject either of the open talk or of the assembly whispers of both Sexes at all such places.

Upon the whole, I am forry I have no more comfort to fend you: But I find nobody willing to forgive

you.

I don't know what time may do for you; and when it is feen that your penitence is not owing more to disappointment than to true conviction: for it is too probable, Miss Clary, that, had you gone on a swimmingly as you expected, and had not you feather-headed villain abandoned you, we should have heard nothing of these moving supplications; nor of any-thing but defiances from him, and a guilt gloried in from you. And this is every one's opinion as well as that of

Your affiicted Sister,
ARABELLA HARLOWE

r

d

S

fic

mo

Cat

Ma

mo

Wo Da

maged

fee

hea

I fend this by a particular hand, who undertake to give it you or leave it for you by to-morror night.

LETTER XXIV.

Miss CLARISSA HARLOWE, To her Mother.

Honoured Madam,

Sat. Aug. 9

N O self-convicted criminal ever approached he angry and just judge with greater awe, no with a truer contrition, than I do you by these lines Indea

Indeed I must fay, that if the matter of my humble prayer had not respected my future welfare, I had not dared to take this liberty. But my heart is fet upon it, as upon a thing next to God Almighty's forgiveness necessary for me.

Had my happy Sister known my distresses, she would not have wrung, my heart, as fhe has done, by a Severity, which I must needs think unkind and un-

fifterly.

But complaint of any unkindness from her belongs not to me: Yet, as she is pleased to write, that it must be seen that my penitence is less owing to disappointment, than to true conviction, permit me, Madam, to infift upon it, that, if fuch a plea can be allowed me, I am actually entitled to the Bleffing I fue for; fince my humble prayer is founded upon a true and unfeigned repentance: and this you will the readier believe, if the creature who never, to the best of her remembrance, told her Mamma a wilful falshood, may be credited, when she declares, as she does in the most folemn manner, that she met the Seducer, with a determination not to go off with him: That the rash step was owing more to compulfion than to infatuation: and that her heart was fo little in it, that she repented and grieved from the moment the found herfelf in his power; and for every moment after, for feveral weeks before the had any cause from him to apprehend the usage she met with.

Wherefore, on my knees, my ever-honoured Mamma, (for on my knees I write this Letter) I do most humbly beg your Bleffing: Say but, in so many words (I ask you not, Madam, to call me your Daughter) --- Lost, unhappy Wretch, I forgive you! and may God bless you! - This is all! Let me on a blessed scrap of paper, but see one sentence to this effect, under your dear hand, that I may hold it to my heart in my most trying struggles, and I shall think it a passport to Heaven. And if I do not too much

lines

id; am ate

en

fo

fa-

fay Of oth

om. give

and 1010 it is 11 25

rout ould ons;

guilt nion

TTOW

7.

118.9 d ha

presume, and it were WE instead of I, and both your honoured names subjoined to it, I should then have nothing more to wish. Then would I say, "Great

"and merciful God! thou feest here in this paper the poor unworthy creature absolved by her justly

" offended Parents: O join, for my Redeemer's fake, thy all-gracious Fiat, and receive a re-

of pentant finner to the arms of thy mercy!"

I can conjure you, Madam, by no subject of motherly tenderness, that will not, in the opinion of my severe censurers (before whom this humble address must appear) add to my reproach: Let me therefore, for God's sake, prevail upon you to pronounce me blest and forgiven, since you will thereby sprinkle comfort thro' the last hours of

Your CLARISSA HARLOWS.

LETTER XXV.

Miss Montague, To Miss Cl. Harlowe.

[In answer to hers of Aug. 3. See No xvii.]

Dear Madam,

Monday, Aug. 7.

E were all of opinion before your Letter came, that Mr. Lovelace was utterly unworthy of you, and deferved condign punishment, rather than to be bleffed with such a Wise: and hoped far more from your kind consideration for us, than any we supposed you could have for so base an injurer. For we were all determined to love you, and admire you, let bis behaviour to you be what it would.

But, after your Letter, what can be faid?

I am, however, commanded to write in all the sub-scribing names, to let you know, how greatly your sufferings have affected us: To tell you, that my Lord M. has forbid him ever more to enter the doors of the apartments where he shall be: And as you labour under the unhappy effects of your friends displeasure, which may subject you to inconveniences,

11

re.

at

er

ly.

e-

0-

ny

efs.

e,

ne

E.

ne,

of

nan

ore

we

For

ou,

ub.

out

my

you

nds.

his

his Lordship, and Lady Sarah, and Lady Betty, beg of you to accept, for your Life, or, at least, till you are admitted to enjoy your own Estate, of one hundred guineas per quarter, which will be regularly brought you by an especial hand, and of the inclosed Bank Bill for a beginning. And do not, dearest Madam, we all beseech you, do not think you are beholden (for this token of Lord M's and Lady Sarah's and Lady Betty's Love to you) to the friends of this vileman; for he has not one friend lest among us.

We each of us defire to be favoured with a place in your esteem; and to be considered upon the same foot of relationship, as if what once was so much our pleasure to hope would be, had been. And it shall be our united prayer, that you may recover health and spirits, and live to see many happy years: And, since this wretch can no more be pleaded for, that, when he is gone abroad, as he is now preparing to do, we may be permitted the honour of a personal acquaintance with a Lady who has no equal. These are the earnest requests, dearest young Lady, of

Your affectionate Friends, and most faithful Servants,

M.
SARAH SADLEIR.
ELIZ. LAWRANCE.
CHARL. MONTAGUE.
MARTH. MONTAGUE.

You will break the hearts of the three-first-named more particularly, if you refuse them your acceptance. Dearest young Lady, punish not them for his crimes. We send by a particular hand, which will bring us, we hope, your accepting favour.

Mr. Lovelace writes by the fame hand; but he knows nothing of our Letter, nor we of his: For we fhun each other: and one part of the house holds us, another him, the remotest from each other.

E4

LET-

LETTER XXVI.

Mr. LOVELACE, To JOHN BELFORD, Efq;

Sat. Aug. 23.

0

01

83

I Am so excessively disturbed at the contents of Miss Harlowe's Answer to my Cousin Charlotte's Letter of Tuesday last (which was given her by the same fellow that gave me yours) that I have hardly patience or consideration enough to weigh what you write.

She had need indeed to cry out for mercy for herself from her friends, who knows not how to shew any! She is a true Daughter of the Harlowes!---By my Soul, Jack, she is a true Daughter of the Harlowes! Yet has she so many excellencies, that I must love her; and fool that I am, love her the more for her despising me.

Thou runnest on with thy cursed nonsensical reformado rote, of dying, dying, dying! and, haveing once got the word by the end, canst not help foisting it in at every period! The devil take me, if I don't think thou wouldst give her poison with thy own hands rather than she should recover, and rob

thee of the merit of being a conjurer!

But no more of thy curfed knell; thy changes upon death's candlestic turned bottom-upwards: She'll live to bury me; I see that: For, by my Soul, I can neither eat, drink, nor sleep; nor, what is still worse, love any woman in the world but her. Nor care I to look upon a woman now: On the contrary, I turn my head from every one I meet: except by chance an eye, an air, a feature, strikes me refembling hers in some glancing-by sace; and then I cannot forbear looking again; tho' the second look recovers me; for there can be nobody like her.

But furely, Belford, the devil's in this Woman! The more I think of her nonfense and obstinacy, the e

u

li

1!

y

e

er

e.

·lp

if

hy

ob

on

an

ſe,

·I

, I

by

re-

1 I

ok

an!

the

less

less patience I have with her. Is it possible she can do herself, her family, her friends, so much justice any other way, as by marrying me? Were she sure she should live but a day, she ought to die a wife. If her Christian Revenge will not let her wish to do so for her own sake, ought she not for the sake of her Family, and of her Sex, which she pretends sometimes to have so much concern for? And if no sake is dear enough to move her Harlowe-spirit in my favour, has she any title to the pity thou so pitifully art always bespeaking for her?

As to the difference which her Letter has made between me and the stupid family here [And I must tell thee we are all broke in pieces] I value not that of a button. They are fools to anathematize and curse me, who can give them ten curses for one, were

they to hold it for a day together.

I have one half of the house to myself; and that the best; for the Great enjoy that least which costs them most: Grandeur and Use are two things: The Common part is theirs; the State part is mine: And here I lord it, and will lord it, as long as I please; while the two purfy Sifters, the old gouty Brother, and the two musty Nieces, are stived up in the other half, and dare not stir for fear of meeting me: Whom (that's the jest of it) they have forbidden coming into their apartments, as I have them into mine. And fo I have them all prisoners, while I range about as I please. Pretty dogs and doggesses to quarrel and bark at me, and yet, whenever I appear, afraid to pop out of their kennels; or if out before they see me, at the fight of me run growling in again, with their flapt ' ears, their sweeping dewlaps, and their quivering tails curling inwards.

And here, while I am thus worthily waging war with beetles, drones, wafps, and hornets, and am all on fire with the rage of flighted Love, thou art regaling thyfelf with Phlegm and Rock-water, and art

E 5

going

going on with thy Reformation-scheme and thy exul-

tations in my misfortunes!

The devil take thee for an insensible dough-baked varlet! I have no more patience with thee than with the Lady; for thou knowest nothing either of Love or Friendship, but art as unworthy of the one, as incapable of the other; else wouldest thou not rejoice, as thou dost under the grimace of pity, in my

disappointments.

And thou art a pretty fellow, art thou not? to engage to transcribe for her some parts of my Letters written to thee in considence? Letters that thou shouldest sooner have parted with thy cursed tongue, than have owned thou ever hadst received such: Yet these are now to be communicated to her! But I charge thee, and woe be to thee if it be too late! that thou do not oblige her with a line of mine.

If thou hast done it, the least vengeance I will take, is to break thro' my honour given to thee not to visit her, as thou wilt have broken thro' thine to me, in communicating Letters written under the Seal of

0

t

ft

by

te

an

Wi

fee

no

and

Friendship.

I am now convinced, too fadly for my hopes, by her Letter to my Cousin Charlotte, that she is determined

never to have me.

Unprecedented wickedness, she calls mine to her. But how does she know what Love, in its slaming ardor, will stimulate men to do? How does she know the requisite distinctions of the words she uses in this case?---To think the worst, and to be able to make comparisons in these very delicate situations, must she not be less delicate than I had imagined her to be?--But she has heard, that the devil is black; and having a mind to make one of me, brays together, in the mortar of her wild fancy, twenty chimney-sweepers, in order to make one socier than ordinary rise out of the dirty mass.

But what a whirlwind does she raise in my Soul,

by her proud contempts of me! Never, never, was mortal man's pride so mortified! How does she sink me, even in my own eyes!--- Her heart sincerely repulses me, she says, for my MEANNESS'---Yet she intends to reap the benefit of what she calls so!---- Curse upon her haughtiness, and her meanness, at the same time!---Her haughtiness to me, and her meanness to her own relations; more unworthy of kindred with her, than I can be, or I am mean indeed.

Yet who but must admire, who but must adore her? O that cursed, cursed, house! But for the women of that!---Then their damn'd potions! But for those, had her unimpaired intellects, and the majesty of her virtue, saved her, as once it did by her humble eloquence (a), another time by her terrifying menaces.

against her own life (b).

et.

I

at

ill

to

1691

10

rer

led

er.

ing

OM

this

ake

the

? ...

av.

the

ers,

it of

oul

by

Yet in both these to find her power over me, and my love for her, and to hate, to despise, and to refuse me!---She might have done this with some shew of justice, had the last-intended violation been perpetrated:---But to go away conqueres and triumphant in every light!---Well may she despise me for suffering her to do so.

She left me low and mean indeed!---And the impression holds with her.---I could tear my sless, that I gave her not cause---that I humbled her not indeed; ---or that I staid not in town to attend her motions instead of Lord M's, till I could have exalted myself, by giving to myself a Wise superior to all trial, to all.

temptation.

I will venture one more Letter to her, however; and if that don't do, or procure me an Answer, then will I endeavour to see her, let what will be the consequence. If she get out of my way, I will do some noble mischief to the vixen girl whom she most loves, and then quit the kingdom for ever.

⁽a) In the Fire Scene, Vol. IV. p. 369, & feq. (b) Vol. VI. p. 62, & feq. in the Penknife-scene.

And now, Jack, fince thy hand is in at communicating the contents of private Letters, tell her this, if thou wilt. And add to it, That if SHE abandon me, GOD will: And what then will be the fate of

Her LOVELACE.

1

h

th

ge

fe

M.

tio

if

co

M

bea

int

YOU

pof

fcie

and will

give

the beli

LETTER XXVII.

Mr. LOVELACE, To JOHN BELFORD, Esq; [In Answer to his of Aug. 4. See No xxii.]

Monday, Aug. 7.

AND so you have actually delivered to the fair Implacable Extracts of Letters written in the confidence of friendship! Take care--Take care, Belford---I do indeed love you better than I love any man in the world: But this is a very delicate point. The matter is grown very serious to me. My heart is bent upon having her. And have her I will, tho

I marry her in the agonies of death.

She is very earnest, you fay, that I will not offer to molest her. That, let me tell her, will absolutely depend upon herfelf, and the Answer she returns, whether by pen and ink, or the contemptuous one of filence, which she bestowed upon my last four to her: And I will write it in fuch humble, and in fuch reafonable terms, that, if she be not a true Harlowe, the shall forgive me. But as to the Executorship which she is for conferring upon thee --- Thou shalt not be her Executor: Let me perish if thou shalt... Nor shall she die. Nobody shall be any-thing, no body shall dare to be any-thing, to her, but I-Thy happiness is already too great, to be admitted daily to her presence; to look upon her, to talk to her, to hear her talk, while I am forbid to come within view of her window --- What a reprobation is this, of the man who was once more dear to her than

all the men in the world!---And now to be able to look down upon me, while her exalted head is hid from me among the Stars, fometimes with fcorn, at

other times with pity, I cannot bear it.

This I tell thee, that if I have not success in my effort by Letter, I will overcome the creeping folly that has found its way to my heart, or I will tear it out in her presence, and throw it at hers, that she may see how much more tender than her own that organ is, which she, and you, and every one else,

have taken the liberty to call callous.

Î

t.

o'

er ly

IS,

of

T:

2-

hip

alt

10-

ted

to

me

han

Give notice to the people who live back and edge, and on either hand, of the cursed mother, to remove their best effects, if I am rejected: For the first vengeance I shall take, will be to set fire to that den of serpents. Nor will there be any fear of taking them when they are in any act that has the relish of salvation in it, as Shakespear says---So that my Revenge, if they perish in the slames I shall light up, will be complete as to them.

LETTER XXVIII.

Mr. LOVELACE, To Miss CLARISSA HARLOWE.

Monday, Aug. 7.

LITTLE as I have reason to expect either your patient ear, or forgiving heart, yet cannot I forbear to write to you once more (as a more pardonable intrusion, perhaps, than a visit would be) to beg of you to put it in my power to atone, as far as it is possible to atone, for the injuries I have done you.

Your angelic Purity, and my awakened Conficience, are standing records of your exalted merit, and of my detestable baseness: But your Forgiveness will lay me under an eternal obligation to you.---Forgive me then, my dearest Life, my earthly Good, the visible Anchor of my future hope!---As you (who believe you have something to be forgiven for) hope

for

f

tl

N

h

tr

to

y

CE

ye

pe

ni

CO

ba

an

ex

lin

you tha

COT

my

 M_i

 $\lceil I_n \rceil$

for pardon yourfelf, forgive me, and confent to meet me, upon your own conditions, and in whose company you please, at the holy altar, and to give yourfelf a title to the most repentant and affectionate heart that ever beat in a human bosom.

But, perhaps, a time of probation may be required. It may be impossible for you, as well from indisposition as doubt, so soon to receive me to absolute favour as my heart wishes to be received. In this case, I will submit to your pleasure; and there shall be no penance which you can impose, that I will not chearfully undergo, if you will be pleased to give me hope, that, after an expiation, suppose of months, wherein the regularity of my future life and actions shall convince you of my Reformation, you will at last be mine.

Let me beg the favour then of a few lines, encouraging me in this conditional hope, if it must not be a still nearer hope, and a more generous encourage-

ment.

If you refuse me This, you will make me desperate. But even then I must, at all events, throw myself at your feet, that I may not charge myself with the omission of any earnest, any humble effort, to move you in my favour: For in You, Madam, in Your forgiveness, are centred my hopes as to both worlds: Since to be reprobated finally by You, will leave me without expectation of mercy from Above!---For I am now awakened enough to think, that to be forgiven by injured Innocents is necessary to the Divine pardon; the Almighty putting into the power of such (as is reasonable to believe) the wretch who causely and capitally offends them: And who can be entitled to this power, if You are not?

Your cause, Madam, in a word, I look upon to be the cause of Virtue, and, as such, the cause of God. And may I not expect, that He will affert it in the perdition of a man, who has acted by a per-

et

n.

ut:

d.

10 ..

2.

e,

10

F-.

ne

15,

ns.

at

n-

ot

e-

te.

at

he

re:

JR

ls:

me

1

ne

11

ed

to

it

er.

01

fon of the most spotless purity, as I have done, if you, by rejecting me, shew that I have offended beyond

the possibility of forgiveness?

I do most solemnly affure you, that no temporal. or worldly views induce me to this earnest address. I deserve not forgiveness from you. Nor do my Lord M. and his Sifters from me. I despise them from my heart for prefuming to imagine, that I will be controuled by the prospect of any benefits in their power to confer. There is not a person breathing, but yourfelf, who shall prescribe to me. Your whole conduct, Madam, has been fo nobly principled, and your refentments are so admirably just, that you appear to me even in a divine light; and in an infinitely more amiable one at the same time, than you could have appeared in, had you not fuffered the barbarous wrongs, that now fill my mind with anguish and horror at my own recollected villainy to the most excellent of women.

I repeat, that all I beg for the present, is a few lines, to guide my doubtful steps; and (if possible for you so far to condescend) to encourage me to hope, that, if I can justify my present vows by my future conduct, I may be permitted the honour to style

myself

Eternally yours,

R. LOVELACE.

LETTER XXIX.

Miss Clarissa Harlowe, To Lord M. and to the Ladies of his House.

[In Reply to Miss Montague's of Aug. 7. See No xxv.]

Tuesday, Aug. 8.

EXcuse me, my good Lord, and my ever-honoured Ladies, from accepting of your noble quarterly bounty; and allow me to return, with all grateful acknow-

Vol. 7.

an

po

ho

too

jul

tun

plic

fo,

up

and

ftife

driv

lay

fron

acknowlegement, and true humility, the inclosed earnest of your goodness to me. Indeed I have no need of the one, and cannot possibly want the other. But, nevertheless, have such a sense of your generous favour, that, to my last hour, I shall have pleasure in contemplating upon it, and be proud of the place I hold in the esteem of such venerable persons, to whom I once had the ambition to hope to be related.

But give me leave to express my concern, that you have banished your Kinsman from your presence and favour: Since now, perhaps, he will be under less restraint than ever; and since I in particular, who had hoped by your influences to remain unmolested for the remainder of my days, may be again subjected to

his perfecutions.

He has not, my good Lord, and my dear Ladies, offended against you, as he has against me; and yet you could all very generously intercede for him with me: And shall I be very improper, if I desire, for my own peace-sake; for the sake of other poor creatures, who may be still injured by him, if he be made quite desperate; and for the sake of all your worthy family; that you will extend to him that sorgiveness which you hoped for from me? and this the rather, as I presume to think, that his daring and impetuous spirit will not be subdued by violent methods; since I have no doubt, that the gratifying of a present passion will be always more prevalent with him, than any future prospects, however unwarrantable the one or beneficial the other.

Your refentments on my account are extremely generous, as your goodness to me is truly noble: But I am not without hope, that he will be properly as feeded by the evils he has made me suffer; and that, when I am laid low and forgotten, your whole homourable samily will be enabled to rejoice in his Reformation;

0

s, e-

ou

ess

ad

10

to

es,

yet

ith

for

ea-

be

out

01-

the

m.

ds;

ent

han

one

rely

But

af.

hat,

ho:

Re-

on;

formation; and fee many of those happy years together, which my good Lord, and my dear Ladies, you so kindly wish to

Your ever-grateful and obliged

CLARISSA HARLOWE.

LETTER XXX.

Mr. BELFORD, To ROBERT LOVELACE, Efq;

Thursday Night, Aug. 10.

YOU have been informed by Tourville, how much Belton's illness and affairs have engaged me, as well as Mowbray and him, since my former. I called at Smith's on Monday, in my way to Epsom.

The Lady was gone to chapel: But I had the fatisfaction to hear she was not worse; and left my compliments, and an intimation that I should be out

of town for three or four days.

I refer myself to Tourville, who will let you know the difficulty we had to drive out this meek mistress, and frugal manager, with her cubs, and to give the poor sellow's Sister possession for him of his own house; he skulking mean while at an Inn at Croydon,

too dispirited to appear in his own cause.

But I must observe, that we were probably but just in time to save the shattered remains of his fortune from this rapacious woman, and her accomplices: For as he cannot live long, and she thinks so, we found she had certainly taken measures to set up a Marriage, and keep possession of all for herself and her sons.

Tourville will tell you how I was forced to chaflife the quondam hostler in her fight, before I could
drive him out of the house. He had the insolence to
lay hands on me: And I made him take but one step
from the top to the bottom of a pair of stairs. I

thought

'n

h

ha

m

fa

or

be

to

Cui

len

ftar

fay

her

The

fhe

a L

tary

to wro

ditio

to b

in t

that

I

finc

countrou.

And then, he being carried out neck-and-heels, Thomasine thought fit to walk out after him.

Charming consequences of Keeping; the State we have been so fond of extolling!---Whatever it may be thought of in strong health, Sickness and declining spirits in the Keeper, will bring him to see the difference.

She should soon have him, she told a consident, in the space of six soot by five; meaning his bed: And then she would let nobody come near him but whom she pleased. The hostler-fellow, I suppose, would then have been his physician; his Will ready made for him; and Widows weeds, probably ready provided; who knows, but she to appear in them in his own sight? as once I knew an instance in a wicked wise; insulting a husband she hated, when she though him past recovery: Tho' it gave the man such spirits, and such a turn, that he got over it, and lived to see her in her cossin, dressed out in the very weeds she had insulted him in.

So much, for the present, for Belton, and his Thomasine.

म्हार महार

I BEGIN to pity thee heartily, now I fee thee it earnest, in the fruitless love thou expresses to this Angel of a woman; and the rather, as, say what thou wilt, it is impossible she should get over her ill ness, and her friends implacableness, of which the has had fresh instances.

I hope thou art not indeed displeased with the Extracts I have made from thy Letters for her. The letting her know the justice thou hast done to her virtue in them, is so much in favour of thy ingenuous ness (a quality, let me repeat, that gives thee a superiority over common Libertines) that I think in material was right; tho' to any other woman, and to

one who had not known the worst of thee that she

could know, it might have been wrong.

If the end will justify the means, it is plain, that I have done well with regard to ye both; fince I have made her easier, and thee appear in a better light to her, than otherwise thou wouldest have done.

But if, nevertheless, thou art distaisshed with my having obliged her in a point, which I acknowlege to be delicate, let us canvas this matter at our first meeting: And then I will shew thee what the Extracts were, and what connexions I gave them in thy savour.

But furely thou dost not pretend to fay what I shall,

or shall not do, as to the Executorship.

I am my own man, I hope. I think thou shouldst be glad to have the justification of her Memory lest to one, who, at the same time, thou mayest be afsured, will treat thee, and thy actions, with all the lenity the case will admit.

I cannot help expressing my surprise at one instance of thy self-partiality; and that is, where thou sayest, She had need, indeed, to cry out for mercy herself from her friends, who knows not how to

shew any.

re

Y

nt,

d:

out ofe,

dy

ady

ked

ght rits,

-fet

the

his

e in

this what

r ill-

1 she

e Er

The

r vir-

uoul-

a fu

in my

OP

Surely thou canst not think the cases alike---For she, as I understand, defires but a Last Blessing, and a Last Forgiveness, for a fault in a manner involuntary, if a fault at all; and does not so much as hopeto be received; Thou, to be forgiven premeditated wrongs (which, nevertheless, she forgives, on condition to be no more molested by thee); and hopest to be received into favour, and to make the finest jewel in the world thy absolute property in consequence of that Forgiveness.

I will now briefly proceed to relate what has paffed fince my last, as to the excellent Lady. By the account I shall give thee, thou wilt see, that she has troubles enough upon her, all springing originally

from:

to

C

b

ta

ha

277

Of:

po

as

the

w

mi

cut

S

H

no n

form

from thyself, without needing to add more to them by new vexations. And as long as thou canst exenthyself so very cavalierly at M. Hall, where every one is thy prisoner, I see not but the bravery of thy spirit may be as well gratisted in domineering there over half a dozen persons of rank and distinction, as it could be over an helpless Orphan, as I may call this Lady, since she has not a single friend to stand by her, if I do not; and who will think herself happy, if she can refuge herself from thee, and from all the world, in the arms of death.

My last was dated on Saturday.

On Sunday, in compliance with her doctor's advice, she took a little Airing. Mrs. Lovick, and Mr. Smith and his wife, were with her. After being a Highgate Chapel at Divine Service, she treated them with a little repast; and in the afternoon was a Islington Church, in her way home; returning to lerably clearful.

Mrs. Lovick acquainted me, besides yours. Yours, it seems, much distressed her; but she ordered the messenger, who pressed for an Answer, to be told

that it did not require an immediate one.

On Wednesday she received a Letter from her Uncle Harlowe (a), in answer to one she had written to her Mother on Saturday on her knees. It must be a very cruel one, Mrs. Lovick says, by the effects had upon her: For, when she received it, she was intending to take an afternoon Airing in a coachibut was thrown into so violent a sit of hysterics upon it, that she was forced to lie down; and she ing not recovered by it) to go to bed about eight o'clock.

On Thursday morning she was up very early; and had recourse to the Scriptures to calm her mind, a she told Mrs. Lovick: And weak as she was, would

Let. 30. Clarissa Harlowe.

em

ert

one

irit

ver

it

his

er,

fhe rld,

ad.

Mr

g at

em

at

to-

, 25

urs,

old

her

tten

t be

was ach;

up-

ight

and

, 35

ould

. go

93

go in a chair to Lincoln's-inn Chapel, about Eleven. She was brought home a little better; and then fat down to write to her Uncle. But was obliged to leave off feveral times—To struggle, as she told Mrs. Lovick, for an humble temper. 'My heart, said she to the good woman, is a proud heart, and not yet, I find, enough mortified to my condition; but, do what I can, will be for prescribing resenting things to my pen.'

I arrived in town from Belton's this Thursday Evening; and went directly to Smith's. She was too ill to receive my visit. But on sending up my compliments, she fent me down word, that she should

be glad to fee me in the morning.

Mrs. Lovick obliged me with the copy of a Meditation collected by the Lady from the Scriptures. She has entitled it, Poor mortals the cause of their own misery; so entitled, I presume, with intention to take off the edge of her repinings at hardships so disproportioned to her fault, were her fault even as great as she is inclined to think it. We may see by this, the method she takes to fortify her mind, and to which she owes, in a great measure, the magnanimity with which she bears her undeserved persecutions.

MEDITATION.

Poor mortals the cause of their own misery.

SAY not thou, It is thro' the Lord that I fell away; for thou oughtest not to do the thing that he hateth.

Say not thou, He hath caused me to err; for he hath no need of the sinful man.

He himself made man from the beginning, and left him in the hand of his own counsel;

If thou wilt, to keep the commandments, and to perform acceptable faithfulness.

He

He hath fet fire and water before thee: Stretch forth thine hand to whether thou wilt.

He bath commanded no man to do wickedly: neither

hath he given any man licence to fin.

And now, Lord, what is my hope? Truly my hope is only in thee.

Deliver me from all my offences: and make me not s

rebuke unto the foolish.

When thou with rebuke doth chasten man for so, thou makest his beauty to consume away, like as it was a moth fretting a garment: Every man therefore it vanity.

Turn thee unto me, and have mercy upon me; forl

am desolate and afflicted.

The troubles of my heart are enlarged. O bring the me out of my distresses!

3636 3636

Mrs. Smith gave me the following particulars of a conversation that passed between herself and a young Clergyman, on Tuesday afternoon, who, as it appears, was employed to make enquiries about the Lady by her friends.

6

6

4

6 1

4 1

6 C

· a

€ O

f th

· VI

W B

· u

· he

S OV

F

He came into the shop in a riding-habit, and asked for some Spanish snuff; and finding only Mrs. Smill there, he desired to have a little talk with her in the

back-shop.

He beat about the bush in several distant questions and at last began to talk more directly about Mil Harlowe.

He faid, He knew her before her fall [That was his impudent word]; and gave the substance of the following account of her, as I collected it from Ms Smith.

She was then, he faid, the admiration and do

so light of every-body: He lamented, with great is lemnity, her backfliding; another of his phrase

Mrs. Smith faid, he was a fine Scholar; for a fpoke feveral things she understood not; and either

in Latin or Greek, she could not tell which; but was fo good as to give her the English of them without asking. A fine thing, she said, for a

Scholar to be so condescending!

ert 1

or I

the

of a

oung

the

ike

mit n the

tions

Mil

t Wa

of the Mrs

id de

eat lo

hrales

for h

eithe

He faid, 'Her going off with fo vile a Rake had 4 given great scandal and offence to all the neigh-

bouring Ladies, as well as to her friends.'

He told Mrs. Smith ' how much fhe used to be followed by every one's eye, whenever she went ' abroad, or to church; and praised and bleffed by every tongue, as fhe paffed; especially by the poor: 'That she gave the fashion to the fashionable, without feeming herfelf to intend it, or to know the did: That, however, it was pleafant to fee Ladies ' imitate her in dress and behaviour, who, being unable to come up to her in grace and ease, exoposed but their own affectation and aukwardness, at the time that they thought themselves secure of ' a general approbation, because they wore the same things, and put them on in the fame manner, that ' she did, who had every-body's admiration; little confidering, that were her person like theirs, or if ' she had had their defects, she would have brought 'up a very different fashion; for that Nature was 'her guide in every-thing, and Eafe her study; 'which, joined with a mingled dignity and conde-' scension in her air and manner, whether she re-' ceived or paid a compliment, distinguished her above all her Sex.

'He spoke not, he said, his own sentiments only on this occasion, but those of every-body: For that the praises of Miss Clarissa Harlowe were such a favourite topic, that a person who could not speak well upon any other subject, was fure to speak well upon That; because he could say nothing but what he had heard repeated and applauded twenty times over.

Hence it was, perhaps, that this Novice accounted for

an

cit

h

re

ha

bo

He

16

pai

vin

inj

Eig

dev

of t

refr

Vo

for the best things he said himself; tho' I must own that the personal knowledge of the Lady which I am savoured with, made it easy to me to lick into shape what the good woman reported to me, as the character given her by the young Levite: For who, even now, in her decline of health, sees not that all these attributes belong to her?

I suppose he has not been long come from College, and now thinks he has nothing to do, but to blaze away for a Scholar among the ignorant; as such young fellows are apt to think those who cannot cap verses with them, and tell us how an antient author expressed himself in Latin on a subject, upon which, however, they may know how, as well as that author,

to express themselves in English.

Mrs. Smith was fo taken with him, that she would fain have introduced him to the Lady, not questioning but it would be very acceptable to her to fee one who knew her and her friends so well. But this he declined for feveral reasons, as he called them; which he gave. One was, that persons of his Cloth should be very cautious of the Company they were in, especially where Sex was concerned, and where a woman had flurred her reputation-[I wish I had been there when he gave himself these airs]. Another, that he was defired to inform himself of her present way a life, and who her vifitors were; for, as to the praise Mrs. Smith gave the Lady, he hinted, that she seemed to be a good-natured woman, and might (tho' for the Lady's fake he hoped not) be too partial and short fighted to be trusted to, absolutely, in a concern a fo high a nature as he intimated the task was which he had undertaken; nodding out words of doubtful import, and affuming airs of great fignificance [3] I could gather) throughout the whole conversation, And when Mrs. Smith told him, that the Lady was in a very bad state of health, he gave a careless shrus -She may be very ill, fays he: Her disappointments

must have touched her to the quick: But she is not bad enough, I dare fay, yet, to atone for her very great lapfe, and to expect to be forgiven by those whom she has so much disgraced.

A starch'd conceited coxcomb! What would I

give he had fallen in my way!

He departed, highly fatisfied with himself, no doubt, and affured of Mrs. Smith's great opinion of his Sagacity and Learning: But bid her not fay any-thing to he Lady about him, or his enquiries. And I, for very different reasons, enjoined the same thing.

I am glad, however, for her peace of mind's fake, hat they begin to think it behoves them to enquire

about her.

. .

20

es

17.

01,

ng

le. ich

uld pe-

nan

ere

t he

v of

ailes em-

for

ort.

n of

hich

btful

e (25

tion.

7 W25

hrug

nents

mult

LETTER XXXI.

Mr. BELFORD, To ROBERT LOVELACE, E/q;

Friday, Aug. 11.

MR. Belford acquaints his friend with the generofity of Lord M. and the Ladies of his family; and with the Lady's grateful fentiments upon the occahan.

He fays, that in hopes to avoid the pain of feeing him [Mr. Lovelace], she intends to answer his Letter of

the 7th, though much against ber inclination.

' She took great notice, fays Mr. Belford, of that passage in yours, which makes necessary to the Divine pardon, the forgiveness of a person causely

injured."

'Her grandfather, I find, has enabled her at Eighteen years of age to make her Will, and to devise great part of his Estate to whom she pleases of the family, and the rest out of it (if she die fingle) at her own discretion; and this to create respect to her; as he apprehended that she would VOL. VII.

be envied: And she now resolves to set about make

ing her will out of hand.'

Mr. Belford insists upon the promise he had made him, not to molest the Lady: And gives him the contents of her Answer to Lord M. and the Ladies of his Lord ship's family declining their generous offers. Su Letter xxix.

LETTER XXXII.

Miss CL. HARLOWE, To ROBERT LOVELACE, Es

Friday, Aug. 11.

1 T is a cruel alternative to be either forced to fer you, or to write to you. But a will of my own has been long denied me; and to avoid a greater evil

nay, now I may fay, the greatest, I write.

Were I capable of disguising or concealing my rafentiments, I might safely, I dare say, give you the remote hope you request, and yet keep all my resolutions. But I must tell you, Sir, (It becomes my character to tell you) that, were I to live more year than perhaps I may weeks, and there were not are other man in the world, I could not, I would not be yours.

There is no merit in performing a duty.

Beligion enjoins me, not only to forgive injurish but to return good for evil. It is all my consolation and I bless God for giving me That, that I am not in such a state of mind with regard to you, that can chearfully obey its dictates. And accordingly tell you, that, where-ever you go, I wish you happy And in this I mean to include every good wish.

And now having, with great reluctance I om complied with one of your compulsatory alternative

I expect the fruits of it.

CLARISSA HARLOWE

ho

110

ur

mo

leg

 H_0

ren

in 1

any

-1

any

1/1

OWI

evil,

the

refo-

s m

year

t an-

not

uric

ation

now

thatl

ngly

nappy.

OWI

ativo

OWE.

ET

LETTER XXXIII.

Mr. JOHN HARLOWE. To Miss CL. HARLOWE.

[In answer to hers to her Mother. See No xxiv.]

Monday, Aug. 7.

Poor ungrateful naughty Kinswoman,

Y OUR Mother neither caring, nor being permitted, to write, I am defired to fet pen to paper, tho' I had refolved against it.

And so I am to tell you, that your Letters, joined to the occasion of them, almost break the hearts of us

all.

Were we fure you had feen your folly, and were truly penitent, and, at the fame time, that you were fo very ill as you pretend, I know not what might be done for you. But we are all acquainted with your moving ways when you want to carry a point.

Unhappy girl! how miserable have you made us all! We, who used to visit with so much pleasure, now

cannot endure to look upon one another.

If you had not known, upon an hundred occasions, how dear you once was to us, you might judge of it now, were you to know how much your folly has unhinged us all.

Naughty, naughty girl! You see the fruits of preferring a Rake and Libertine to a man of sobriety and morals. Against full warning, against better knowlege. And such a modest creature too, as you were! How could you think of such an unworthy preserence?

Your Mother can't ask, and your Sister knows not in modesty how to ask; and so I ask you, If you have any reason to think yourself with child by this villain?

You must answer this, and answer it truly, before any-thing can be resolved upon about you.

F 2

You

You may well be touched with a deep remorfe for your misdeeds. Could I ever have thought that my doating-piece, as every one called you, would have done thus? To be sure I loved you too well. But that is over now. Yet, tho' I will not pretend to answer for any-body but myself, for my own part I say, God forgive you! And this is all from

Your offlitted Uncle,

JOHN HARLOWE.

fe

th

b

ne

be

ha

no

for

my

am

gor

and

in i

Rel den

tenc

frier

]

The following MEDITATION was stitched to the bottom of this Letter, with black silk.

MEDITATION.

O That thou wouldst hide me in the grave! That then wouldst keep me secret, till thy wrath be past!

My face is foul with weeping; and on my eye-lid is

he haden of death

the shadow of death.

My friends scorn me; but mine eye poureth out team unto God.

A dreadful found is in my ears; in prosperity the de-

stroyer came upon me!

I have sinned! What shall I do unto thee, O thou Preserver of men! Why hast thou set me as a mark against thee; so that I am a burden to myself!

When I fay, My bed shall comfort me; My could

shall ease my complaint;

Then thou scarest me with dreams, and terrifiest me thro' visions.

So that my foul chuseth strangling, and death rathat than life.

I toath it! I would not live alway! --- Let me alone; for my days are vanity!

He hath made me abye-word of the people; and afort

time I was as a tabret.

My days are past, my purposes are broken off, eval the thoughts of my heart.

When I looked for good, then evil came unto me; and when I waited for light, then came darkness.

0

175

10.

rk

ich

1712

10;

11.

1/1

And where now is my hope? --Yet all the days of my appointed time will I wait, till my change come.

LETTER XXXIV.

Miss CL. HARLOWE, To JOHN HARLOWE, Esq; Honoured Sir, Thursday, Aug. 10.

I'I was an act of charity I begged: Only for a Last Blessing, that I might die in peace. I ask not to be received again, as my severe Sister [O! that I had not written to her!] is pleased to say, is my view.

Let that grace be denied me when I do.

I could not look forward to my last Scene with comfort, without seeking, at least, to obtain the Blessing I petitioned for; and that with a contrition so deep, that I deserved not, were it known, to be turned over from the tender nature of a Mother, to the upbraiding pen of an Uncle! and to be wounded by a cruel question, put by him in a shocking manner; and which a little, a very little time, will better answer than I can: For I am not either a hardened or shameless creature: If I were, I should not have been so solicitous to obtain the favour I sued for.

And permit me to fay, that I asked it as well for my Father and Mother's sake, as for my own; for I am sure, They at least will be uneasy, after I am

gone, that they refused it to me.

I should still be glad to have theirs, and yours, Sir, and all your blessings, and your Prayers: But denied in such a manner, I will not presume again to ask it: Relying entirely on the Almighty's; which is never denied, when supplicated for with such true penitence as I hope mine is.

God preserve my dear Uncle, and all my honoured

friends! prays Your unhappy

CLARISSA HARLOWE.

LETTER XXXV.

Miss Howe, To Miss CLARISSA HARLOWE.

Yarmouth, Ifle of Wight, Monday, Aug. 7.

My dearest Creature,

I CAN write but just now a few lines. I cannot tell how to bear the found of that Mr. Belford for your Executor, cogent as your reasons for that measure are: And yet I am firmly of opinion, that none of your Relations should be named for the Trust. But I dwell the less upon this subject, as I hope (and cannot bear to apprehend the contrary) that you will still live many, many years.

Mr. Hickman, indeed, speaks very handsomely of Mr. Belford. But he, poor man! has not much penetration.---If he had, he would hardly think so well

of me as he does.

I have a particular opportunity of fending this by a friend of my aunt Harman's; who is ready to fet out for London (and this occasions my hurry) and is to return out of hand. I expect therefore by him a large packet from you; and hope and long for news of your amended health: Which Heaven grant to the prayers of

Your ever-affectionate

ANNA HOWE.

tl

C

LETTER XXXVI.

Miss CLARISSA HARLOWE, To Miss Howe.

Friday, Aug. 11.

I Will send you a large packet, as you defire and expect; fince I can do it by so safe a conveyance. But not all that is come to my hand---For I must own that my friends are very severe; too severe for any-body who loves them not, to see their Letters. You, my dear, would not call them my Friends,

VOU

you faid, long ago; but my Relations: Indeed I cannot call them my Relations, I think!——But I am ill; and therefore perhaps more peevish than I should be. It is difficult to go out of ourselves to give a judgment against ourselves; and yet, oftentimes, to pass a just judgment, we ought.

I thought I should alarm you in the choice of my Executor. But the sad necessity I am reduced to must

excuse me.

t

.

of

11

ut

e.

of

E.

nd ce: uft for ers, I shall not repeat any thing I have said before on that subject: But if your objections will not be answered to your satisfaction by the Papers and Letters I shall inclose, marked 1, 2, 3, 4, to 9, I must think myself in another instance unhappy; since I am engaged too far (and with my own judgment too) to recede.

As Mr. Belford has transcribed for me, in confidence, from his friend's Letters, the passages which accompany this, I must insist, that you suffer no soul but yourself to peruse them; and that you return them by the very first opportunity; that so no use may be made of them that may do hurt either to the original writer, or to the communicator. You'll observe I am bound by promise to this care. If thro' my means any mischief should arise, between this bumane and that inhuman Libertine, I should think myself utterly inexcuseable.

I subjoin a list of the Papers or Letters I shall inclose. You must return them all when perused (a).

Tar

(4)	1. A Letter from Miss Montague, dated	Aug. T.
.,	2. A copy of my Answer	Aug. 3.
	3. Mr. Belford's Letter to me, which will flew -	
	you what my request was to him, and his compliance with it; and the desired Extracts	Aug. 3, 4.
	from his friend's Letters.	10
	4. A copy of my Answer, with thanks; and	1 HOZ
	requesting him to undertake the Executor-	Aug. 4.
	5. Mr. Belford's acceptance of the Truft -	Aug. 4.

F 4

I am very much tired and fatigued---with --I don't know what---with writing, I think---But most with myself, and with a situation I cannot help aspiring to

get out of, and above!

O, my dear, the world we live in is a fad, a very fad world!—While under our parents protecting wings, we know nothing at all of it. Book-learned and a fcribbler, and looking at people as I faw them as vifitors or vifiting, I thought I knew a great deal of it. Pitiable ignorance!---Alas! I knew nothing at all!

With zealous wishes for your happiness, and the happiness of every one dear to you, I am, and will ever be,

Your gratefully - affectionate

CL. HARLOWE.

LETTER XXXVII.

Mr. Antony Harlowe, To Miss Cl. Harlows.

[In reply to hers to ber Uncle Harlows, of
Thursday, Aug. 10.]

Unhappy girl!

Aug. 12.

de

Vi

be bu

be

w

da

it 1

A S your Uncle Harlowe chuses not to answer your pert Letter to him; and as mine written to you before (a), was written as if it were in the spirit of prophecy, as you have found to your forrow; and as you are now making yourself worse than you are in your

- 6. Miss Montague's Letter, with a generous offer from Lord M. and the Ladies of that Aug. 7. family.
- 7. Mr. Lovelace's to me - - Aug. 7.

 8. Copy of mine to Miss Montague, in answer Aug. 8.

 to hers of the day before. - - Aug. 8.

9. Copy of my Answer to Mr. Lovelace. - Aug. 11.
You will see by these several Letters, written and received in so little a space of time (to say nothing of what I have received and written which I cannot shew you) how little opportunity or leisure I can have for writing my own Story.

(a) See Vol. I. p. 216, & feq.

health, and better than you are in your penitence, as we are very well assured, in order to move compassion; which you do not deserve, having had so much warning: For all these reasons, I take up my pen once more; tho' I had told your Brother, at his going to Edinburgh, that I would not write to you, even were you to write to me, without letting him know. So indeed had we all; for he prognosticated what would happen, as to your applying to us, when you knew not how to help it.

Brother John has hurt your niceness, it seems, by asking you a plain question, which your Mother's heart is too full of grief to let her ask; and modesty will not let your Sister ask, tho' but the consequence of your actions---And yet it must be answered, before you'll obtain from your Father and Mother, and us,

the notice you hope for, I can tell you that.

1

E,

ur

0-

ur

You lived feveral guilty weeks with one of the vilest sellows that ever drew breath, at bed, as well as board, no doubt (for is not his character known?); and pray don't be ashamed to be asked after what may naturally come of such free living. This modesty indeed would have become you for Eighteen years of your life---You'll be pleased to mark that---. But makes no good figure compared with your behaviour since the beginning of April last. So pray don't take it up, and wipe your mouth upon it, as if nothing had happened.

But, may-be, I likewise am too shocking to your niceness!---O, girl, girl! your modesty had better been shewn at the right time and place!---Every-body but you believed what the Rake was. But you would believe nothing bad of him---What think you now?

Your folly has ruined all our peace. And who knows where it may yet end?--Your poor Father but yesterday shewed me this text; With bitter grief he shewed it me, poor man: And do you lay it to your heart:

A Father waketh for his Daughter, when no man

knoweth; and the care for her taketh away his fleep

· --- When she is young, lest she pass away the flower of her age [and you know what proposals were made

to you at different times]: And, being married, lest the should be hated: In her virginity, lest she

fhould be defiled, and gotten with child in her Father's house [I don't make the words, mind that]:

And, having an husband, left she should misbehave

herself.' And what follows? Keep a sure watch over a shameless Daughter [Yet no watch could hold

• you!] lest she make thee a laughing-stock to thine enemies [as you have made us all to this curfed Love-

· lace], and a bye-word in the city, and a reproach among the people, and make thee ashamed before

the multitude.' Ecclus. xlii. 9, 10, &c.

Now will you wish you had not written pertly. Your Sister's Severities!---Never, girl, say that is severe, that is deserved. You know the meaning of words. No-body better. Would to the Lord you had acted up but to one half of what you know! Then had we not been disappointed and grieved, as we all have been: And no-body more than him who was

Your Loving Uncle,

ANTONY HARLOWS.

u

t

P.

ar

ca

lu

no

lef

w

the

This will be with you to-morrow. Perhaps you may be suffered to have some part of your Estate, after you have smarted a little more. Your pertly-answered Uncle John, who is your Trustee, will not have you be destitute. But we hope all is not true that we hear of you.---Only take care, I advise you, that, bad as you have acted, you act not still worse, if it be possible to all worse. Improve upon the hint.

LETTER XXXVIII.

Miss Cl. Harlowe, To Ant. Harlowe, Esq; Honoured Sir, Sunday Aug. 13.

I A M very forry for my pert Letter to my Uncle Harlowe. Yet I did not intend it to be pert. People new to misfortune may be too easily moved to impatience.

The fall of a regular person, no doubt, is dreadful and inexcusable. It is like the sin of Apostasy. Would to Heaven, however, that I had had the cir-

cumstances of mine enquired into!

18

h

18

ou

WÉ

E.

100

ite,

out

·ul-

ope

ake

ed,

20

T.

If, Sir, I make myself worse than I am in my health, and better than I am in my penitence, it is sit I should be punished for my double dissimulation: And you have the pleasure of being one of my punishers. My sincerity in both respects will, however, be best justified by the event. To that I refer.—May Heaven give you always as much comfort in reslecting upon the reprobation I have met with, as you seem to have pleasure in mortifying a poor creature, extremely mortified; and that from a right sense, as she presumes to hope, of her own fault?

What you have heard of me I cannot tell. When the nearest and dearest relations give up an unhappy wretch, it is not to be wondered at, that those who are not related to her are ready to take up and propagate slanders against her. Yet I think I may defy calumny itself, and (excepting the fatal, tho' involuntary step of April 10.) wrap myself in my own innocence, and be easy. I thank you, Sir, neverthe-

less, for your caution, mean it what it will.

As to the question required of me to answer, and which is allowed to be too shocking either for a Mother to be put to a Daughter, or a Sister to a Sister; and which however, you say I must answer;—O Sir! ... And must I answer?--- This then be my answer:

F 6 --- A

--- A little time, a much less time than is imagined, will afford a more satisfactory answer to my whole family, and even to my Brother and Sister, than I

can give in words.'

Nevertheless, be pleased to let it be remembered that I did not petition for a restoration to savour. I could not hope for that. Noryet to be put in possession of any part of my own Estate. Nor even for means of necessary subsistence from the produce of that Estate---But only for a Blessing; for a Last Blessing!

And this I will further add, because it is true, that I have no wilful crime to charge against myself: No free living at bed and at board, as you phrase it!

Why, why, Sir, were not other enquiries made of me, as well as this shocking one?---Enquiries that modesty would have permitted a Mother or a Sister to make; and, which, if I may be excused to say so, would have been still less improper, and more chartable, to have been made by Uncles (were the Mother forbidden, or the Sister not inclined, to make them)

tl

h

fi

th

h

ar

y(

to

18

th

W

00

VC

tir

co

ca

m

than those they have made.

Altho' my humble application has brought upon me so much severe reproach, I repent not that I have written to my Mother (altho' I cannot but wish that I had not written to my Sister); because I have a tissified a dutiful consciousness by it, however unanswered by the wished-for success. Nevertheless, I cannot help saying, that mine is indeed a hard sate, that I cannot beg pardon for my capital error, without doing it in such terms, as shall be an aggravation of the offence.

But I had best leave off, lest, as my full mind, I find, is rising to my pen, I have other pardons to beg as I multiply lines, where none at all will be given.

God Almighty bless, preserve, and comfort my dear forrowing and grievously offended Father and Mother !---And continue in honour, favour, and merit, my happy Sister! May God forgive my Brothes

Let. 39

0

15

n)

no

9V

nat 12.

n-.1

ite

th-

ion

1, 1

beg

ren.

my

and

and

my her,

Brother, and protect him from the violence of his own temper, as well as from the deftroyer of his Sister's honour !- And may you, my dear Uncle, and you no less now than ever dear Brother, my fecond Papa, as he used to bid me call him, be bleffed and happy in them, and in each other !-And, in order to this, may you all fpeedily banish from your remembrance for ever

The unhappy

CLARISSA HARLOWE!

LETTER XXXIX.

Mrs. NORTON, To Mifs CLARISSA HARLOWE.

Monday, Aug. 14.

ALL your friends here, my dear young Lady, now feem fet upon proposing to you to go to one of the Plantations. This, I believe, is owing to some mifrepresentations of Mr. Brand; from whom they have received a Letter.

I wish with all my heart, that you could, confiftently with your own notions of honour, yield to the pressing request of all Mr. Lovelace's family in his behalf. This, I think, would stop every mouth; and, in time, reconcile every-body to you. For your own friends will not believe that he is in earnest to marry you; and the hatred between the families is fuch, that they will not condescend to inform themselves better; nor would believe him, if he were ever fo folemnly to avow that he is.

I should be very glad to have in readiness, upon occasion, some brief particulars of your sad Story under your own hand. But let me tell you, at the fame time, that no mifrepresentation, nor even your own confession, shall lessen my opinion either of your piety, or of your prudence in effential points; because I know it was always your humble way to make light faults heavy against yourself: And well

might

CO

ba

m

th

ar

fo

fo

pa

pe

re

W

to

pe

to

ha

m

WI

28

w

be

fri

po

might you, my dearest young Lady, aggravate your own failings, who have ever had so few; and those few so slight, that your ingenuousness has turned

most of them into excellencies.

Nevertheless, let me advise you, my dear Miss Clary, to discountenance any visits, which, with the censorious, may affect your character. As that has not hitherto suffered by your wilful default, I hope you will not, in a desponding negligence (satisfying your self with a consciousness of you own innocence) permit it to suffer. Difficult Situations, you know, my dear young Lady, are the tests not only of prudence, but of virtue.

I think, I must own to you, that, since Mr. Brand's Letter has been received, I have a renewed prohibition to attend you. However, if you will give me leave, that shall not detain me from you. Not would I stay for that leave, if I were not in hopes, that in this critical Situation, I may be able to do

vou fervice here.

I have often had messages and enquiries after your health from the truly reverend Dr. Lewen, who has always expressed, and still expresses, infinite concern for you. He entirely disapproves of the measures of the family with regard to you. He is too much indisposed to go abroad. But, were he in good health, he would not, as I understand, visit at Harlowe-Place; having some time since been unhandsomely treated by your Brother, on his offering to mediate for you with your family.

I AM just now informed that your Cousin Morden is arrived in England. He is at Canterbury, it feems, looking after some concerns he has there; and is soon expected in these parts. Who knows what may arise from his arrival?—God be with you, my dearest Miss Clary, and be your Comforter and Sustainer. And never fear but he will; for I am sure, I am very sure, that you put your whole trust in Him.

0-

ot

u

1.

1.

N,

4

10

10

S,

0

ur

28

of

h,

e.

te

at

H

n.

And what, after all, is this world, on which we so much depend for durable good, poor creatures that we are!---When all the joys of it, and (what is a balancing comfort) all the troubles of it, are but mo-

mentary, and vanish like a morning dream!

And be this remembered, my dearest young Lady, that worldly joys claim no kindred with the joys we are bid to aspire after. These latter we must be sitted for by affliction and disappointment. You are therefore in the direct road to glory, however thorny the path you are in. And I had almost said, that it depends upon yourself, by your patience, and by your resignedness to the dispensation (God enabling you, who never fails the true penitent, and sincere invoker,) to be an heir of a blessed immortality.

But this glory, I humbly pray, that you may not be permitted to enter into, ripe as you are fo foon likely to be for it, till with your gentle hand (a pleafure I have so often, as you know, promised to myself)

you have closed the eyes of

Your maternally affectionate

JUDITH NORTON.

LETTER XL.

Mis CLARISSA HARLOWE, To Mrs. NORTON.

Thursday, Aug. 17.

WHAT Mr. Brand, or any-body, can have written or faid to my prejudice, I cannot imagine; and yet some evil reports have gone out against me; as I find by some hints in a very severe Letter written to me by my Uncle Antony. Such a Letter as I believe was never written to any poor creature, who, by ill health of body, as well as mind, was before tottering on the brink of the grave. But my friends may possibly be better justified than the reporters---For who knows what they may have heard?

You give me a kind caution, which feems to imply more than you express, when you advise me

against

P

N

1:

tl

D

th

kı

to

on

W

en

ter

fpi wh

pre

an

fer

pir

F

you

riv

er

ber

he o

iure right only night heir nquately.

against countenancing visitors that may discredit me. You should, in so tender a point, my dear Mrs. Norton, have spoken quite out. Surely, I have had afflictions enow to strengthen my mind, and to enable it to bear the worst that can now happen. But I will not puzzle myself by conjectural evils; as I might perhaps do, if I had not enow that were certain. I shall hear all, when it is thought proper that I should, Mean time, let me say, for your satisfaction, that I know not that I have any-thing criminal or disreputable to answer for either in word

or deed, fince the fatal 10th of April last.

You desire an account of what passes between me and my friends; and also particulars or brief heads of my fad Story, in order to ferve me as occasions shall offer. My dear good Mrs. Norton, you shall have a whole packet of papers, which I have fent to my Miss How, when she returns them; and you shall have likewife another packet (and that with this Letter) which I cannot at prefent think of fending to that dear friend for the fake of my own relations; whom without feeing that packet, she is but to ready to censure heavily. From these you will be able to collect a great deal of my Story. But for what is previous to these papers, and which more particularly relates to what I have suffered from Mr. Lovelace, you must have patience; for at present I have neither head nor heart for fuch subjects. The papers I fend you with this will be those mentioned in the margin (a). You must restore them to me as soon as

(a) 1. A copy of mine to my Sister, begging off	1 Talent
my Father's malediction	dated Just
2. My Sister's Answer	dated July 27.
2. Copy of my fecond Letter to my Sister .	- dated July 29
4. My Sister's answer	dated Aug. J'
s. Copy of my Letter to My Mother -	dated Aug. 5
6. My Uncle Harlowe's Letter	dated Aug. 7
7. Copy of my Answer to it	lated the 1010
8. Letter from my Uncle Antony	dated the 12th.
And, laftly, the copy of my Answer to it	dated the 13th.
	perused;

S

18

to

all

118

to

15;

too

be

for

ar.

·9V

ave

pers

the

n 28

ly 21.

ly 27.

ly 29.

ng. 3.

g. 5

10th.

12th.

ased;

perused; and upon your honour make no use of them, or of any intelligence you have from me, but by my

previous consent.

These communications you must not, my good Mrs. Norton, look upon as appeals against my relations. On the contrary, I am heartily forry, that they have incurred the displeasure of so excellent a Divine as Dr. Lewen. But you desire to have everything before you: and, I think you ought; for who knows, as you say, but you may be applied to at last to administer comfort from their conceding hearts, to one that wants it; and who sometimes, judging by what she knows of her own heart, thinks herself entitled to it?

I know that I have a most indulgent and sweettempered Mother; but having to deal with violent spirits, she has too often forfeited that peace of mind which she so much prefers, by her over-concern to preserve it.

I am fure she would not have turned me over for an Answer to a Letter written with so contrite and servent a spirit, as was mine to her, to a masculine

pirit, had she been left to herself.

But, my dear Mrs. Norton, might not, think you, the revered Lady have favoured me with one private line?——If not, might not you have written by her order, or connivance, one softening, one motherly line, when she saw her poor girl, whom once

he dearly loved, borne fo hard upon?

O no, she might not!—Because her heart, to be use is in their measures!—And if she think them ight, perhaps they must be right!—At least knowing only what they know, they must!—And yet they night know all, if they would!—And possibly, in heir own good time, they think to make proper inquiry.—My application was made to them but ately.—Yet how deeply will it afflict them, if their ime should be out of time!

When

u

d

di

T1

m

pr I:

fo

W

as

wi

w

mi

Cia

ho

pa

up

IW

par

afp

to :

Ih

my

rela

aga

€011

When you have before you the Letters I have fent to Miss Howe, you will see, that Lord M. and the Ladies of his family, jealous as they are of the honour of their house (to express myself in their language) think better of me than my own relations do. You will fee an instance of their generosity to me which at the time extremely affected me, and indeed still affects me. Unhappy man! gay inconfiderate, and cruel! What has been his gain by making unhappy a creature who hoped to make him happy! And who was determined to deserve the Love of all to whom he is related !--- Poor man !--- But you will mistake a compassionate and placable nature for Love!---He took care, great care, that I should rein-in betimes any passion that I might have had for him, had he known how to be but commonly grateful or generous!---But the Almighty knows what is best for his poor creatures.

Some of the Letters in the same packet will also let you into the knowledge of a strange step which have taken (strange you will think it); and, at the same time, give you my reasons for taking it (a).

It must be expected, that Situations uncommonly difficult will make necessary some extraordinary steps, which but for those situations would be hardly excuseable. It will be very happy indeed, and some what wonderful, If all the measures I have been driven to take should be right. A pure intention, void of all undutiful resentment, is what must be my consolation, whatever others may think of those measures, when they come to know them: Which however, will hardly be till it is out of my power to justify them or to answer for myself.

I am glad to hear of my Cousin Morden's safe arrival. I should wish to see him methinks: but I am afraid, that he will sail with the stream; as it must be expected, that he will hear what they have to say

⁽a) She means that of making Mr. Belford her Executor.

first.-But what I most fear, is, that he will take upon himself to avenge me-Rather than he should do fo, I would have him look upon me as a creature utterly unworthy of his concern; at least of his vin-

dictive concern.

nt

e

11

e)

u

h

nd

PY

ho

m

1

le

168 he

16.

his.

lfo

hI

the.

nly

ps,

exne.

een

011

my

noie nich

r to

ar. am

nult

fay

first

How foothing to the wounded heart of your Clariffa, how balmy, are the affurances of your continued Love and Favour;-Love me, my dear mamma Norton, continue to love me, to the end! -I now think, that I may, without prefumption, promise to deserve your Love to the end. And when I am gone, cherish my memory in your worthy heart; for in fo doing you will cherish the memory of one who loves and honours you more than the can express.

But when I am no more, get over, I charge you, as foon as you can, the fmarting pangs of grief that will attend a recent loss; and let all be early turned into that fweetly melancholy Regard to MEMORY, which, engaging us to forget all faults, and to remember nothing but what was thought amiable, gives more pleasure than pain to survivors—Especially if they can comfort themselves with the humble hope, that Divine mercy has taken the dear departed to itself.

And what is the space of time to look backward upon, between an early departure and the longest furvivance!—And what the confolation attending the sweet hope of meeting again, never more to be separated, never more to be pained, grieved, or afperfed ;-- But mutually bleffing, and being bleffed,

to all Eternity!

In the contemplation of this happy State, in which I hope, in God's good time, to rejoice with you, my beloved Mrs. Norton, and also with my dear. salations, all reconciled to, and bleffing the child against whom they are now so much incensed, I conclude myfelf

Your ever-dutiful and affectionate

CLARISSA HARLOWE.

LETTER XLI.

Mr. LOVELACE, To JOHN BELFORD, Esq;

Sunday, Aug. 13.

I Don't know what a devil ails me; but I never was so much indisposed in my life. At first, I thought some of my blessed relations here had got a dose administered to me, in order to get the whole house to themselves. But, as I am the hopes of the family, I believe they would not be so wicked.

I must lay down my pen. I cannot write with any spirit at all. What a plague can be the matter with met

LORD M. paid me just now a cursed gloomy visit, to ask how I do after bleeding. His Sisters both drove away yesterday, God be thanked. But they asked not my leave; and hardly bid me good-by. My Lord was more tender, and more dutiful, that I expected. Men are less unforgiving than women. I have reason to say so, I am sure. For, besides implacable Miss Harlowe, and the old Ladies, the two Montague Apes han't been near me yet.

NEITHER eat, drink, nor steep!--- A piteous cale, Jack! If I should die like a fool now, people would fay Miss Harlowe had broken my heart.--- That she vexes me to the heart, is certain.

Confounded squeamish! I would fain write it of But must lay down my pen again. It won't do Poor Lovelace!—What a devil ails thee?

Well, but now let's try for't—Hoy---Hoy-Hoy! Confound me for a gaping puppy, how yawn!---Where shall I begin? At thy Executorship --- Thou shalt have a double office of it: For I really think thou mayst fend me a cossin and a shroud shall be ready for them by the time they can come down.

thi

be

Ith

ha

lig

an

for I an

and

brot B thou thee by h that,

friend a doz word: feriou

these Roma preser thus en thee,

(a) F. 195.

What a little fool is this Miss Harlowe! I warrant she'll now repent that she refused me. Such a lovely young widow---What a charming widow would she have made! How would she have adorned the weeds! To be a widow in the first twelve months is one of the greatest felicities that can befal a fine woman. Such pretty employment in new dismals, when she had hardly worn round her blazing joyfuls! Such lights, and such shades! how would they set off one another, and be adorned by the wearer!---

Go to the devil !--- I will write !--- Can I do any-

thing elfe?

ole

ny

el

fit, oth

rer

ye.

120

en.

ım-

WO

ale,

the

off.

do.

y --

W.

thip

N ba

They would not have me write, Belford .-- I must be ill indeed, when I can't write .---

But thou feemest nettled, Jack! Is it because I was stung? It is not for two friends, any more than for man and wise, to be out of patience at one time. --- What must be the consequence if they are?--- I am in no fighting mood just now: But as patient and passive as the chickens that are brought me in broth---- For I am come to that already.

But I can tell thee, for all this, be thy own man, if thou wilt, as to the Executorship, I will never suffer thee to expose my Letters. They are too ingenuous by half to be seen. And I absolutely insist upon it,

that, on receipt of this, thou burn them all.

I will never forgive thee that impudent and unfriendly reflection, of my cavaliering it here over half a dozen persons of distinction: Remember, too, thy words poor helpless Orphan---These reflections are too serious, and thou art also too serious, for me to let these things go off as jesting; notwithstanding the Roman style (a) is preserved; and, indeed, but just preserved. But my Soul, Jack, if I had not been taken thus egregiously cropsick, I would have been up with thee, and the Lady too, before now.

⁽a) For what these gentlemen mean by the Roman style, see Vol. I. P. 195. in the note.

r

W I

ha

ou

he

pe

not ple

the

hop

bot

by

The

An

fay 1

Mil

A ---

(Ya

I

But write on, however: And fend me copies, if thou canst, of all that passes between our Charlotte and Miss Harlowe. I'll take no notice of what thou communicatest of that fort. I like not the people here the worse for their generous offer to the Lady. But you fee she is as proud as implacable. There's no obliging her. She'd rather fell her cloaths, than be beholden to any-body, altho' she would oblige by permitting the obligation.

Oh Lord! Oh Lord! --- Mortal ill --- Adieu, Jack!

I was forced to leave off, I was foill, at this place And what dost think! Why Lord M. brought the Parson of the parish to pray by me; for his Chaplain is at Oxford. I was lain down in my night-gown over my waistcoat, and in a doze : And, when I opened my eyes, who should I see, but the Parson kneeling on one fide the bed; Lord M. on the other; Mrs. Greme, who had been fent for to tend me, as they call it, at the feet! God be thanked, my Lord, faid I, in an ecftafy !-- Where's Miss !-- For I supposed they were going to marry me.

They thought me delirious, at first; and prayed

louder and louder.

This roused me: Off the bed I started; slid my feet into my flippers; put my hand in my waistcoat pocket, and pulled out thy Letter with my Beloved's meditation in it: My Lord, Dr. Wright, Mrs. Grems, you have thought me a very wicked fellow: But, fee! I can read you as good as you can read me.

They stared at one another. I gaped, and read, Poor mo---or--tals the cau---o--ause of their own-

their own mif--fer--ry.

It is as fuitable to my case, as to the Lady's, 25 thoul't observe, if thou readest it again (a). At the passage where it is said, That when a man is chastened for sin, his beauty consumes away, I stept to the glass A poor figure, by Jupiter, cried I!---And they all praised and admired me; listed up their hands and their eyes; and the Doctor said, He always thought it impossible, that a man of my sense could be so wild as the world said I was. My Lord chuckled for joy; congratulated me; and, thank my dear Miss Harlowe, I got high reputation among good, bad, and indifferent. In short, I have established myself for ever with all here.---But, O Belford, even This will not do!---I must leave off again.

A visit from the Montague Sifters, led in by the hobbling Peer, to congratulate my amendment and reformation both in one. What a lucky event this illness with this meditation in my pocket; for we were all to pieces before! Thus, when a Boy, have I joined with a croud coming out of church, and have been thought to have been there myself.

I am incensed at the insolence of the young Levite. Thou wilt highly oblige me, if thoul't find him

out, and fend me his Ears in the next Letter.

My Beloved mistakes me, if she thinks I proposed her writing to me, as an alternative that should dispense with my attendance upon her. That it shall not do, nor did I intend it should, unless she had pleased me better in the contents of her Letter than she has done. Bid her read again. I gave no such hopes. I would have been with her in spite of you both, by to-morrow, at farthest, had I not been laid by the heels thus, like a helpless miscreant.

But I grow better and better every hour, I fay: The Doctor fays not: But I am fure I know best: And I will soon be in London, depend on't. But say nothing of this to my dear, cruel, and implacable

Miss Harlowe.

33

he

ain

wn

n I

Con

er;

, 25

up.

ved

my

coat

ed's

me,

see!

read,

VII---

S, 25

t the

A enes

lass

A---dieu---u, Ja--aack---What a gaping puppy (Yaw---n! yaw---n!)

Thy LOVELACE!

for

by

upo

for

fwe

B

I

of h

ed h

to be

own

ike

choic

...0

Bu

lmof

cribin

nake

ier m

er di

oncer

Goo

ars of

oodne

ofe he

ot pit

VOL

LETTER XLII.

Mr. Belford, To Robert Lovelace, Esq;

Monday, Aug. 14.

I AM extremely concerned for thy illness. I sheld be very forry to lose thee. Yet, if thou diest so soon, I could wish, from my Soul, it had been before the beginning of last April: And this as well for thy sake, as for the sake of the most excellent woman in the world: For then thou woulds not have had the most crying sin of thy life to answer for.

I was told on Saturday, that thou wert very much out of order; and this made me forbear writing till I heard further. Harry, on his return from thee, confirmed the bad way thou art in. But I hope Lord M. in his unmerited tenderness for thee, thinks the worst of thee. What can it be, Bob? A violent fever, they say; but attended with odd and severe symptoms.

I will not trouble thee in the way thou art in, with what passes here with Miss Harlowe. I wish thy repentance as swift as thy illness; and as essications, if thou diest; for it is else to be feared, that

She and You will never meet in one place.

I told her how ill you are. Poor man! faid she, Dangerously ill, say you?

Dangeroufly indeed, Madam !--- So Lord M. fends

me word!

God be merciful to him, if he die!---faid the admirable creature --- Then, after a pause, Poor wretch!
--- May he meet with the mercy he has not shewn!

I fend this by a special messenger: For I am impatient to hear how it goes with thee.---If I have received thy last Letter, what melancholy reslections will that last, so full of shocking levity, give to

Thy true Friend,

JOHN BELFORD!

LETTER XLIII.

Mr. LOVELACE, To JOHN BELFORD, Efq;

Tuesday, Aug. 15.

THANK thee, Jack; most heartily I thank thee, for the sober conclusion of thy last!---I have a good mind, for the sake of it, to forgive thy till-now

absolutely unpardonable Extracts.

But dost think I will lose such an angel, such a forgiving angel, as this?---By my Soul, I will not!
--To pray for mercy for such an ungrateful miscreant!
---How she wounds me, how she cuts me to the soul, by her exalted generosity!---But She must have mercy upon me first!---Then will she teach me a reliance for the sake of which her prayer for me will be answered.

But hasten, hasten to me, particulars of her health,

of her employments, of her conversation.

I am fick only of Love!---O that I could have called her mine!---It would then have been worth while to be fick!---To have fent for her down to me from town; and to have had her, with healing in her dovelike wings, flying to my comfort; her duty and her thoice to pray for me, and to bid me live for her fake!---O Jack! what an Angel have I---

But I have not lost her!---I will not lose her! I am lmost well; should be quite well but for these pre-cribing rascals, who, to do credit to their skill, will make the disease of importance.---And I will make ter mine!---And be sick again, to entitle myself to ter dutiful tenderness, and pious as well as personal

oncern!

S

)-

6.

n,

fh

22.

nat

he,

nds

ad.

ch!

mª

re.

ns

God for ever bless her!---Hasten, hasten particuars of her!---I am sick of Love!---Such generous
oodness!---By all that's Great and Good, I will not
see her!---So tell her!---She says, That she could
of pity me, if she thought of being mine! This,
Vol. VII.

according to Miss Howe's transcriptions to Charlotte.
---But bid her hate me, and have me: And my behaviour to her shall soon turn that Hate to Love!--For, body and mind, I will be wholly hers.

LETTER XLIV.

Mr. Belford, To Robert Lovelace, E/g;

Thursday, Aug. 17.

er

Ro

ha

do

nite

dee

in I

cone

ftuff

ed un

thor

Penit

her p

icorn.

Tragedy

Venice I

King Le

stances, to

recovers l

FUTURE And obser

Virtue of

s Lovelac

T

I AM fincerely rejoiced to hear that thou art already so much amended, as thy servant tells me thou art. Thy Letter looks as if thy morals were mending with thy health. This was a Letter I could shew, as I did, to the Lady.

She is very ill (Curfed Letters received from her implacable family!): So I could not have much conversation with her, in thy favour, upon it.---But what passed will make thee more and more adore her.

She was very attentive to me, as I read it; and, when I had done, Poor man! faid she; what a Letter is this! He had timely instances, that my tempor was not ungenerous, if generosity could have obliged him! But his remorfe, and that for his own sake, if all the punishment I wish him.---Yet I must be more reserved, if you write to him every-thing I say!

I extolled her unbounded goodness---How could

help it, tho' to her face!

No goodness in it! she said---It was a frame mind she had endeavoured after for her own sake. She suffered too much in want of mercy, not to wish to a penitent heart.---He seems to be penitent, so she; and it is not for me to judge beyond appearances.—If he be not, he deceives himself more that any-body else.

She was so ill, that this was all that passed on the

occasion.

What a fine Subject for Tragedy would the injun

of this Lady, and her behaviour under them, both with regard to her implacable friends, and to her perfecutor, make! With a grand objection as to the Moral, nevertheless (a); for here Virtue is punished! Except indeed we look forward to the Rewards of HEREAFTER, which, morally, she must be sure of, or who can? Yet, after all, I know not, so sad a fellow art thou, and so vile an Husband mightest thou have made, whether her Virtue is not rewarded in missing thee: For things the most grievous to human nature, when they happen, as this charming creature once observed, are often the happiest for us in the event.

I have frequently thought, in my attendance on this Lady, That if Belton's admired author, Nic. Rowe, had had fuch a character before him, he would have drawn another fort of a Penitent than he has done, or given his Play, which he calls The fair Penitent, a fitter Title. Miss Harlowe is a Penitent indeed! I think, if I am not guilty of a contradiction in terms; a Penitent without a fault; her Parents conduct towards her from the first considered.

nd,

per ged

, 1

nor

uld

ihi

pear tha

on th

juri

The whole Story of the other is a pack of damned ftuff. Lothario, 'tis true, feems fuch another wicked ungenerous varlet as thou knowest who: The author knew how to draw a Rake; but not to paint a Penitent. Calista is a desiring luscious wench, and her penitence is nothing else but rage, insolence, and scorn. Her passions are all storm and tumult; no-

G 2

thing

⁽a) Mr. Belford's objection, That Virtue ought not to suffer in a Tragedy, is not well considered: Monimia in the Orphan, Belvidera in Venice Preserved, Athenais in Theodosius, Cordelia in Shakespeare's King Lear, Desdemona in Othello, Hamlet (to name no more) are instances, that a Tragedy could hardly be justly called a Tragedy, if Virtue did not temporarily suffer, and Vice for a while triumph. But he recovers himself in the same paragraph; and leads us to look up to the Future for the Reward of Virtue, and for the Punishment of Guilt: And observes not amiss, when he says, He knows not but that the Virtue of such a woman as Clarisla is rewarded in missing such a man as Lovelace.

thing of the finer passions of the Sex, which, if naturally drawn, will distinguish themselves from the masculine passions, by a softness that will even shine thro' rage and despair. Her character is made up of deceit and disguise. She has no virtue; is all pride; and her devil is as much within her, as without her.

How then can the fall of such a one create a proper distress, when all the circumstances of it are considered? For does she not brazen out her crime, even after detection? Knowing her own guilt, she calls for Altamont's vengeance on his best friend, as if he had traduced her; yields to marry Altamont, tho' criminal with another; and actually beds that whineing puppy, when she had given up herself body and soul to Lothario; who, nevertheless, refused to marry her.

Her penitence, when begun, she justly styles The phrensy of her soul; and, as I said, after having, as long as she could, most audaciously brazened out her crime, and done all the mischief she could do (occasioning the death of Lothario, of her Father, and others) she stabs herself.

And can this be an act of penitence?

But, indeed, our Poets hardly know how to create a diffress without horror, murder, and suicide; and must shock your soul, to bring tears from your eyes.

Altamont indeed, who is an amorous blockhead, a credulous cuckold, and (tho' painted as a brave fellow, and a foldier) a mere Tom Essence, and a quarreller with his best friend, dies like a fool (as we are led to suppose at the conclusion of the Play) without either sword or pop-gun, of mere grief and nonsense, for one of the vilest of her Sex: But the Fair Pentent, as she is called, perishes by her own hand; and, having no title by her past crimes to laudable pity, forfeits all claim to true penitence, and, in all probability, to suture mercy.

But here is Miss CLARISSA HARLOWE, a vir-

tuous

1

tl

th

tu

fu

du

pre

tho

mu

give

and

perf

life,

man

tuous, noble, wife, and pious young Lady; who being ill used by her friends, and unhappily enfnared by a vile libertine, whom she believes to be a man of honour, is in a manner forced to throw herself upon his protection. And he, in order to obtain her confidence, never scruples the deepest and most solemn protestations of honour.

After a feries of plots and contrivances, all baffled by her virtue and vigilance, he basely has recourse to the vilest of arts, and to rob her of her honour, is

forced first to rob her of her senses.

d

ry

as

19

)C-

nd

ind

es.

, 1

fel-

ar-

are

out

nfe,

eni-

ind,

ity,

oro-

vir-

us

Unable to bring her, notwithstanding, to his ungenerous views of cohabitation, she over-awes him in the very entrance of a fresh act of premeditated guilt, in presence of the most abandoned of women assembled to assist his devilish purpose; triumphs over them all, by virtue only of her innocence; and escapes

from the vile hands he had put her into.

She nobly, not franticly, refents: Refuses to see, or to marry the wretch; who, repenting his usage of so divine a creature, would fain move her to forgive his baseness, and make him her husband: And this, tho' persecuted by all her friends, and abandoned to the deepest distress, being obliged, from ample fortunes, to make away with her apparel for subsistence; surrounded also by strangers, and forced (in want of others) to make a friend of the friend of her seducer.

Tho' longing for death, and making all proper preparations for it, convinced that grief and ill usage have broken her noble heart, she abhors the impious thought of shortening her allotted period; and, as much a stranger to Revenge as Despair, is able to forgive the author of her ruin; wishes his repentance, and that she may be the last victim to his barbarous persidy: And is solicitous for nothing so much in this life, as to prevent vindictive mischief to and from the man, who used her so basely.

G 3

This

This is penitence! This is piety! And hence a differes naturally arises, that must worthily affect every heart.

Whatever the ill-usage of this excellent woman is from her relations, she breaks not out into excesses: She strives, on the contrary, to find reason to justify them at her own expence; and seems more concerned for their cruelty to her for their sakes hereafter, when she shall be no more, than for her own: For, as to herself, she is sure, she says, God will sorgive her, tho no one on earth will.

On every extraordinary provocation she has recourse to the Scriptures, and endeavours to regulate her vehemence by sacred precedents. Better people, she says, have been more afflicted than she, grievous as she sometimes thinks her afflictions: And shall she not bear what less faulty persons have borne? On the very occasion I have mentioned (some new instances of implacableness from her friends) the inclosed meditation will shew, how mildly, and yet how forcibly, she complains. See if thou, in the wicked levity of thy heart, canst apply it to thy case, as thou didst the other. If thou canst not, give way to thy Conscience, and That will make the properest

is

th

hi

fen

110

not

non

ftir.

not

to p

MEDITATION.

HOW long will ye vex my foul, and break me in pieces with words!

Be it indeed that I have erred, mine error remaineth

with myself.

application.

To her that is afflicted, pity should be shewn from ber

But she that is ready to slip with her feet, is as a lamp despised in the thought of them that are at ease.

There is a shame which bringeth sin, and there is a shame which bringeth glory and grace.

Have pity upon me, have pity upon me, O ye, my friends! for the hand of God hath touched me.

If your foul were in my foul's stead, I also could speak as ye do: I could beap up words against you—

But I would strengthen you with my mouth, and the

moving of my lips should asswage your grief.

Why will ye break a leaf driven to and fro? Why will ye pursue thy dry stubble? Why will ye write bitter words against me, and make me possess the iniquities of my youth?

Mercy is seasonable in the time of affliction, as clouds

of rain in the time of drought.

d

d

e,

W

eth

ber

777

Are not my days few? Cease then, and let me alone, that I may take comfort a little—Before I go whence I shall not return; even to the land of darkness, and shadow of death!

Let me add, That the excellent Lady is informed, by a Letter from Mrs. Norton, that Colonel Morden is just arrived in England. He is now the only person she wishes to see.

I expressed some jealousy upon it, lest he should have place given over me in the Executorship. She said, That she had no thoughts to do so now; because such a Trust, were he to accept of it (which she doubted) might, from the nature of some of the papers which in that case would necessarily pass through his hands, occasion mischiefs between my friend and him, that would be worse than death for her to think of.

Poor Belton, I hear, is at death's door. A meffenger is just come from him, who tells me, He cannot die till he sees me. I hope the poor fellow will not go off yet; since neither his affairs in this world, nor for the other, are in tolerable order. I cannot avoid going to the poor man. Yet am unwilling to stir, till I have an affurance from you, that you will not disturb the Lady: For I know he will be very loth to part with me, when he gets me to him.

Tourville tells me how fast thou mendest: Let me G 4 conjure

re

ar

ha

up

per

tho

And I wi

mar

spe &

to go

man

has leithe

conjure thee not to think of molesting this incomparable woman. For thy own fake I request this, as well as for hers, and for the fake of thy given promise: For, should she die within a few weeks, as I fear she will, it will be said, and perhaps too justly, that thy visit has hastened her end.

In hopes thou wilt not, I wish thy perfect recovery: Else that thou mayst relapse, and be confined to thy

bed.

LETTER XLV.

Mr. BELFORD, To Miss CLARISSA HARLOWE.

Modam, Sat. Morn. Aug. 19.

I Think myself obliged in honour to acquaint you, that I am afraid Mr. Lovelace will try his fate by

an interview with you.

I wish to Heaven you could prevail upon yourself to receive his visit. All that is respectful, even to veneration, and all that is penitent, will you see in his behaviour, if you can admit of it. But as I am obliged to set out directly for Epsom, (to perform, as I apprehend, the last friendly offices for poor Mr. Belton, whom once you saw) and as I think it more likely, that Mr. Lovelace will not be prevailed upon, than that he will, I thought sit to give you this intimation, lest, if he should come, you should be too much surprised.

He flatters himself, that you are not so ill as I represent you to be. When he sees you, he will be convinced, that the most obliging things he can do, will be as proper to be done for the sake of his own future peace of mind, as for your health-sake; and, I dare say, in fear of hurting the latter, he will forbear the thoughts of any further intrusion; at least while you are so much indisposed: So that one balf-hour's shock, if it will be a shock to see the unhappy man (but just got up himself from a dangerous sever)

will be all you will have occasion to stand.

I beg you will not too much hurry and discompose yourself. It is impossible he can be in town till Monday, at foonest. And if he resolve to come, I hope to be at Mr. Smith's before him.

I am, Madam, with the profoundest veneration, Your most faithful and most obedient Servant,

J. BELFORD.

LETTER XLVI.

Mr. LOVELACE, To JOHN BELFORD, E/q; [In Answer to his of Aug. 17. See Letter xliv.] Sunday, Aug. 20.

W HAT an unmerciful fellow art thou! A man has no need of a conscience, who has such an impertinent monitor. But if Nic. Rowe wrote a Play that answers not his title, am I to be reflected upon for that ?--- I have finned; I repent; I would repair-She forgives my fin; she accepts my repentance: But she won't let me repair-What wouldst have me to do?

But get thee gone to Belton, as foon as thou canft. Yet whether thou goest or not, up I must go, and see what I can do with the fweet oddity myself. The moment these prescribing varlets will let me, depend upon it, I go. Nay, Lord M. thinks she ought to permit me one interview. His opinion has great authority with me---when it squares with my own: And I have affured him, and my two Coufins, that I will behave with all the deceney and respect that man can behave with to the person whom he most respects. And so I will. Of this, if thou chusest not to go to Belton mean time, thou shalt be witness.

1.

h

be

0,

VIA. d,

r. At

Colonel Morden, thou hast heard me fay, is a man of honour and bravery :--- But Colonel Morden. has had his girls, as well as you and I. And indeed, either openly or fecretly, who has not? The devil

G 5

always baits with a pretty wench, when he angles for a man, be his age, rank, or degree, what it will.

I have often heard my Beloved speak of the Colonel with great distinction and esteem. I wish he could make matters a little easier, for her mind's sake,

between the rest of the Implacables and herself.

Methinks I am forry for honest Belton. But a man cannot be ill, or vapourish, but thou liftest up thy shriek-owl note, and killest him immediately. None but a fellow, who is sit for a drummer in death's forlorn-hope, could take so much delight, as thou dost, in beating a dead march with thy goose-

quills.

Whereas didst thou but know thine own talents, thou art formed to give mirth by thy very appearance; and wouldst make a better figure by half, leading up thy brother-bears at Hockley in the Hole, to the music of a Scots bagpipe. Methinks I see thy clumfy sides shaking (and shaking the sides of all beholders) in these attitudes; thy fat head archly beating time on thy porterly shoulders, right and lest by turns, as I once beheld thee practising to the horn-pipe at Preston. Thou remembrest the frolic, as I have done an hundred times; for I never before saw thee appear so much in character.

But I know what I shall get by this---Only that notable observation repeated, That thy outside is the worst of thee, and mine the best of me. And so let it be. Nothing thou writest of this sort can I take

b

ir

in

m

ex

ge

lar

tel

gu

25

amis.

But I shall call thee seriously to account, when I see thee, for the Extracts thou hast given the Lady from my Letters, notwithstanding what I said in my last; especially if she continue to refuse me. An bundred times have I myself known a woman deny, yet comply at last: But, by these Extracts, thou hast, I doubt, made her bar up the door of her heart, as she used to do her chamber-door, against me.—This there-

LETTER XLVII.

Mr. LOVELACE, To JOHN BELFORD, E/q. London, Aug. 21, Monday.

I Believe I am bound to curse thee, Jack. Nevertheless I won't anticipate but proceed to write thee a longer Letter, than thou hast had from me for

some time past. So here goes.

That thou mightest have as little notice as possible of the time I was resolved to be in town, I set out in my Lord's chariot-and-six yesterday, as soon as I had dispatched my Letter to thee, and arrived in town last night: For I knew I could have no dependence on thy friendship where Miss Harlowe's humour was concerned.

I had no other place so ready, and so was forced to go to my old lodgings, where also my wardrobe is; and there I poured out millions of curses upon the whole crew, and refused to see either Sally or Polly; and this not only for suffering the Lady to escape, but for the villainous Arrest, and for their detestable insolence to her at the officer's house.

I dressed myself in a never-worn suit, which I had intended for one of my wedding suits; and liked my-felf so well, that I began to think with thee, that

my outfide was the best of me.

1-

Y

1-

W

at

he

fo

ke

n I

dy

my

An

ıy,

ft,

as

e-

I took a chair to Smith's, my heart bounding in almost audible thumps to my throat, with the assured expectation of seeing my Beloved. I clasped my fingers as I was danced along: I charged my eyes to languish and sparkle by turns: I talked to my knees, telling them how they must bend; and, in the language of a charming describer, acted my part in fancy, as well as spoke it to myself:

G 6

Tenderin

Tenderly kneeling, thus will I complain:
Thus court her pity; and thus plead my pain;
Thus figh for fansy'd frowns, if frowns should rise;
And thus meet favour in her soft ning eyes.

In this manner entertained I myself, till I arrived at Smith's; and there the sellows set down their gay burden. Off went their hats; Will. ready at hand in a new livery; up went the head; out rushed my Honour; the woman behind the compter all in slutters;—respect and sear giving due solemnity to her features; and her knees, I doubt not, knocking against the inside of a wainscot sence.

Your fervant, Madam-Will. let the fellows move

to fome distance, and wait.

You have a young Lady lodges here; Miss Har-

lowe, Madam: Is the above?

Sir, Sir, and please your Honour [The woman is struck with my figure, thought I]: Miss Harlowe, Sir! There is, indeed, such a young Lady lodges here—But, but---

But what, Madam?---I must see her.---One pair of stairs; is it not?---Don't trouble yourself---I shall find her apartment. And was making towards the

Stairs.

Sir, Sir, the Lady, the Lady is not at home---She

is abroad --- She is in the country----

In the country! Not at home!---Impossible! You will not pass this Story upon me, good woman. I must see her. I have business of life and death with her.

Indeed, Sir, the Lady is not at home! Indeed, Sir, the is abroad?---

She then rung a bell: John, cried she, pray step down!---Indeed, Sir, the Lady is not at home.

Down came John, the good man of the house, when I expected one of his journeymen, by her faucy familiarity.

My

to

ha

tin

Le

WO

cufi

ftep

ful

abor

for i

Warr

and

A

My dear, faid she, the gentleman will not believe

Miss Harlowe is abroad.

John bowed to my fine cloaths: Your fervant, Sir,---Indeed the Lady is abroad. She went out of town this morning by Six o'clock---into the country --- By the Doctor's advice.

Still I would not believe either John or his wife. If am fure, faid I, she cannot be abroad. I heard she was very ill---She is not able to go out in a coach.

Do you know Mr. Belford, friend?

Yes, Sir; I have the honour to know 'Squire Belford. He is gone into the country to visit a fick friend, he went on Saturday, Sir.

This had also been told from thy lodgings to Willwhom I sent to desire to see thee on thy first coming

to town.

e

e

u.

I

h

r,

Well, and Mr. Belford wrote me word that she was exceeding ill. How then can she be gone out?

O Sir, the is very ill; very ill, indeed --- She could

hardly walk to the coach.

Belford, thought I, himself knew nothing of the time of my coming; neither can he have received my. Letter of yesterday: And so ill, 'tis impossible she would go out.

Where is her fervant? Call her fervant to me.

Her fervant, Sir, is her Nurse: She has no other:

And she is gone with her.

Well, friend, I must not believe you. You'll excuse me; but I must go up stairs myself. And was stepping up.

John hereupon put on a serious, and a less respect-

ful face- -Sir, this house is mine; and---

And what, friend? not doubting then but she was above.---I must and will see her. I have authority for it. I am a Justice of peace. I have a Search-warrant.

And up I went; they following me, muttering and in a plaguy flutter.

The

The first door I came to was locked. I tapped at it.

The Lady, Sir, has the key of her own apartment, On the infide I question not, my honest friend; tapping again. And being assured, if she heard my voice that her timorous and soft temper would make her betray herself by some flutters, to my listening ear, I said aloud I am consident Miss Harlowe is here: Dearest Madam, open the door: Admit me but for one momeet to your presence.

But neither answer nor fluttering saluted my ear; and the people being very quiet, I led on to the next apartment; and the key being on the outside, I opened it, and looked all round it, and into the

closet.

The man faid he never saw so uncivil a gentleman in his life.

d

y

fu

ba

ha

Wi

for

Or

the

the

Hark thee, friend, faid I; Let me advise thee to be a little decent; or I shall teach thee a lesson thou never learnedst in all thy life.

Sir, faid he, 'tis not like a gentleman, to affront

a man in his own house.

Then pr'ythee, man, replied I, don't crow upon

thine own dunghil.

I stepped back to the locked door: My dear Miss Harlowe, I beg of you to open the door, or l'll break it open;---pushing hard against it, that it cracked again.

The man looked pale; and trembling with his fright, made a plaguy long face; and called to one of his bodice-makers above, fofeph, come down

quickly.

Joseph came down: A lion's-face grinning fellow; thick, and short, and bushy-headed, like an old oakpollard. Then did master John put on a sturdier look. But I only hummed a tune, traversed all the other apartments, sounded the passages with my knuckles, to find whether there were private doors, and

and walked up the next pair of stairs singing all the way; John and Joseph, and Mrs. Smith, following

me trembling.

I looked round me there, and went into two opendoor bed-chambers; fearched the closets, the paffages, and peeped thro' the key-hole of another: No Miss Harlowe, by Jupiter! What shall I do!---What shall I do! as the girls say.---Now will she be grieved that she is out of the way.

I faid this on purpose to find out whether these people knew the Lady's Story; and had the answer I ex-

pected from Mrs. Smith --- I believe not, Sir.

Why fo, Mrs. Smith? Do you know who I am?

I can guess, Sir.

Whom do you guess me to be?

Your name is Mr. Lovelace, Sir, I make no doubt.

The very fame. But how came you to guess so well, dame Smith! You never saw me before---Did you?

Here, Jack, I laid out for a compliment, and

miffed it.

t

u

ıt.

n

S

k.

d

178

(-

75

d

Tis easy to guess, Sir; for there cannot be two

fuch gentlemen as you.

Well faid, dame Smith---But mean you good or bad?---Handsome was the least I thought she would have faid.

I leave you to guess, Sir.

Condemned, thought I, by myfelf, on this appeal.

Why, father Smith, thy wife is a wit, man!——Didft thou ever find that out before?—But where is widow Lovick, dame Smith? My cousin John Belford fays she is a very good woman. Is she within? Or is she gone with Miss Harlowe too?

She will be within by-and-by, Sir. She is not with

the Lady.

Well, but my good dear Mrs. Smith, whither is the Lady gone? And when will she return?

I can't

I

th

fa

T

u

th

M

fo

are

flap

ma

For

crae

mo

his

cani

prid

need

shou

I can't tell, Sir.

Don't tell fibs, dame Smith; don't tell fibs, chucking her under the chin: Which made John's upperlip, with chin shortened, rise to his nofe .-- I am sure you know !--- But here's another pair of stairs: Let us fee; Who lives up there?—But hold, here's an. other room locked up, tapping at the door---Who's at home? cried I.

That's Mrs. Lovick's apartment. She is gone out,

and has the key with her.

Widow Lovick! rapping again, I believe you are at home: Pray open the door.

John and Joseph muttered and whispered toge-

ther.

No whispering, honest friends: 'Tis not manners to whisper. Joseph, what said John to thee?

JOHN, Sir, disdainfully repeated the good wo-

man.

I beg pardon, Mrs. Smith: But you fee the force of example. Had you shewed your honest man more respect, I should. Let me give you a piece of advice-- Women who treat their husbands irreverently, teach strangers to use them with contempt. honest master John; why dost not pull off thy hat to me?-O, fo thou wouldft, if thou hadft it on: But thou never wearest thy hat in thy wife's presence, I believe; dost thou?

None of your fleers and your jeers, Sir, cried John, I wish every married pair lived as happily as we do.

I wish so too, honest friend. But I'll be hanged if thou hast any children.

Why fo, Sir?

Haft thou? --- Answer me, man: Haft thou, or not?

Perhaps not, Sir. But what of that.

What of that ?--- Why I'll tell thee: The man who has no children by his wife must put up with plain John. Hadst thou a child or two, thou'dst be called Mr.

Mr. Smith, with a courtefy, or a smile at least, at every word.

You are very pleasant, Sir, replied my dame. I fanfy, if either my husband or I had as much to answer for as I know whom, we should not be for

merry.

Why then, dame Smith, so much the worse for those who were obliged to keep you company. But I am not merry---I am sad!---Hey-ho!---Where shall I find my dear Miss Harlowe?

My beloved Miss Harlowe! [calling at the foot of the third pair of stairs] if you are above, for Heaven's

fake answer me. I am coming up.

Sir, said the good man, I wish you'd walk down. The servants rooms, and the working rooms, are up those stairs, and another pair; and nobody's there that you want.

Shall I go up, and fee if Miss Harlowe be there,

Mrs. Smith?

e

1,

0

it I

a,

b

or

d

You may, Sir, if you pleafe.

Then I won't; for, if she was, you would not be

fo obliging.

I am ashamed to give you all this attendance: You are the politest traders I ever knew. Honest Joseph, slapping him upon the shoulders on a sudden, which made him jump, didst ever grin for a wager, man?—For the rascal seemed not displeased with me; and, cracking his slat sace from ear to ear, with a distended mouth, shewed his teeth, as broad and as black as his thumb-nails.—But don't I hinder thee? What canst earn a-day, man?

Half a crown, I can earn a-day; with an air of

pride and petulance, at being startled.

There then is a day's wages for thee. But thou

needest not attend me farther.

Come Mrs. Smith, come John (Master Smith I should say) let's walk down, and give me an account where the Lady is gone, and when she will return.

So

h

fi

to

to

m

th

otl

mç

So down stairs led I. John and Joseph (tho' I had discharged the latter) and my dame, following me, to shew their complaisance to a stranger.

I re-entered one of the first-floor rooms. I have a great mind to be your lodger: For I never saw such obliging solks in my life. What rooms have you to let?

None at all, Sir.

I am forry for that. But whose is this?

Mine, Sir, chuffily faid John.

Thine, man! Why then I will take it of thee. This, and a bed-chamber, and a garret for one fervant, will content me. I will give thee thine own price, and half a guinea a day over, for those conveniences.

For ten guineas a day, Sir-

Hold, John! (Mafter Smith I should say)—Before thou speakest, consider—I won't be affronted, man.

Sir, I wish you'd walk down, said the good wo-

man. Really, Sir, you take-

Great liberties I hope you would not fay, Mrs. Smith?

Indeed, Sir, I was going to say something like it. Well, then, I am glad I prevented you; for such words better become my mouth than yours. But I must lodge with you till the Lady returns. I believe I must. However, you may be wanted in the shop; so we'll talk that over there.

Down I went, they paying diligent attendance on

my steps.

When I came into the shop, seeing no chair or stool, I went behind the compter, and sat down under an arched kind of canopy of carved work, which these proud traders, emulating the royal nich-fillers, often give themselves, while a joint-stool, perhaps, serves those, by whom they get their bread: Such is the dignity of Trade in this mercantile nation!

I looked about me, and above me; and told them, I was very proud of my feat; asking, If John were

ever permitted to fill this superb nich?

Perhaps he was, he said, very surlily.

That is it, that makes thee look so like a statue, man. John looked plaguy glum upon me. But his man Joseph and my man Will. turned round with their backs to us, to hide their grinning, with each his fist in his mouth.

I asked, What it was they fold?

Powder, and wash-balls, and snuff, they faid; and gloves and stockens.

O come, I'll be your customer. Will. do I want

wash-balls ?

re

0.

rs.

.

ch

tI

eve

p;

on

10

ın•

ich

ers

ps,

ich

m,

ere

Yes, and please your Honour, you can dispense with one or two.

Give him half a dozen, dame Smith.

She told me she must come where I was, to serve them. Pray, Sir, walk from behind the compter.

Indeed but I won't. The fhop shall be mine.

Where are they, if a customer should come in?

She pointed over my head, with a purse-mouth, as if she would not have simpered, could she have helped it. I reached down the glass, and gave Will. six. There—put 'em up, sirrah.

He did, grinning with his teeth out before; which touching my conscience, as the loss of them was owing to me, Joseph, said I, come hither. Come hither,

man, when I bid thee.

He stalked towards me, his hands behind him, half

willing, and half unwilling.

I fuddenly wrapt my arm round his neck. Will. thy penknife, this moment. D—n the fellow, where's

thy penknife?

O Lord! faid the pollard-headed dog, struggling to get his head loose from under my arm, while my other hand was muzzling about his cursed chaps, as if I would take his teeth out.

I will pay thee a good price, man: Don't struggle

thus? The penknife, Will!

O Lord, cried Joseph, struggling still more and more: And out comes Will's pruning-knife; for

ft

21

h

to

hi

I

g

be

lig

M

CO

he

po

on

fri

an

be

fer

WC

con

fee

fell

not

the rascal is a gardiner in the country. I have only this, Sir.

The best in the world to launch a gum. D-1

the fellow, why doft struggle thus?

Master and Mistress Smith being asraid, I suppose, that I had a design upon Joseph's throat, because he was their champion (and this, indeed, made me take the more notice of him) coming towards me with countenances tragi-comical, I let him go.

I only wanted, faid I, to take out two or three of this rascal's broad teeth, to put them into my servant's jaws—And I would have paid him his price for them.

I would, by my Soul, Joseph.

Joseph shook his ears; and with both hands stroaked down, smooth as it would lie, his bushy hair; and looked at me, as if he knew not whether he should laugh or be angry: But, after a stupid stare or two, stalked off to the other end of the shop, nodding his head at me as he went, still stroaking down his hair; and took his stand by his master, facing about, and muttering, that I was plaguy strong in the arms, and he thought would have throttled him. Then folding his arms, and shaking his bristled head, added, 'Twas well I was a gentleman, or he would not have taken such an affront.

I demanded where their rappee was? The good woman pointed to the place; and I took up a scollop-shell of it, refusing to let her weigh it, and filled my box. And now, Mrs. Smith, said I, where are your gloves?

She shewed me; and I chose four pair of them, and set Joseph, who looked as if he wanted to be taken

notice of again, to open the fingers.

A female customer, who had been gaping at the door, came in for some Scots snuff; and I would serve her. The wench was plaguy homely; and I told her so; or else, I said, I would have treated her. She in anger [No woman is homely in her own opinion] threw down her peny; and I put it in my pocket.

Just then, turning my eye to the door, I saw a pretty genteel Lady, with a sootman after her, peeping in with a What's the matter, good solks? to the starers; and I ran to her from behind the compter, and, as she was making off, took her hand, and drew her into the shop, begging that she would be my customer; for that I had but just begun trade.

What do you fell, Sir? faid fhe, fmiling; but a

little furprized.

S

1

S

14

19

Te.

g

T,

ed

n,

0.

ell

es?

m,

the

uld

dl

cr.

on]

uft

Tapes, ribbands, filk-laces, pins, and needles; for I am a pedlar: Powder, patches, wash-balls, stockens, garters, snuffs, and pin-cushions—Don't we, goody Smith?

So in I gently drew her to the compter, running behind it myself, with an air of great diligence and obligingness. I have excellent gloves and wash-balls, Madam; Rappee, Scots, Portugal, and all forts of snuff

Well, faid she, in a very good humour, I'll encourage a young beginner for once. Here, Andrew [to her footman] you want a pair of gloves, don't you.

I took down a parcel of gloves, which Mrs. Smith pointed to, and came round to the fellow to fit them

on myfelf.

No matter for opening them, faid I: Thy fingers, friend, are as stiff as drum-sticks. Push!—Thou'rt an aukward dog! I wonder such a pretty Lady will

be followed by fuch a clumfy varlet.

The fellow had no strength for laughing: And Joseph was mightily pleased, in hopes, I suppose, I
would borrow a few of Andrew's teeth, to keep him in
countenance: And, Father and Mother Smith, like
all the world, as the jest was turned from themselves,
seemed diverted with the humour.

The fellow faid, the gloves were too litttle.

Thrust, and be d-n'd to thee, said I: Why, sellow, thou hast not the strength of a cat.

Sir, Sir, faid he, laughing, I shall hurt your Ho-

nour's fide.

D-n thee, thrust, I say.

He

Vol. 7.

I

fo

al

hi

te

re

an

ab

hir

to

and

pu

thu

him

that

and

had

Iw

fenc

mer

avoi

Mor

fence

He did; and burst out the sides of the glove.

Will. faid I, where's thy pruning-knife? By my Soul, friend, I had a good mind to pare thy curled paws. But come, here's a larger pair: Try them, when thou gettest home; and let thy sweetheart, if thou hast one, mend the other, so take both.

The Lady laughed at the humour; as did my fellow and Mrs. Smith, and Joseph: Even John laughed, tho' he seemed by the force put upon his countenance

to be but half pleased with me neither.

Madam, faid I, and stept behind the compter, bowing over it, now I hope you will buy something for yourself. Nobody shall use you better, nor sell you cheaper.

Come, faid she, give me fix peny-worth of Por-

tugal fnuff.

They shewed me where it was, and I served her; and said, when she would have paid me, I took nothing at my opening.

If I treated her footman, she told me I should not

treat her.

Well, with all my heart, faid I: 'Tis not for us

tradefmen to be faucy-Is it, Mrs. Smith?

I put ner fixpence in my pocket; and, feizing her hand, took notice to her of the croud that had gathered about the door, and befought her to walk into the back-shop with me.

She struggled her hand out of mine, and would

stay no longer.

So I bowed, and bid her kindly welcome, and thanked her, and hoped I should have her custom another time.

She went away smiling; and Andrew after her;

who made me a fine bow.

I began to be out of countenance at the croud, which thickened apace; and bid Will. order the chair to the door.

Well, Mrs. Smith, with a grave air, I am heartily forry Miss Harlowe is abroad. You don't tell me where she is?

,

r,

8

1.

;

0.

ot

us

191

-19

he

ıld

nd

om

er;

ıd,

he

ily

ne

1.

Indeed, Sir, I cannot.

You will not, you mean.—She could have no notion of my coming. I came to town but last night. I have been very ill. She has almost broken my heart by her cruelty. You know my Story, I doubt not. Tell her, I must go out of town to-morrow morning. But I will fend my servant, to know if she will savour me with one half-hour's conversation; for, as soon as I get down, I shall set out for Dover, in my way to France, if I have not a countermand from her who

has the fole disposal of my fate.

And so, slinging down a Portugal Six-and-thirty, I took Mr. Smith by the hand, telling him, I was sorry we had not more time to be better acquainted; and bidding farewel to honest Joseph (who pursed up his mouth as I passed by him, as if he thought his teeth still in jeopardy) and Mrs. Smith adieu, and to recommend me to her fair lodger, hummed an air, and, the chair being come, whipt into it; the people about the door seeming to be in good humour with me; one crying, a pleasant gentleman, I warrant him! And away I was carried to White's, according to direction.

As foon as I came thither, I ordered Will. to go and change his cloaths, and to disguise himself by putting on his black wig, and keeping his mouth shut; and then to dodge about Smith's, to inform himself of the Lady's motions.

I GIVE thee this impudent account of myself, that thou mayest rave at me, and call me hardened, and what thou wilt. For, in the first place, I, who had been so lately ill, was glad I was alive; and then I was so balked by my Charmer's unexpected absence, and so russed by that, and by the bluss treatment of father John, that I had no other way to avoid being out of humour with all I met with. Moreover I was rejoiced to find, by the Lady's absence, and by her going out at Six in the morning,

th

y

th

the

gla

litt

clu

give

and

I

infu

gene

eft);

Belo

little

fobbi

I ne

was :

her b

hem.

cern

and it

upon

And,

upply

mow t

s the

VOL

0

that it was impossible she should be so ill as thou representest her to be; and this gave me still higher spirits. Then I know the Sex always love chearful and humorous sellows. The dear creature herself used to be pleased with my gay temper and lively manner; and had she been told, that I was blubbering for her in the back-shop, she would have despised me still more than she does.

Furthermore, I was fensible, that the people of the house must needs have a terrible notion of me, as a favage, bloody-minded, obdurate fellow; a perfect woman-eater; and, no doubt, expected to fee me with the claws of a lion, and the fangs of a tyger; and it was but policy to shew them, what a harmless, pleafant fellow I am, in order to familiarize the John's and the Joseph's to me. For it was evident to me, by the good woman's calling them down, that the thought me a dangerous man. Whereas now, John and I have shaken hands together, and dame Smith having feen that I have the face, and hands, and looks of a man, and walk upright, and prate, and laugh, and joke, like other people; and Joseph, that I can talk of taking his teeth out of his head, without doing him the least hurt; they will all, at my next vifit, be much more easy and pleasant to me than Andrew's gloves were to him; and we shall be as thoroughly acquainted, as if we had known one another a twelvemonth.

When I returned to our mother's, I again curfed her and all her nymphs together; and still refused to see either Sally or Polly. I raved at the horrid Arrest; and told the old dragon, that it was owing to her and hers, that the fairest virtue in the world was ruined; my reputation for ever blasted; and that I was not married, and happy in the Love of the most excellent of her Sex.

She, to pacify me, faid, she would shew me a New Face that would please me; since I would not see my Sally, who was dying for grief.

Where is this New Face? cried I: Let me see her, though I shall never see any face with pleasure but Miss Harlowe's.

She won't come down, replied she. She will not be at the word of command yet. She is but just in the tramels; and must be waited upon, I'll affure you; and courted much besides.

Ay! faid I, that looks well. Lead me to her this

instant.

t

t

e

3,

d

at

1-

y

m

as

1-

ed

to

1.

to

as

I

oft

2

ot

I followed her up: And who should she be, but that little toad Sally!

O curse you, said I, for a devil! is it you? Is yours

the New Face?

O my dear, dear Mr. Lovelace! cried she, I am glad any-thing will bring you to me!—And so the little beast threw herself about my neck, and there clung like a cat. Come, said she, what will you give me, and I'll be virtuous for a quarter of an hour,

and mimic your Clariffa to the life?

I was Belforded all over. I could not bear fuch an infult upon the dear creature (for I have a foft and generous nature in the main, whatever thou thinkelt); and curfed her most devoutly, for taking my Beloved's name in her mouth in such a way. But the little devil was not to be balked; but fell a crying, sobbing, praying, begging, exclaiming, fainting, that I never saw my lovely girl so well aped. Indeed I was almost taken in; for I could have fansied I had her before me once more.

O this Sex! this artful Sex! There's no minding them. At first, indeed, their grief and their concern may be real: But give way to the hurricane, and it will soon die away in soft murmurs, trilling upon your ears like the notes of a well-tuned viol. And, by Sally, one sees, that Art will generally so well upply the place of Nature, that you shall not easily mow the difference. Miss Clarissa Harlowe indeed to the only woman in the world I believe that can Vol. VII.

fay, in the words of her favourite Job (for I can quote a text as well as she) But it is not so with me.

They were very inquisitive about my Fair-one. They told me, that you feldom came near them; that, when you did, you put on plaguy grave airs; would hardly stay five minutes; and did nothing but praise Miss Harlowe, and lament her hard sate. In short, that you despised them; was full of sentences; and they doubted not, in a little while, would be a

loft man, and marry.

A pretty character for thee, is it not? Thou art in a bleffed way; yet hast nothing to do but to go m in it; and then what a work hast thou to go through! If thou turnest back, these forceresses will be like the Czar's Cossacks [at Pultowa, I think it was] who were planted with ready primed and cocked pieces, behind the Regulars, in order to shoot them dead, if they did not push on, and conquer; and then wilt thou be most lamentably despised by every harlot thou hast made—And, O Jack, how formidable, in that case, will be the number of thy enemies!

I intend to regulate my motions by Will's intelligence; for fee this dear Creature I must and will. Yet I have promised Lord M. to be down in two or three days, at farthest; for he is grown plaguy fond

of me fince I was ill.

I am in hopes, that the word I left, that I am to go out of town to-morrow morning, will foon bring

the lady back again.

Mean time, I thought I would write to divert thee, while thou art of such importance about the dying; and as thy servant, it seems, comes backward and forward every day, perhaps I may send thee another Letter to-morrow, with the particulars of the interview between the dear creature and me; after which my soul thirsteth.

L E T

"

6 tl

· he

· fw

the fhe

all

dra

die,

by N

Lord

man

my (

often

arms

mantle O Lo

11

LETTER XLVIII.

Mr. LOVELACE, To JOHN BELFORD, Efq:

Tuefday, Aug. 22.

MUST write on, to divert myself: For I can get no rest; no refreshing rest. I awaked just now in a curled fright. How a man may be affected by dreams!

Methought I had an interview with my Beloved. I found her all goodness, condescension, and forgiveness. She suffered herself to be overcome in 'my favour by the joint intercessions of Lord M.

Lady Sarah, Lady Betty, and my two Coufins

Montague, who waited upon her in deep mourn-'ing; the Ladies in long trains fweeping after them; Lord M. in a long black mantle trailing after him.

'They told her, they came in these robes to express ' their forrow for my fins against her, and to implore

' her to forgive me.

at

li-

ill.

10

ond

to

ing

nee,

ng;

and

her

er.

ich

T.

'I myself, I thought, was upon my knees, with a ' fword in my hand, offering either to put it up in the scabbard, or to thrust it into my heart, as she

' should command the one or the other.

'At that moment her Coufin Morden, I thought, 'all of a sudden, flashed in thro' a window, with his drawn fword—Die, Lovelace! faid he; this instant die, and be damned, if in earnest thou repairest not

by Marriage my Cousin's wrongs!

I was rifing to refent this infult, I thought, when Lord M. ran between us with his great black mantle, and threw it over my face: And instantly, my Charmer with that fweet voice which has fo often played upon my ravished ears, wrapped her arms round me, muffled as I was in my Lord's mantle: O spare, spare my Lovelace! And spare, O Lovelace, my beloved Coufin Morden! Let me

At this, charmed with her fweet mediation, I

thought I would have clasped her in my arms:
When immediately the most angelic form I had

ever beheld, all clad in transparent white, descended

in a cloud, which, opening, difcovered a firmament above it, crouded with golden Cherubs and glitter-

ing Seraphs, all addressing her with, Welcome,

welcome, welcome! and, encircling my charmer, afcended with her to the region of Seraphims; and

instantly, the opened cloud closing, I lost fight of her, and of the bright form together, and found

wrapt in my arms her azure robe (all fluck thick

with stars of embossed silver) which I had caught hold of in hopes of detaining her; but was all that

was left me of my beloved Clariffa. And then

(horrid to relate!) the floor finking under me, as the firmament had opened for her, I dropt into a hole

more frightful than that of Elden; and, tumbling

over and over down it, without view of a bottom,

I awaked in a panic; and was as effectually difordered

W

Wa

Ic

the

Ye

not

the

door

acqu

Coul

mean

A

for half an hour, as if my dream had been a reality.

Wilt thou forgive me troubling thee with such

visionary stuff? Thou wilt fee by it, only, that, sleeping or waking, my Clarissa is always present with me.

But here this moment is Will. come running hither

to tell me, that his Lady actually returned to her lodgings last night between Eleven and Twelve; and

is now there, tho' very ill.

I hasten to her. But, that I may not add to her indisposition, by any rough or boisterous behavious, I will be as soft and gentle as the dove herself in my addresses to her.

That I do love her, O all ye host of heaven,
Be witness---That she is dear to me!
Dearer than day, to one whom sight must leave;
Dearer than life, to one who fears to die!
The chair is come. I sly to my beloved.

LETTER XLIX.

Mr. LOVELACE, To JOHN BELFORD, Efq;

CURSE upon my Stars!---Disappointed again!
It was about Eight when I arrived at Smith's.

The woman was in the shop.

So, old acquaintance, how do you now? I know my Love is above.—Let her be acquainted that I am here, waiting for admission to her presence, and can take no denial. Tell her, that I will approach her with the most respectful duty, and in whose company she pleases; and I will not touch the hem of her garment, without her leave.

Indeed, Sir, you are mistaken. The lady is not

in this house, nor near it.

I'll fee that.---Will! beckoning him to me, and whispering, See if thou canst any way find out (without losing sight of the door, lest she should be below-stairs) if she be in the neighbourhood, if not within.

Will. bowed, and went off. Up went I, without further ceremony; attended now only by the good

woman.

n

e

n,

7.

ch

.

ner

her'

and

her

ur,

my

I went into each apartment, except that which was locked before, and was now also locked: And I called to my Clarissa in the voice of Love; but by the still silence was convinced she was not there. Yet, on the strength of my intelligence, I doubted not but she was in the house.

I then went up two pair of stairs, and looked round

the first room: But no Miss Harlowe.

And who, pray, is in this room? stopping at the door of another.

A widow gentlewoman, Sir .- Mrs. Lovick.

O my dear Mrs. Lovick! faid I. I am intimately acquainted with Mrs. Lovick's character, from my Coufin John Belford. I must see Mrs. Lovick by all means. Good Mrs. Lovick, open the door.

H 3

She

She did.

Your fervant, Madam. Be so good as to excuse me.---You have heard my Story. You are an admirer of the most excellent woman in the world. Dear Mrs. Lovick, tell me what is become of her?

The poor Lady, Sir, went out yesterday, on pur-

pose to avoid you.

How fo? She knew not that I would be here.

She was afraid you would come, when she heard you were recovered from your illness. Ah! Sir, what pity is it that so fine a gentleman should make such ill returns for God's goodness to him!

You are an excellent woman, Mrs. Lovick: I know that, by my Cousin John Belford's account of you:

And Miss Clarissa Harlowe is an angel.

Miss Harlowe is indeed an angel, replied she; and soon will be company for angels.

No jefting with fuch a woman as this, Jack.

Tell me of a truth, good Mrs. Lovick, where I may fee this dear Lady. Upon my Soul, I will neither fright nor offend her. I will only beg of her to hear me speak for one half-quarter of an hour; and, if she will have it so, I will never trouble her more.

ti

m

po

ho

fu

M

tha

im

in

fhe

you

a c

givi

exci

give

(

Sir, faid the widow, it would be death for her to fee you. She was at home last night; I'll tell you truth: But fitter to be in bed all day. She came home, she faid, to die; and, if she could not avoid your visit, she was unable to fly from you; and believed she should die in your presence.

And yet go out again this morning early! How

can that be, Widow?

Why, Sir, she rested not two hours, for sear of you. Her sear gave her strength, which she'll suffer for, when that sear is over. And finding herself, the more she thought of your visit, the less able to stay to receive it, she took chair, and is gone nobody knows whither. But, I believe, she intended to be carried to the water-side, in order to take boat; for she

Let. 49. Clarissa Harlowe.

151

She cannot bear a coach. It extremely incommoded her yesterday.

But before we talk any further, faid I, if she be gone abroad, you can have no objection to my looking into every apartment above and below; because

I am told fhe is actually in the house.

Indeed, Sir, she is not. You may satisfy yourself, if you please: But Mrs. Smith and I waited on her to her chair. We were forced to support her, she was so weak. She said, Whither can I go, Mrs. Lovick? Whither can I go, Mrs. Smith?---Cruel, cruel man!---Tell him I called him so, if he come again! God give him that peace which he denies me!

Sweet creature! cried I, and looked down, and

took out my handkerchief.

The widow wept. I wish, said she, I had never known so excellent a Lady, and so great a sufferer! Ilove her as my own child!

Mrs. Smith wept.

d

1-

d,

ou

ne

oid

-90

WO

of

ffer

the

tay

ody

be

for The I then gave over the hope of seeing her for this time. I was extremely chagrined at my disappointment, and at the account they gave of her ill health.

Would to Heaven, faid I, she would put it in my power to repair her wrongs! I have been an ungrateful wretch to her. I need not tell you Mrs. Lovick, how much I have injured her, nor how much she suffers by her relations implacableness. 'Tis That Mrs. Lovick, 'tis That implacableness, Mrs. Smith, that cuts her to the heart. Her family is the most implacable family on earth; and the dear creature, in resulting to see me, and to be reconciled to me, shews her relation to them a little too plainly.

O Sir, said the widow, not one syllable of what you say belongs to this Lady. I never saw so sweet a creature! so edifying a piety! and one of so forgiving a temper: She is always accusing herself, and excusing her relations. And, as to you, Sir, she forgives you: She wishes you well, and happier than

H 4 yo

you will let her be. Why will you not, Sir, why will you not, let her die in peace? 'Tis all she wishes for. You don't look like a hard-hearted gentleman! --- How can you thus hunt and persecute a poor Lady, whom none of her relations will look upon? it makes my heart bleed for her.

And then she wept again. Mrs. Smith wept also. My seat grew uneasy to me. I shifted to another several times; and what Mrs. Lovick farther said,

and shewed me, made me still more uneafy.

Bad as the poor Lady was last night, said she, she transcribed into her book a Meditation on your perfecuting her thus. I have a copy of it. If I thought it would have any effect, I would read it to you.

Let me read it myself, Mrs. Lovick.

She gave it to me. It has an Harlowe-spirited title: and from a forgiving spirit, intolerable. I defired to take it with me. She consented on condition that I shewed it to 'Squire Belford. So here, Mr. 'Squire Belford, thou may'st read it, if thou wilt.

On being hunted after by the Enemy of my Soul.

Monday, Aug. 21.

fe

m

ar

fu

he

to

DELIVER me, O Lord from the evil man.

Preserve me from the violent man.

Who imagines mischief in his heart.

He bath sharpened his tongue like a serpent. Adders

poison is under his lips.

Keep me, O Lord, from the hands of the wicked. Preferve me from the violent man who hath purposed to overthrow my goings.

He hath hid a snare for me. He hath spread a net by the way-side. He hath set gins for me in the way

wherein I walked.

Keep me from the snares which he hath laid for me, and the gins of this worker of iniquity.

The enemy hath persecuted my soul. He hath smitten

ten my life down to the ground. He hath made me dwell in darkness, as those that have been long dead.

Therefore is my fpirit over-whelmed within me. My

heart within me is defolate.

Hide not thy face from me in the day when I am in trouble.

For my days are consumed like smoke; and my bones

are burnt as the hearth.

My heart is smitten and withered like grass: so that I forget to eat my bread.

By reason of the voice of my groaning, my bones cleave

to my Skin.

73

6-

to

net

ay

ne,

iitten I am like a pelican of the wilderness. I am like an owl of the desart.

I watch; and am as a sparrow alone upon the house-top.

I have eaten ashes like bread; and mingled my drink with weeping:

Because of thine indignation, and thy wrath: for

thou hast lifted me up, and cast me down.

My days are like a shadow that declineth, and I am withered like grass.

Grant not, O Lord, the desires of the wicked : further

not his devices, left he exalt himself.

Why now, Mrs. Lovick, faid I, when I had read this Meditation, as she called it, I think I am very severely treated by the Lady, if she mean me in all this. For how is it that I am the Enemy of her Soul, when I love her both Soul and Body.

She fays, that I am a violent man, and a wicked man.--- That I have been so, I own: But I repent, and only wish to have it in my power to repair the

injuries I have done her.

The Gin, the Snare, the Net, mean matrimony, I suppose---But is it a crime in me to wish to marry her? Would any other woman think it so! and chuse to become a Pelican in the wilderness, or a lonely Spar-

H 5

TG20

row on the house-top, rather than to have a mate that would chirp about her all day and all night?

She fays, she has eaten ashes like bread—A sad mistake to be sure !--- and mingled her drink with weeping--- Sweet maudlin Soul! should I say of any

body confessing this, but Miss Harlowe.

She concludes with praying, that the desires of the wicked (meaning poor me, I doubt) may not be granted; that my devices may not be furthered, lest I exalt myself. I should undoubtedly exalt myself, and with reason, could I have the honour and the blessing of such a Wise. And if my desires have so honourable an end, I know not why I should be called wicked, and why I should not be allowed to hope, that my honest devices may be furthered, that I MAY exalt myself.

But here, Mrs. Lovick, let me ask, as something is undoubtedly meant by the lonely sparrow on the house-top, is not the dear creature at this very instant (tell me truly) concealed in Mrs. Smith's Cock-lost?—What say you, Mrs. Lovick? what say you,

Mrs. Smith, to this?

They affured me to the contrary; and that she was

to

B

tl

to

1

pr

WG

and

actually abroad, and they knew not where.

Thou feeft, Jack, that I would fain have diverted the chagrin given me not only by the women's talk, but by this collection of Scripture-texts drawn up in array against me. Several other whimsical and light things I said [All I had for it!] with the same view: But the Widow would not let me come off so. She stuck to me; and gave me, as I told thee, a good deal of uneasiness, by her sensible and serious expositulations. Mrs. Smith put in now-and-then; and the two Jack-pudden fellows, John and Joseph, not being present, I had no provocation to turn the conversation into a farce; and, at last, they both joined warmly to endeavour to prevail upon me to give up all thoughts of seeing the Lady. But I could not hear of that. On the contrary, I besought Mrs. Smith

to let me have one of her rooms but till I could fee her; and were it but for one, two, or three days, I would pay a year's rent for it; and quit it the moment the Interview was over. But they defired to be excused; and were sure the Lady would not come to the house till I was gone, were it for a month.

This pleased me; for I found they did not think her so very ill as they would have me believe her to be; but I took no notice of the slip, because I

would not guard them against more of the like.

In short, I told them, I must and would see her: But that it should be with all the respect and veneration that heart could pay to excellence like hers: And that I would go round to all the Churches in London and Westminster, where there were Prayers or Service, from Sun-rise to Sun-set, and haunt their house like a ghost, till I had the opportunity-my soul panted after.

This I bid them tell her. And thus ended our ferious

conversation.

30

!

ed

k,

in

ht

7:

he

od

10.

nd

not

n-

ed

up

ot

th

to

I took leave of them; and went down; and stepping into my chair, caused myself to be carried to Lincoln's-Inn; and walked in the gardens till Chapel was opened; and then I went in, and flayed prayers, in hopes of feeing the dear creature enter: But to no purpose; and yet I prayed most devoutly that the might be conducted thither, either by my good angel or her own. And indeed I burn more than ever with impatience to be once more permitted to kneel at the feet of this adorable woman. And had I met her or espied her in the Chapel, it is my firm belief, that I should not have been able (tho' it had been in the midst of the Sacred office, and in the presence of thousands) to have forborn prostration to her, and even clamorous supplication for her forgiveness: A Christian act; the exercise of it therefore worthy of the place.

After Service was over, I stepped into my chair again, and once more was carried to Smith's, in hopes I might

fe

CE

te

as m

be

no

tha

her

eitl

tho

Lac

An

fitte

as h

the

have furprised her there: But no such happiness for thy friend. I staid in the back-shop an hour and an half, by my watch; and again underwent a good deal of preachment from the women. John was mainly civil to me now; won over a little by my serious talk, and the honour I professed for the Lady. They all three wished matters could be made up between us: But still insisted, that she could never get over her illness; and that her heart was broken. A cue, I suppose, they had from you.

While I was there, a Letter was brought by a particular hand. They feemed very folicitous to hide it from me; which made me suspect it was for her. I defired to be suffered to cast an eye upon the Seal, and the Superscription; promising to give it back to them

unopened.

Looking upon it, I told them, I knew the Hand and Seal. It was from her Sifter (a). And I hoped it would bring her news that she would be pleased with.

They joined most heartily in the same hope: And giving the Letter to them again, I civilly took my

leave, and went away.

But I will be there again presently; for I fancy my courteous behaviour to these women, will, on their report of it, procure me the favour I so earnestly covet. And so I will leave my Letter unsealed, to tell thee the event of my next visit at Smith's.

THY fervant just calling, I fend thee this: And will soon follow it by another. Mean time, I long to hear how poor Belton is: To whom my best wishes.

(a) See Letter lx.

Y

nd

ng :ft

LETTER L.

Mr. BELFORD, To ROBERT LOVELACE, Efq;

Tuefday, Aug. 22.

I HAVE been under fuch concern for the poor man, whose exit I almost hourly expect, and at the shocking scenes his illness and his agonies exhibit, that I have been only able to make memoranda of the melancholy passages, from which to draw up a more perfect account, for the instruction of us all, when the writing appetite shall return.

CEN X NED

It is returned! Indignation has revived it, on receipt of thy Letters of Sunday and Yesterday; by which I have reason to reproach thee in very serious terms that thou hast not kept thy honour with me: And if thy breach of it be attended with such effects as I fear it will be, I shall let thee know more of my mind on this head.

If thou wouldst be thought in earnest in thy wishes to move the poor Lady in thy favour, thy ludicrous behaviour at Smith's, when it comes to be represented to her, will have a very consistent appearance, will it not?---I will, indeed, consirm her in her opinion, that the Grave is more to be wished-for, by one of her serious and pious turn, than a Husband incapable either of reslection or remorse; just recovered, as thou art from a dangerous, at least a sharp illness.

I am extremely concerned for the poor unprotected Lady. She was so exessively low and weak on Saturday, that I could not be admitted to her speech: And to be driven out of her lodgings, when it was fitter for her, to be in bed, is such a piece of cruelty, as he only could be guilty of, who could act as thou held done her such as the such as

hast done, by fuch an angel.

Canst thou thyself say, on reflection, that it has not the look of a wicked and hardened sportiveness, in thee, for the fake of a wanton humour only (fince it can answer no end that thou proposest to thyself, but the direct contrary) to hunt from place to place a poor Lady, who, like a harmless deer, that has already a barbed shaft in her breast, seeks only a refuge from

thee, in the shades of death.

But I will leave this matter upon thy own Conficience, to paint thee such a Scene from my Memoranda, as thou perhaps wilt be moved by more effectually than by any other: Because it is such a one, as thou thyself must one day be a principal actor in, and, as I thought, hadst very lately in apprehension: And is the last scene of one of thy most intimate friends, who has been for the four past days labouring in the agonies of death. For, Lovelace, let this truth, this undoubted truth, be engraven on thy memory, in all thy gaieties, That the Life we are so fond of, is hardly Life; a mere Breathing-space only: and that at the end of its longest date,

THOU MUST DIE AS WELL AS BELTON.

0

too

and

jeć

his

Lo

fit 1

wil

felf

for

thin

Thou knowest by Tourville what we had done as to the poor man's worldly affairs; and that we had got his unhappy Sister to come and live with him (little did we think him so very near his end): And so I will proceed to tell thee, that when I arrived at his house on Saturday night, I found him excessively ill: But just raised, and in his elbow-chair, held up by his Nurse and Mowbray (the roughest and most untouched creature that ever entered a sick man's chamber); while the maid-servants were trying to make that bed easier for him which he was to return to; his mind ten times uneasier than That could be, and the true cause that the Down was no softer to him.

He had so much longed to see me as, I was told by his Sister (whom I sent for down to enquire how he was) that they all rejoiced when I entered: Here, said Mowbray, Here, Tommy, is honest Jack Belford?

Where, Where, where? faid the poor man.

I hear his voice, cried Mowbray: He is coming

up stairs.

is.

d

I

is

1:

YC

n-

n.

ke

0;

nd

ld

W

e,

1.

e,

In a transport of joy, he would have raised himself at my entrance, but had like to have pitched out of the chair: And when recovered, called me his best friend! his kindest friend! but burst out into a flood of tears: O Jack! O Belford! said he, see the way I am in! See how weak! So much, and so soon reduced! do you know me? do you know your poor friend Belton?

You are not so much altered, my dear Belton, as you think you are. But I see you are weak; very

weak --- And I am forry for it.

Weak, weak, indeed, my dearest Belford, said he, and weaker in mind, if pessible, than in body; and wept bitterly---or I should not thus unman myfelf. I, who never feared any thing, to be forced to shew myself such a Nurshing!---I am quite ashamed of myself!---But don't despise me; dear Belford, don't despise me, I beseech thee.

I ever honoured a man that could weep for the diftreffes of others; and ever shall, said I; and such a

one cannot be infensible of his own.

However, I could not help being vifibly moved at

the poor fellow's emotion.

Now faid the brutal Mowbray, do I think thee infufferable, Jack. Our poor friend is already a peg too low; and here thou art letting him down lower and lower still. This foothing of him in his dejected moments, and joining thy womanish tears with his, is not the way; I am sure it is not. If our Lovelace were here, he'd tell thee so.

Thou art an impenetrable creature, replied I; unfit to be present at a scene, the terrors of which thou wilt not be able to seel till thou seelest them in thysels; and then, if thou hast time for feeling, my life for thine, thou behavest as pitifully, as those thou thinkest mast pitiful.

Then

at

an

g0

ad

bra

the

ing

Wit

bear

I

who

call

10, 2

love

pany

and

Yet

mile

and-

more

male

ened Th

Mils

thip,

Then turning to the poor fick man, Tears, my dear Belton, are no figns of an unmanly, but, contrarily of a humane nature; they eafe the overcharged heart, which would burft but for that kindly and natural relief.

Give forrow words (fays Shakespeare) --- The grief that does not speak, Whifpers the o'er-fraught heart, and bids it break.

I know, my dear Belton, thou usedst to take pleafure in repetitions from the poets; but thou must be tasteless of their beauties now: Yet be not discountenanced by this uncouth and unreflecting Mowbray, for, as Juvenal fays, Tears are the prerogative of manbood-

'Tis, at least, seasonably said, My dear Belford. It is kind to keep me in countenance for this womanish weakness, as Mowbray has been upbraidingly calling it, ever fince he has been with me: And in fo doing (whatever I might have thought in fuch high health as he enjoys) has convinced me, that Bottlefriends feel nothing but what moves in that little circle.

Well, well, proceed in your own way, Jack. I love my friend Belton as well as you can do; yet for the blood of me, I cannot but think, that foothing a man's weakness is encreasing it.

If it be a weakness, to be touched at great and concerning events, in which our humanity is con-

cerned, faid I, thou mayest be right.

I have feen many a man, faid the rough creature, going up Holborn-hill, that has behaved more like a

man than either of you.

Ay, but Mowbray, replied the poor man, thole wretches have not had their minds enervated by fuch infirmities of body as I have long laboured under-Thou art a shocking fellow, and ever wert---But to be able to remember nothing in these moments, but

what reproaches me, and to know that I cannot hold it long, and what may then be my lot, If---But interrupting himself, and turning to me, Give me the pity, Jack; 'tis balm to my wounded Soul; and let Mowbray sit indifferent enough to the pangs of a dying friend, to laugh at us both.

The hardened fellow then retired, with the ail of a Lovelace; only more stupid; yawning and stretching, instead of humming a tune as thou didst

at Smith's.

I affished to get the poor man into bed. He was so weak and low, that he could not bear the fatigue, and fainted away; and I verily thought was quite gone. But recovering, and his doctor coming, and advising to keep him quiet, I retired, and joined Mowbray in the garden; who took more delight to talk of the living Lovelace and his Levities, than of the dying Belton and his Repentance.

I just saw him again on Saturday night before I went to bed; which I did early; for I was surfeited with Mowbray's frothy insensibility, and could not

bear him.

.

e

10

a

nd

n-

re,

ea

ofe

ch

er.

to

ut

nat

It is such a horrid thing to think of, that a man who had lived in such strict terms of---what shall I call it? with another; the proof does not come out so, as to say, Friendship; who had pretended so much love for him; could not bear to be out of his company; would ride an hundred miles an end to enjoy it; and would fight for him, be the cause right or wrong: Yet now could be so little moved to see him in such misery of body and mind, as to be able to rebuke him, and rather ridicule than pity him, because he was more assected by what he selt, than he had seen a malesactor (hardened perhaps by liquor, and not soft-sned by previous sickness) on his going to execution.

This put me strongly in mind of what the divine Miss HARLOWE once said to me, talking of friend-ship, and what my friendship to you required of me:

6 Depend

Depend upon upon it, Mr. Belford,' faid she, ' that one day you will be convinced, that what you call

friendship, is chaff and stubble; and that nothing is worthy of that sacred name,

f THAT HAS NOT VIRTUE FOR ITS BASE.

f

It

ma

net

was

fucl

don

coul

faid

ferio

· fic

tha •

cou

not

his

· lefs

wha

'acti

into

' help

B

Sunday morning, I was called up at Six o'clock, at the poor man's earnest request, and found him in a terrible agony. O Jack! Jack! said he looking wildly as if he had seen a spectre—Come nearer me! reaching out both arms—Come nearer me!—Dear, dear Belford, save me! Then classing my arm with both his hands, and rearing up his head towards me, his eyes strangely rolling, Save me! dear Belford, save me! repeated he.

I put my other arm about him---Save you from what, my dear Belton! faid I; Save you from what! Nothing shall hurt you. What must I save you

from?

Recovering from his terror, he sunk down again, O save me from myself! said he; Save me from my own reslections. O dear Jack! what a thing it is to die; and not to have one comfortable reslection to revolve! What would I give for one year of my passed life?---only one year---and to have the same sense of

things that I now have?

I tried to comfort him as well as I could: But free-livers to free-livers are forry death-bed comforters. And he broke in upon me: O my deat Belford, faid he, I am told (and have heard you ridiculed for it) that the excellent Mifs Harlowe has wrought a conversion in you. May it be so! You are a man of sense: O may it be so! Now is your time! Now, that you are in full vigour of mind and body! --But your poor Belton, alas! your poor Belton kept his vices till they left him---And see the miserable effects in debility of mind and despondency! Were Mowbray here, and were he to laugh at me, I would

own, that this is the cause of my despair---That God's justice cannot let his mercy operate for my comfort: For, Oh! I have been very, very wicked; and have despised the offers of his Grace, till he has withdrawn it from me for ever.

I used all the arguments I could think of to give him consolation: And what I said, had such an essect upon him, as to quiet his mind for the greatest part of the day; and in a lucid hour his memory served him to repeat those lines of Dryden, grasping my

hand, and looking wiftfully upon me:

n

u

119

17

to

-9

ed

of

ee-

ers.

aid

it)

on-

of

ow,

But

his

ef-

ere

uld

VD,

Othat I less could fear to lose this Being, Which, like a snow-ball, in my coward hand, The more 'tis grasp'd, the faster melts away!

In the afternoon of Sunday, he was inquisitive after you, and your present behaviour to Miss Harlowe. I told him how you had been, and how light you made of it. Mowbray was pleased with your impenetrable hardness of heart, and said, Bob Lovelace was a good edge-tool, and steel to the back: And such coarse but hearty praises he gave you, as an abandoned man might give, and only an abandoned man could wish to deserve.

But hadft thou heard what the poor dying Belton faid on this occasion, perhaps it would have made thee

ferious an hour or two, at leaft.

'When poor Lovelace is brought,' faid he, 'to a 'fick-bed, as I am now, and his mind forebodes, 'that it is impossible he should recover (which bis could not do in his late illness: if it had, he could not have behaved so lightly in it) when he revolves his past mis-spent life; his actions of offence to help-less innocents; in Miss Harlowe's case particularly; 'what then will he think of himself, or of his past 'actions? His mind debilitated; his strength turned into weakness; unable to stir or to move without help; not one ray of hope darting in upon his be-

nighted foul; his conscience standing in the place of a thousand witnesses; his pains excruciating; weary of the poor remnant of life he drags, yet dreading that in a few short hours, his bad will be changed to worse, nay, to worst of all; and that worst of all, to last beyond time and to all Eternity; O Jack! What will he then think of the poor transitory gratifications of sense, which now engage all his attention? Tell him, dear Belford, tell him, how happy he is, if he know his own happiness; how happy, compared to his poor dying friend, that he has recovered from his illness, and has still an opportunity lent him, for which I would give a thousand worlds, had I them to give!

I approved exceedingly of his reflections, as fuited to his present circumstances; and inferred consola-

tions to him from a mind fo properly touched.

He proceeded in the like penitent strain. I have lived a very wicked life; fo have we all. We have never made a conscience of doing whatever mischief either force or fraud enabled us to do. We have laid fnares for the innocent heart; and have not scrupled by the too-ready fword to extend, as occasions offered, the wrongs we did to the persons whom we had before injured in their dearest relations. But yet I flatter myself sometimes, that I have less to answer for than either Lovelace or Mowbray; for I, by taking to myself that accursed deceiver from whom thou hast freed me (and who for years, unknown to me, was retaliating upon my own head some of the evils I had brought upon others) and retiring, and living with her as a wife, was not party to half the mischiefs, that I doubt they and Tourville, and even You, Belford, committed. As to the ungrateful Thomasine, I hope I have met with my punishment in her. But notwithstanding this, dost thou not think, that fuch an -action --- and fuch an action --- and fuch an action; · [and

n

k

E d

0

d

4

e

e

ef

id

d

f-

ve

ŧΙ

or

ıg

alt

as

ad

er

1

rd,

ot-

an

n;

ind

fand then he recapitulated several enormities, in the perpetration of which (led on by false bravery, and the heat of youth and wine) we have all been concerned] dost thou not think that these villanies (Let me call them now by their proper name) joined to the wilful and gloried-in neglect of every duty that our better fenfe and education gave us to know were required of us as men and Christians, are not enough to weigh down my Soul into despondency?---Indeed, indeed, they are! and now to hope for Mercy; and to depend upon the efficacy of that gracious attribute when that no less shining one of Justice forbids me to hope; How can I !---I, who have despised all warnings, and taken no advantage of the benefit I might have reaped from the lingering confumptive illness I have laboured under, but left all to the last stake; hoping for recovery against hope, and driving off Repentance, till that grace is denied me; for, oh! my dear Belford! I can now neither repent, nor pray, as I ought; my heart is hardened, and I can do nothing but defpair !---

More he would have faid; but, overwhelmed with grief and infirmity, he bowed his head upon his pangful bosom, endeavouring to hide from the fight of the hardened Mowbray, who just then entered the room,

those tears which he could not restrain.

Prefaced by a phlegmatic hem; Sad, very fad, truly! cried Mowbray; who fat himself down on one side of the bed, as I sat on the other: His eyes half closed, and his lips pouting cut to his turned-up nose, his chin curdled [to use one of thy descriptions]; leaving one at a loss to know, whether stupid drow-siness or intense contemplation had got most hold of him.

An excellent however uneafy lesson, Mowbray! faid I.---By my faith it is! It may one day, who knows how soon? be our own case!

I thought of thy yawning fit, as described in thy

Letter of Aug. 13. For up started Mowbray, writhing and shaking himself as in an ague-sit; his hands stretched over his head—with thy hoy! hoy! hoy! yawning. And then recovering himself, with another stretch and a shake, What's a clock? cried he; pulling out his watch—And stalking by long tip-toe strides thro' the room, down stairs he went; and meeting the maid in the passage, I heard him say-Betty, bring me a bumper of claret; thy poor master, and this damned Belford, are enough to throw a Hercules into the vapours.

Mowbray, after this, amufing himself in our friend's Library, which is, as thou knowest, chiesly classical and dramatical, found out a passage in Lee's Oedipus, which he would needs have to be extremely apt; and in he came full fraught with the notion of the courage it would give the dying man, and read it to him. 'Tis poetical and pretty. This

is it.

When the Sun sets, shadows that shew'd at noon But small, appear most long and terrible:
So when we think fate hovers o'er our heads,
Our apprehensions shoot beyond all bounds:
Owls, Ravens, Crickets, seem the watch of death;
Nature's worst vermin scare her god-like sons:
Echoes, the very leavings of a voice,
Grow babbling ghosts, and call us to our graves.
Each mole-hill thought swells to a huge Olympus;
While we, fantastic dreamers, heave and puff,
And sweat with our imagination's weight.

He expected praises for finding this out. But Belton turning his head from him, Ah, Dick! [said he] these are not the restections of a dying man!---What thou wilt one day seel, if it be what I now feel, will convince thee that the evils before thee, and with thee, are more than the effects of imagination.

I was called twice on Eunday night to him; for

the

0

P

T

fp

W

fu.

Wa

the

and

ind

hop

the poor fellow, when his reflections on his past life annoy him most, is afraid of been lest with the women; and his eyes, they tell me, hunt and roll about for me. Where's Mr. Belford?---But I shall tire him out, cries he---yet beg of him to step to me---yet don't---yet do; were once the doubting and changeful orders he gave: And they called me accordingly.

But, alas! what could Belford do for him? Belford who had been but too often the companion of his guilty hours; who wants mercy as much as he does; and is unable to promife it to himself, tho' tis

all he can bid his poor friend rely upon.

What miscreants are we! What figures shall we

make in these terrible hours!

If Miss Harlowe's glorious Example, on one hand, and the terrors of This poor man's last Scene on the other, affect me not, I must be abandoned to perdition; as I fear thou wilt be, if thou benefitest

not thyfelf from both.

el-

e]

nat

ill

ee,

for

the

Among the consolatory things I urged, when I was called up the last time on Sunday-night, I told him, That he must not absolutely give himself up to despair: That many of the apprehensions he was under, were such as the best men must have, on the dreadful uncertainty of what was to succeed to this life. Tis well observed, said I, by a poetical divine, who was an excellent Christian (a), That

Death could not a more sad retinue find, Sickness and pain before, and darkness all behind.

About eight o'c lock yesterday (Monday) morning I sound him a little calmer. He asked me, who was the author of the two lines I had repeated to him; and made me speak them over again. A sad retinue, indeed! said the poor man. And then expressing his hopelessness of life, and his terrors at the thoughts of dying;

⁽a) The Rev. Mr. Norris of Bemerton.

dying; and drawing from thence terrible conclusions with regard to his future state; There is, faid I, fuch a natural aversion to death in human nature, that you are not to imagine, that you, my dear Belton, are fingular in the fear of it, and in the apprehensions that fill the thoughtful mind upon its approach; but you ought, as much as possible, to separate those natural fears which all men must have on fo folemn an occafion from those particular ones which your justly-apprehended unfitness fills you with. Mr. Pomfret in his Prospect of Death, which I dipped into last night from a collection in your closet, which I put into my pocket, fays [and I turned to the place]

Merely to die no man of reason fears; For certainly we must, As we are born, return to dust; Tis the last point of many ling'ring years: But whither then we go, Whither we fain would know; But human under standing cannot show. This makes US tremble-

Mr. Pomfret, therefore, proceeded I, had fuch apprehensions of this dark state as you have: And the excellent divine I hinted at last night, who had very little else but human frailties to reproach himself with, and whose Miscellanies fell into my hands among my Uncle's books in my attendance upon him in his last hours, fays,

It must be done, my Soul: But 'tis a strange, A dismal and mysterious change, When thou shalt leave this tenement of clay, And to an unknown --- Somewhere --- wing away; When Time shall be Eternity, and thou Shalt be --- thou knowest not what --- and live --thou know'st not how! Amazing State! no wonder that we dread To think of death, or view the dead; Thou'rt

to

go

CO

mo

the

fo i

the thee

to k

for 1

Wi

likeff

the li

from

up, a

Vo

Thou'rt all wrapt up in clouds, as if to thee Our very knowlege bad antipathy.

Then follows, what I repeated,

Death could not a more sad Retinue find, Sickness and Pain before, and Darkness, all behind.

Alass! my dear Belford [inferred the unhappy deep-thinker] what poor creatures does this convince me we mortals are at best!—But what then must be the case of such a profligate as I, who by a past wicked like have added greater force to these natural terrors? If death be so repugnant a thing to human nature, that good men will be startled at it, what must it be to one who has lived a life of sense and appetite; nor ever restected upon the end which I now am within view of?

What could I say to an inference so fairly drawn? Mercy, Mercy, unbounded Mercy, was still my plea, tho' his repeated opposition of Justice to it, in a manner silenced that plea: And what would I have given to have had rise to my mind, one good, one eminently good action to have remembred him of, in order to combat his fears with it?

I believe, Lovelace, I shall tire thee, and that more with the subject of my Letter, than even with the length of it. But, really, I think thy spirits are so offensively up since thy recovery, that I ought, as the melancholy subjects offer, to endeavour to reduce thee to the standard of humanity, by expatiating upon them. And then thou canst not but be curious to know every thing that concerns the poor man, for whom thou hast always expressed a great regard. I will therefore proceed as I have begun. If thou likest not to read it now, lay it by, if thou wilt, till the like circumstances befal thee, till like reslections from those circumstances seize thee; and then take it up, and compare the two cases together.

* ₁*

irt

AT his earnest request, I fat up with him last night; and, poor man! it is impossible to tell thee, how easy and safe he thought himself in my company, for the first part of the night: A drowning man will catch at a straw, the Proverb well favs: And a straw was I, with respect to any real help I could give him. He often awaked in terrors; and once calling out for me, Dear Belford, faid he, Where are you?-Oh? There you are!-Give me your friendly hand!-Then grasping it, and putting his clammy, half-cold lips to it -- How kind! I fear every-thing when you are absent. But the presence of a friend, a sympathizing friend---Oh! how comfortable!

But about Four in the morning, he frighted me much: He waked with three terrible groans; and endeavoured to speak, but could not presently--- and when he did, --- Jack, Jack, five or fix times repeated he as quick as thought, now, now, now, fave me, fave me, fave me--- I am going---going indeed!

I threw my arms about him, and raifed him upon his pillow, as he was finking (as if to hide himself) in the bed-cloaths --- And staring wildly, Where am I? faid he, a little recovering. Did you not fee him? turning his head this way and that; horror in his countenance; Did you not fee him?

See whom, fee what, my dear Belton!

O lay me upon the bed again, cried he!---Let me not die upon the floor !--- Lay me down gently; and stand by me !--- Leave me not !--- All, all will foon be over!

You are already, my dear Belton, upon the bed. You have not been upon the floor. This is a strong delirium; you are faint for want of refreshment [for he had refused several times to take any thing]: Let me persuade you to take some of this cordial julap. 1 will leave you, if you will not oblige me.

He

d

in

ing

He

Ib

I

ing

vent

to-m I

had

creat

to pi from

which

and I

He then readily took it; but faid he could have fworn that Tom Metcalfe had been in the room, and had drawn him out of bed by the throat, upbraiding him with the injuries he had first done his Sister, and then Him, in the duel to which he owed that Fever which cost him his life.

Thou knowest the Story, Lovelace, too well, to need my repeating it: But, mercy on us, if in these terrible moments all the evils we do, rise to our affrighted imaginations!—If so, what shocking scenes have I, but still what more shocking ones hast thou, to go through, if, as the noble poet says,

If, any sense at that sad time remains!

The doctor ordered him an opiate, this morning early, which operated so well, that he dosed and slept several hours more quietly than he had done for the two past days and nights, tho' he had sleeping draughts given him before. But it is more and more evident every hour, that nature is almost worn out in him.

Mowbray, quite tired with this house of mourning, intends to set out in the morning to find you. He was not a little rejoiced to hear you were in town; I believe to have a pretence to leave us.

in

1?

nis

me

and

be

ed.

ng

for

Let

I

He

He has just taken leave of his poor friend, intending to go away early: An everlasting leave, I may venture to say; for I think he will hardly live till to-morrow night.

I believe the poor man would not have been forry had he left him when I arrived; for 'tis a shocking creature, and enjoys too strong health to know how to pity the sick. Then (to borrow an observation from thee) he has, by Nature, strong Bodily organs, which those of his Soul are not likely to whet out; and he, as well as the wicked friend he is going to,

I o

may last a great while from the strength of their constitutions, tho' fo greatly different in their talents; if neither the Sword nor the Halter interpose.

I must repeat, That I cannot but be very uneasy for the poor Lady whom you fo cruelly perfecute; and that I do not think you have kept your honour with me. I was apprehensive, indeed, that you would attempt to fce her, as foon as you got well enough to come up; and I told her as much, making use of it as an argument to prepare her for your visit, and to induce her to fland it. But she could not, it is plain, bear the shock of it: And indeed she told me that she would not see you, tho' but for one halfhour, for the world.

Could she have prevailed upon herself, I know that the fight of her would have been as affecting to you, as your vifit could have been to her; when you had feen to what a lovely skeleton (for she is really lovely still, nor can she, with such a form and features, be otherwise) you have, in a few weeks, reduced one of the most charming women in the world; and that in the full bloom of her youth and beauty.

Mowbray undertakes to carry This, that he may be more welcome to you, he fays. Were it to be fent unsealed, the characters we write in would be Hebrew to the dunce. I defire you to return it; and I'll give you a copy of it upon demand; for I intend to keep it by me, as a guard against the infection of your company, which might otherwise, perhaps, some time hence, be apt to weaken the impressions I always defire to have of the awful Scene before me. God convert us both!

ETTERLI.

Mr. BELFORD, To ROBERT LOVELACE, E/q;

Wednesday Morn. 11 o'clock. BELIEVE no man has two fuch fervants as I have. Because I treat them with kindness, and

do

in

011 tec

the

ing

hin

tien

am telli

low Sir ! do not lord it over my inferiors, and damn and curfe them by looks and words like Mowbray; or beat their teeth out like Lovelace; but cry, Pr'ythee, Harry, do this, and, Pr'ythee, Jonathan, do that; the fellows pursue their own devices, and regard no-

thing I fay, but what falls in with thefe.

Here, this vile Harry, who might have brought your Letter of yesterday in good time, came not in with it till past Eleven last night (drunk, I suppose); and concluding that I was in bed, as he pretends (because he was told I sat up the preceding night) brought it not to me; and having overslept himself, just as I had sealed up my Letter, in comes the villain with the forgotten one, shaking his ears, and looking as if he himself did not believe the excuses he was going to make. I questioned him about it, and heard his pitiful pleas; and tho' I never think it becomes a gentleman to treat people insolently who by their stations are humbled beneath his seet, yet could I not sorbear to Lovelace and Mowbray him most cordially.

And this detaining Mowbray (who was ready to fet out to you before) while I write a few lines upon it, the fierce fellow, who is impatient to exchange the company of a dying Belton, for that of a too lively Lovelace, affixed a fupplement of curses upon the stareing fellow, that was larger than my book—Nor did I offer to take off the bear from such a Mongrel, since, on this occasion, he deserved not of me the protection which every master owes to a good servant.

I

ie,

n-

ne

s I

and

He has not done curfing him yet; for stalking about the Court-yard with his boots on (the poor fellow dressing his horse, and unable to get from him) he is at him without mercy; and I will heighten his impatience (since being just under the window where I am writing, he will not let me attend to my pen) by telling you, how he fills my ears as well as the fellow's, with his—Hay, Sir! And G—d damn ye, Sir! And were you my servant, ye dog ye! And

must I stay here till the mid-day Sun scorches me to a parchment, for such a mangey dog's drunken neglect?—Ye lye, Sirrah!—Ye lye, I tell you—[I hear the fellow's voice in an humble excusatory tone, tho not articulately] Ye lye, ye dog!—I'd a good mind to thrust my whip down your drunken throat: Damn me, if I would not slay the skin from the back of such a rascal, if thou wert mine, and have dog's-skin gloves made of it, for thy brother scoundrels to wear in remembrance of thy abuses of such a master.

The poor horse suffers for this, I doubt not; for, What now; and, Stand still, and be damn'd to ye, cries the sellow, with a kick, I suppose, which he better deserves himself; for these variets, where they can, are Mowbrays and Lovelaces to man or beast; and not daring to answer him, is slaying the poor horse.

I hear the fellow is just escaped, the horse (better curried than ordinary, I suppose, in half the usual time) by his clanking shoes, and Mowbray's silence, letting me know, that I may now write on: And so, I will tell thee, that in the first place (little as I, as well as you, regard dreams) I would have thee lay thine to heart; for I could give thee such an interpretation of it, as would shock thee, perhaps: And if thou askest me for it, I will.

Mowbray calls to me from the Court-yard, That 'tis a cursed hot day, and he shall be fried by riding in the noon of it: And that poor Belton longs to see me. So I will only add my earnest desire, that you will give over all thoughts of seeing the Lady, if, when this comes to your hand, you have not seen her: And, that it would be kind, if you'd come, and, for the last time you will ever see your poor friend, share my concern for him; and, in him, see what, in a little time, will be your sate and mine, and That of Mowbray, Tourville, and the rest of us—For what are Ten, Fisteen, Twenty, or Thirty years, to look back to; in the longest of which periods forward we shall all perhaps be mingled with the dust from which we sprung!

W

W

10

LETTER LII.

Mr. LOVELACE, To JOHN BELFORD, Esq; Wednesday Morn. Aug. 22.

A LL alive, dear Jack, and in ecstasy!---Likely to be once more a happy man! For I have received a Letter from my beloved Miss Harlowe; in confequence, I suppose, of that which I mentioned in my last to be left for her from her Sister. And I am setting out for Berks directly, to shew the contents to my Lord M. and to receive the congratulations of all

my kindred upon it.

I went, last night, as I intended, to Smith's: But the dear creature was not returned at near Ten o'clock. And, lighting upon Tourville, I took him home with me, and made him sing me out of my Megrims. I went to bed tolerably easy at Two; had bright and pleasant dreams (not such a frightful one as that I gave thee an account of); and at Eight this morning, as I was dressing, to be in readiness against the return of my fellow, whom I had sent to inquire after the Lady, I had this Letter brought me by a chairman.

To ROBERT LOVELACE, Efq;

SIR, Tuesday Night, 11 o'clock (Aug. 2.)

I HAVE good news to tell you. I am fetting out with all diligence for my Father's House, I am bid to hope that he will receive his poor penitent with a goodness peculiar to himself; for I am overjoyed with the assurance of a thorough Reconciliation, throthe interposition of a dear blessed friend, whom I always loved and honoured. I am so taken up with my preparation for this joyful and long-wished-for journey, that I cannot spare one moment for any other business, having several matters of the last importance to settle first. So, pray, Sir, don't disturb I.4.

of

fo

no

he

dif

or interrupt me--I befeech you don't. You may possibly in time see me at my Father's; at least, if it be not your own fault.

I will write a Letter, which shall be sent you when I am got thither and received: Till when, I am, &c.

CLARISSA HARLOWE.

I dispatched instantly a Letter to the dear creature, affuring her, with the most thankful joy, 'That I

would directly fet out for Berks, and wait the iffue of the happy Reconciliation, and the charming hopes

' she had filled me with. I poured out upon her a

' thousand bleffings. I declared that it should be the

fludy of my whole life to merit fuch transcendent goodness: And that there was nothing which her

Father or Friends should require at my hands, that I

would not for her fake comply with, in order to pro-· mote and complete fo defirable a Reconciliation.'

I hurried it away without taking a copy of it; and I have ordered the chariot-and-fix to be got ready; and hey for M. Hall! Let me but know how Belton does. I hope a Letter from thee is on the road. And if the poor fellow can spare thee, make haste, I command thee, to attend this truly divine Lady. Thou may not else see her of months perhaps; at least, not while she is Miss HARLOWE. And oblige me, if possible, with one Letter before she sets out, confirming to me and accounting for this generous change.

But what accounting for it is necessary? The dear creature cannot receive consolation herself but the must communicate it to others. How noble! She would not fee me in her adversity; but no sooner does the Sun of prosperity begin to shine upon her,

than she forgives me.

I know to whose mediation all this is owing. It is to Col. Morden's. She always, as she fays, loved and honoured him! And he loved her above all his relations.

I shall now be convinced that there is something in dreams.

dreams. The opening cloud is the Reconciliation in view. The bright Form, lifting up my Charmer through it to a firmament stuck round with golden Cherubims and Seraphims, indicates the charming little Boys and Girls, that will be the fruits of this happy Reconciliation. The welcomes, thrice repeated, are those of her family, now no more to be deemed implacable. Yet are they a family too, that

my Soul cannot mingle with.

But then what is my tumbling over and over thro' the floor in a frightful hole, descending as she ascends? Ho! only This! it alludes to my disrelish to matrimony: Which is a bottomless pit, a gulph, and I know not what. And I suppose, had I not awoke in such a plaguy fright, I had been soused into some river at the bottom of the hole, and then been carried (mundified or purified from my past iniquities) by the same bright Form, (waiting for me upon the mostly banks) to my beloved Girl; and we should have gone on cherubiming of it and carolling to the end of the chapter.

But what are the black sweeping mantles and robes of Lord M. thrown over my face? and what are those of the Ladies? Oh, Jack! I have these too: They indicate nothing in the world but that my Lord will be so good as to die, and leave me all he has. So, rest to thy good-natured Soul, honest Lord M.

Lady Sarah Sadleir and Lady Betty Lawrance, will

also die and leave me swindging legacies.

Miss Charlotte and her Sister---what will become of them ?---O! they will be in mourning of course

for their Uncle and Aunts -- that's right!

As to Morden's flathing through the window, and crying, Die, Lovelace, and be damned, if thou wilt not repair my Cousin's wrongs! That is only, that he would have sent me a challenge, had I not been disposed to do the Lady justice.

All I dislike is This part of the dream: For, even

in a dream, I would not be thought to be threatened into any measure, though I liked it ever so well.

And fo much for my prophetic dream.

Dear charming creature! What a meeting will there be between her and her Father and Mother and Uncles! What transports, what pleasure, will this happy long-wished-for Reconciliation give her dutiful heart! And indeed now methinks I am glad she is so dutiful to them; for her duty to her parents is a conviction to me that she will be as dutiful to her husband: Since duty upon principle is an uniform thing.

Why pr'ythee, now, Jack, I have not been for much to blame as thou thinkest: For had it not been for me, who have led her into fo much diffres, she could neither have received nor given the joy that will now overwhelm them all. So here rifes great and

durable good out of temporary evil!

I knew they loved her (the pride and glory of their

family) too well to hold out long!

I wish I could have seen Arabella's Letter. She has always been fo much eclipfed by her Sifter, that, I dare fay, the has fignified this Reconciliation to her with intermingled phlegm and wormwood; and her invitation most certainly runs all in the rock-water style.

I shall long to see the promised Letter too when the is got to her Father's, which I hope will give an

account of the reception she will meet with.

There is a Solemnity, however I think, in the style of her Letter, which pleases and affects me at the same time. But as it is evident she loves me still, and hopes foon to fee me at her Father's, she could not help being a little folemn, and half-ashamed (dear blushing pretty rogue!) to own her Love, after my usage of her.

And then her subscription: Till when, I am, CLA. RISSA HARLOWE: As much as to fay, After that, I shall be, if not your own fault, CLARISSA LOVELACE!

O my best Love! My ever-generous and adorable creature! how much does this thy forgiving goodness

exalt

ur

mi

fic

exalt us both!—Me, for the occasion given thee!
Thee for turning it so gloriously to thy advantage,
and to the honour of both!

And if, my beloved creature, you will but connive at the imperfections of your adorer, and not play the Wife upon me: If, while the charms of Novelty have their force with me, I should happen to be drawn aside by the love of intrigue, and of plots that my Soul delights to form and pursue; and if thou wilt not be open-eyed to the sollies of my youth [a transitory state!] every excursion shall serve but the more to endear thee to me, till in time, and in a very little time too, I shall get above sense; and then charmed by thy soul-attracting converse; and brought to despise my former courses! what I now, at distance, consider as a painful duty, will be my joyful choice, and all my delight will centre in thee!

MOWBRAY is just arrived with thy Letters. I therefore close my agreeable subject, to attend to one,

which I doubt will be very shocking.

I have engaged the rough varlet to bear me company in the morning to Berks; where I shall file off

the rust he hath contracted in his attendance upon the poor fellow.

He tells me, that between the dying Belton, and the preaching Belford, he shan't be his own man these three days: And says, that thou addest to the unhappy sellow's weakness, instead of giving him courage to help him to bear his destiny.

I am forry he takes the unavoidable lot so heavily. But he has been long ill; and sickness enervates the mind, as well as the body; as he himself very signi-

ficantly observed to thee.

S . . I !

fe

fo

10

ha

ha

mo

2 1

tho

LETTER LIII.

Mr. Lovelace, To John Belford, Esq; Wedn. Evening.

Have been reading thy shocking Letter—Poor Belton! what a multitude of lively hours have we passed together! He was a fearless chearful fellow: Who'd have thought that all should end in such dejected whimpering and terror?

But why didst thou not comfort the poor man about the Rencounter between him and that poltroon Metcals? He acted in that affair like a man of true honour, and as I should have acted in the same circumstances. Tell him I say so; and that what happen-

ed, he could neither help nor foresee.

Some people are as fensible of a fcratch from a Pin's point, as others from the push of a Sword: And who can fay any-thing for the fenfibility of fuch fellows? Metcalf would refent for his Sifter, when his Sifter resented not for herself. Had she demanded her Brother's protection and refentment, that would have been another man's matter, to speak in Lord M's phrase: but she herself thought her brother a coxcomb to bufy himself undefired in her affairs, and wished for nothing but to be provided for decently and privately in her Lying-in; and was willing to take the chance of Maintenon-ing his conscience in her favour (a), and getting him to marry when the little stranger came; for she knew what an easy, good natured fellow he was. And indeed if the bad prevailed upon him, it might have been happy for both; as then he would not have fallen in with his cursed Thomasine. But truly this officious Brother

⁽a) Madam Maintenon was reported to have prevailed upon Lewis XIV. of France, in his old age (funk, as he was by ill fuccess in the sield) to marry her, by way of compounding with his conscience for the freedoms of his past life, to which she attributed his public loss.

of hers must interpose. This made a trisling affair important: and what was the issue? Metcalf challenged; Belton met him; disarmed him; gave him his life: But the fellow, more sensible in his Skin than in his Head, having received a scratch, was srighted; it gave him first a puke, then a sever, and then he died. That was all. And how could Belton help that?—But sickness, a long tedious sickness, will make a bug-bear of any-thing to a languishing heart, I see that. And so far was Mowbray à-propos in the verses from Nat. Lee which thou hast transcribed.

Merely to die, no man of reason fears; is a mistake, say thou, or say thy author, what ye will. And thy solemn parading about the natural repugnance be-

tween life and death, is a proof that it is.

Let me tell thee, Jack, that so much am I pleased with this world, in the main; tho', in some points too, the world (to make a person of it) has been a rascal to me; so delighted am I with the joys of youth; with my worldly prospects as to fortune; and now, newly, with the charming hopes given me by my dear, thrice dear, and for ever dear CLARISSA! that were I even sure that nothing bad would come hereafter, I should be very loth (very much afraid, if thou wilt have it so) to lay down my life and them together; and yet, upon a Call of Honour, no man sears death less than myself.

But I have not either inclination or leifure to weigh thy leaden arguments, except in the pig, or, as thou

wouldst fay, in the lump.

If I return thy Letters, let me have them again some time hence, that is to say, when I am married, or when poor Belton is half-forgotten; or when time has inrolled the honest fellow among those whom we have so long lost, that we may remember them with more pleasure than pain; and then I may give them a serious perusal, and enter with thee as deeply as thou wilt into the subject.

When

When I am married, faid I?—What a found has

I must wait with patience for a fight of this charming creature, till she is at her Father's. And yet, as the but blossoming Beauty, as thou tellest me, is reduced to a shadow, I should have been exceedingly delighted to see her now, and every day till the happy one; that I might have the pleasure of heholding how sweetly, hour by hour, she will rise to her pristine glories, by means of that state of ease and contentment, which will take place of the stormy past upon her Reconciliation with her friends, and our happy Nuptials.

LETTER LIV.

Mr. LOVELACE, To JOHN BELFORD, Efq.

WELL, but now my heart is a little at ease, I will condescend to take brief notice of some

other passages in thy Letters.

I find, I am to thank thee, that the dear creature has avoided my visit. Things are now in so good a train that I must forgive thee: else thou shoulds have heard more of this new instance of disloyalty to thy General.

Thou art continually giving thyself high praise, by way of opposition, as I may say, to others; gently and artfully blaming thyself, for qualities, thou wouldst at the same time have to be thought, and

n

fl

01

CC

te

which generally are thought, praife-worthy.

Thus, in the airs thou assumest about thy servants, thou wouldst pass for a mighty humane mortal; and that at the expence of Mowbray and me, whom thou representest as Kings and Emperors to our menials. Yet art thou always unhappy in thy attempts of this kind, and never canst make us, who know thee, believe That to be a virtue in thee, which is but the effect of constitutional phlegm and absurdity. Knowest

Knowest thou not, that some men have a native dignity in their manner, that makes them more regarded by a Look, than either thou canst be in thy low style, or Mowbray in his high?

I am fit to be a Prince, I can tell thee; for I reward well, and I punish seasonably and properly;

and I am generally as well ferved as any man.

The art of governing these underbred variets liesmore in the dignity of Looks than in words; and thou art a forry sellow, to think humanity consists in acting by thy servants, as men must act who are not able to pay them their wages; or had made them masters of secrets, which is divulged, would lay them

at the mercy of fuch wretches...

Now to me, who never did any-thing I was ashamed to own, and who have more ingenuousness than ever man had; who can call a villainy by its right name, tho' practised by myself, and (by my own readiness to reproach myself) anticipate all reproach from others; who am not such a hypocrite, as to wish the world to think me other or better than I am--It is my part, to look a servant into his duty, if I can: Nor will I keep one, who knows not how to take me by a nod, or a wink; and who, when I smile, shall not be all transport; when I frown, all terror.

If, indeed, I am out of the way a little, I always take care to reward the varlets for patiently bearing my displeasure. But this I hardly ever am but when a fellow is egregiously stupid in any plain point of duty, or will be wifer than his master; and when he shall tell me, that he thought acting contrary to my

orders was the way to ferve me best.

One time or other I will enter the lists with thee upon thy conduct and mine to servants: And I will convince thee, that what thou wouldest have pass for humanity, if it be indiscriminately practised to all tempers, will perpetually subject thee to the evils thou complainest of; and justly too; and that he only

is fit to be a master of servants, who can command their attention as much by a nod, as if he were to pr'ythee a fellow to do his duty, on one hand, or to talk of flaying, and horse-whipping, like Mowbray, on the other: For the servant who being used to expect the creeping style, will always be master of his master, and he who deserves to be treated as the other, is not sit to be any man's servant; nor would

I keep fuch a fellow to rub my horse's heels.

I shall be the readier to enter the lists with thee upon this argument, because I have prefumption enough to think, that we have not in any of our dramatic poets, that I can at present call to mind, one character of a fervant of either Sex, that is justly hit off. So absurdly wise some, and so sottishly foolish others; and both sometimes in the same person. Fails drawn from the lees or dregs of the people to fet off the characters of their masters and mistresses; nav. fometimes, which is still more absurd, introduced with more wit than the poet has to bestow upon their principals .-- Mere flints and fleels to ftrike fire with --- Or, to vary the metaphor, to serve for whetstones to wit, which otherwise could not be made apparent; ---Or for engines to be made use of like the machinery of the antient poets (or the still more unnatural Soliloquy) to help on a forry plot, or to bring about a necessary eclaircissement, to save the poet the trouble of thinking deeply for a better way to wind up his bottoms.

ah

tro

fin

to

fav

gef

fair fur

flio

attr

the

Of this I am persuaded (whatever my practice be to my own Servants) that thou wilt be benefited by my theory, when we come to controvert the point. For then I shall convince thee, that the dramatic as well as natural characteristics of a good servant, ought to be sidelity, common sense, chearful obedience, and silent respect: That wit in his station, except to his companions, would be sauciness: That he should never presume to give his advice: That if he ventured

tured to expostulate upon any unreasonable command, or such a one as appeared to him to be so, he should do it with humility and respect, and take a proper season for it. But such lessons do most of the dramatic performances I have seen give, where servants are introduced as characters essential to the play, or to act very significant or long parts in it (which, of itself, I think a fault); such lessons, I say, do they give to the Footmen's gallery, that I have not wondered we have so sew modest or good men-servants among those who often attend their masters or mistresses to Plays. Then how miserably evident must that Poet's conscious want of genius be, who can stoop to raise or give force to a clap by the indiscriminate roar of the party-coloured gallery!

But this subject I will suspend to a better opportunity; that is to say, to the happy one, when my Nuptials with my Clarissa will oblige me to encrease the number of my servants, and of consequence to enter

more nicely into their qualifications.

ALTHOUGH I have the highest opinion that man can have of the generosity of my dear Miss Harlowe, yet I cannot for the heart of me account for this agreeable change in her temper, but one way. Faith and troth, Belford, I verily believe, laying all circumstances together, that the dear creature unexpectedly finds herself in the way I have so ardently wished her to be in; and that this makes her, at last, incline to favour me, that she may set the better face upon her gestation, when at her Father's.

If this be the case, all her falling away, and her sainting fits, are charmingly accounted for. Nor is it surprising, that such a sweet novice in these matters should not, for some time, have known to what to attribute her frequent indispositions. If this should be the case, how shall I laugh at thee! and (when I am sure of her) at the dear novice herself, that all her

grievous

grievous distresses shall end in a Man-child; which I shall love better than all the Cherubims and Seraphims that may come after; though there were to be as many of them as I beheld in my dream; in which a vast expanse of Firmament was stuck as full of them, as it could hold!

I shall be afraid to open thy next, lest it bring me the account of poor Belton's death. Yet, as there are no hopes of his recovery—But what should I say, unless the poor man were better sitted—But thy heavy fermon shall not affect me too much neither.

I inclose thy papers: And do thou transcribe them for me, or return them; for there are some things in them, which, at a proper season, a mortal man should not avoid attending to: And thou seemest to have entered deeply into the shocking subject—But here I will end, lest I grow too serious.

Thy servant called here about an hour ago, to know if I had any commands: I therefore hope that thou wilt have this early in the morning. And if thou canst let me hear from thee, do. I'll stretch an hour or two in expectation of it. Yet I must be at Lord M's to-morrow night, if possible, though ever so late.

Thy fellow tells me the poor man is much as he

was when Mowbray left him.

Wouldst thou think that this varlet Mowbray is forry that I am so near being happy with Miss Harlowe? And, 'egad, Jack, I know not what to say to it, now the fruit seems to be within my reach—But let what will come, I'll stand to't: For I find I can't live without her.

me

of

to

for

in :

hel

you who fure I no a we ficia

LETTER LV.

Mr. BELFORD, To ROBERT LOVELACE, Efq.

Wednesday, Three o'clock.

I WILL proceed where I left off in my last.

As soon as I had seen Mowbray mounted, I went to attend upon poor Belton; whom I found indreadful agonies, in which he awoke, as he generally does.

The doctor came in presently after; and I was con-

cerned at the scene that passed between them.

It opened with the dying man's asking him, with melancholy earnestness, If nothing, if nothing at all, could be done for him?

The doctor shook his head, and told him, he

doubted, not.

I cannot die, said the poor man; I cannot think of dying. I am very desirous of living a little longer, if I could but be free from these horrible pains in my stomach and head. Can you give me nothing to make me pass one week, but one week, in tolerable ease, that I may die like a man?--- If I must die!

But, doctor, I am yet a young man; in the prime of my years--Youth is a good subject for a physician to work upon: Can you do nothing, nothing at all

for me, doctor?

Alas! Sir, replied his physician, you have been long in a bad way. I fear, I fear, nothing in physic can

help you.

S

y

He was then out of all patience. What, then, is your Art, Sir!---I have been a passive machine for a whole twelvemonth, to be wrought upon at the pleasure of you people of the faculty. I verily believe, had I not taken such doses of nasty stuff, I had been now a well man---But who the plague would regard Physicians, whose Art is to cheat us with hopes while they help.

g

m

tre

he

fo

tha

kne

help to destroy us? And who, not one of you, know

any-thing but by guess!

Sir, continued he fiercely (and with more strength of voice, and coherence, than he had shewn for several hours before) if you give me over, I give you over. -The only honest and certain part of the art of Healing is Surgery. A good Surgeon is worth a thousand of you. I have been in Surgeons hands often, and have always found reason to depend upon their skill: But your Art, Sir, what is it?---but to dawb, dawb, dawb; load, load; plafter, plafter, plafter; till ye utterly destroy the appetite first, and the constitution afterwards, which you are called in to help. I had a companion once---My dear Belford, thou knewest honest Blomer---as pretty a physician he would have made, as any in England, had he kept himself from excess in wine and women; and he always used to say, there was nothing at all but pick-pocket parade in the Physicians Art; and that the best guesser was the best physician. And I used to believe him too: And yet, fond of life, and fearful of death, what do we do, when we are taken ill, but call ye in? And what do ye do, when called in, but nurse our distempers, till from pygmies you make giants of them?---And then ye come creeping with folemn faces, when ye are ashamed to prescribe, or when the stomach won't bear its natural food, by reason of your poisonous potions, Alas! I am afraid physic can do no more for him!--Nor need it, when it has brought to the brink of the grave, the poor wretch who placed all his reliance in your curfed flops, and the flattering hopes you give him.

The doctor was out of countenance; but faid, If we could make mortal men immortal, and would not,

all this might be just.

I blamed the poor man; yet excused him to the physician. To die, dear doctor, when, like my poor friend, we are so desirous of life, is a melancholy thing. We are apt to hope too much, not considering that the Seeds of Death are sown in us when we begin to live, and grow up, till, like rampant Weeds, they chook the tender flower of life; which declines in us, as those Weeds flourish. We ought therefore to begin early to study what our constitutions will bear, in order to root out, by Temperance, the Weeds which the soil is most apt to produce; or, at least, to keep them down as they rise; and not, when the flower or plant is withered at the root, and the weed in its full vigour, expect, that the medical art will restore the one, or destroy the other; when that other, as I hinted, has been rooting itself in the habit from the time of our birth.

This speech, Bob, thou wilt call a Prettiness; but the Allegory is just; and thou hast not quite cured

me of the Metaphorical.

Very true, faid the doctor; you have brought a good metaphor to illustrate the thing. I am forry I can do nothing for the gentleman; and can only recommend patience, and a better frame of mind.

Well, Sir, faid the poor angry man, vexed at the doctor, but more at death; you will perhaps recommend the next in succession to the physician, when be can do no more; and, I suppose, will send your Brother to pray by me for those virtues which you wish me.

It feems the physician's Brother is a Clergyman in

the neighbourhood.

I was greatly concerned to fee the gentleman thus treated; and fo I told poor Belton when he was gone: But he continued impatient, and would not be denied, he faid, the liberty of talking to a man, who had taken so many guineas of him for doing nothing, or worse than nothing, and never declined one, though he knew all the time he could do him no good.

It feems, the gentleman, though rich, is noted for being greedy after Fees: and poor Belton went on,

raving

raving at the extravagant Fees of English Physicians, compared with those of the most eminent foreign ones. But, poor man! he, like the Turks, who judge of a General by his success (out of patience to think he must die) would have worshipped the doctor, and not grudged three times the sum, could he have

given him hopes of recovery.

But nevertheless, I must needs say, that gentlemen of the faculty should be more moderate in their Fees, or take more pains to deserve them; for, generally, they only come into a room, feel the fick man's pulse, ask the nurse a few questions, inspect the patient's tongue, and perhaps his water; then fit down, look plaguy wife; and write. The golden fee finds the ready hand, and they hurry away, as if the fick man's room were infectious. So to the next they troll, and to the next, if men of great practice; valuing themfelves upon the number of vifits they made in a morning, and the little time they make them in. They go to dinner, and unload their pockets; and fally out again to refill them. And thus, in a little time, they raise vast estates; for, as Ratcliffe said, when first told of a great loss which befel him, It was only going up and down a hundred pair of stairs to fetch it up.

Mrs. Sambre (Belton's Sister) had several times proposed to him a Minister to pray by him; but the poor man could not, he said, bear the thoughts of one; for that he should certainly die in an hour or two after: And he was willing to hope still, against all probability, that he might recover; and was often asking his Sister, if she had not seen people as bad as he was, who, almost to a miracle, when every-body

gave them over, had got up again?

She, shaking her head, told him, she had: But, once saying, that their disorders were of an acute kind, and such as had a Criss in them, he called her Small-hopes, and Job's Comforter; and bid her say nothing, if she could not say more to the purpose, and

dy

and what was fitter for a fick man to hear. And yet, poor fellow! he has no hopes himself, as is plain by his desponding terrors; one of which he fell into, and a very dreadful one, soon after the doctor went.

Wednesday, 90'clock at Night.

THE poor man has been in convulsions, terrible convulsions! for an hour past. O Lord! Lovelace, death is a shocking thing! By my faith it is!—I wish thou wert present on this occasion. It is not merely the concern a man has for his friend; but, as death is the common lot, we see, in his agonies, how it will be one day with ourselves. I am all over as if cold water were poured down my back, or if I had a strong ague-fit upon me. I was obliged to come away. And I write, hardly knowing what---I wish thou wert here.

Though I left him, because I could stay no longer, I can't be easy by myself, but must go to him again.

Eleven o'clock.

Poor Belton!---Drawing on apace! Yet was he fensible when I went in---too sensible, poor man! He has something upon his mind to reveal, he tells me, that is the worst action of his life; worse than ever you or I knew of him, he says. It must be then very bad!

He ordered every-body out; but was feized with another convulsion-fit, before he could reveal it: And in it he lies struggling between life and death.

But I'll go in again.

r

11

.

e

y

t,

te

er

y

One o'clock in the Morning.

ALL now must soon be over with him: Poor! poor fellow! he has given me some hints of what he wanted to say; but all incoherent, interrupted by dying hiccoughs and convulsions.

Bad

Bad enough it must be, heaven knows, by what I can gather!---Alas! Lovelace, I fear, I fear, he

came too foon into his Uncle's Estate.

If a man were to live always; he might have some temptation to do base things, in order to procure to himself, as it would then be, everlasting ease, plenty, or affluence: But for the sake of ten, twenty, thirty years of poor life, to be a villain---Can that be worth while? with a conscience stinging him all the time too! and when he comes to wind up all, such agonizing resections upon his past guilt! All then appearing as nothing! What he most valued, most disgustful! and not one thing to think of, as the poor sellow says twenty and twenty times over, but what is attended with anguish and reproach!---

To hear the poor man wish he had never been born! To hear him pray to be nothing after death! Good

God! how shocking!

By his incoherent hints, I am afraid 'tis very bad with him. No pardon, no mercy, he repeats, can lie for him!

I hope I shall make a proper use of this lesson. Laugh at me, if thou wilt; but never, never more, will I take the liberties I have taken; but whenever I am tempted, will think of Belton's dying agonies, and what my own may be.

Thursday, three in the morning.

fi

an

...

lif

pe

tho

wer of

had

Suic

ance

is a

1g01

men

one

mind

hft g

tear

V

I

HE is now at the last gasp---Rattles in the throat-Has a new convulsion every minute almost! What horror is he in! His eyes look like breath-stained glass! They roll ghastly no more; are quite set: His face distorted, and drawn out, by his sinking jaws, and erected staring eye-brows, with his lengthened surrowed forehead, to double its usual length, as it seems. It is not, it cannot be, the sace of Belton, thy Belton, and my Belton, whom we have beheld with so much delight over the social bottle, comparing

comparing notes, that one day may be brought against us, and make us groan, as they very lately did him—that is to say, while he had strength to groan; for now his voice is not to be heard; all inward, lost; not so much as speaking by his eyes: Yet, strange! how can it be? the bed rocking under him like a cradle.

Four o' clock.

Alas! he's gone! That groan, that dreadful groan, Was the last farewel of the parting mind!
The struggling soul has bid a long adieu
To its late mansson—Fled! ah! whither fled?

Now is all indeed over !---Poor, poor Belton! By this time thou knowest if thy crimes were above the size of God's mercies! Now are every one's cares and attendance at an end! Now do we, thy friends, ---Poor Belton!---know the worst of thee, as to this life! Thou art released from insufferable tortures both of body and mind! May those tortures, and thy repentance, expiate for thy offences, and mayst thou

be happy to all eternity!

d

n.

e,

es,

...

hat

ned

et:

ing

th-

th,

of

ave

le,

ng

We are told, that God defireth not the death, the spiritual death, of a finner: And 'tis certain, that thou didst deeply repent! I hope therefore, as thou wert not cut off in the midst of thy sins by the sword of injured friendship, which more than once thou hadst braved [the dreadfullest of all deaths, next to suicide, because it gives no opportunity for repentance] that this is a merciful earnest that thy penitence is accepted; and that thy long illness, and dreadful agonies in the last stages of it, were thy only punishment.

I wish indeed, I heartily wish, we could have seen one ray of comfort darting in upon his benighted mind, before he departed. But all, alas! to the very last gasp, was horror and confusion. And my only sear arises from this, That, till within the sour last Vol. VII.

days of his life, he could not be brought to think he should die, though in a visible decline for months; and, in that prefumption, was too little inclined to fet about a ferious preparation for a journey, which he hoped he should not be obliged to take; and when he began to apprehend that he could not put it off, his impatience, and terror, and apprehension, shewed too little of that reliance and refignation, which afford the most comfortable reflections to the friends of

the dying, as well as to the dying themselves.

But we must leave poor Belton to that Mercy, of which we have all fo much need; and, for my own part (do you, Lovelace, and the rest of the fraternity, as ye will) I am resolved, I will endeavour to begin to repent of my follies while my health is found, my intellects untouched, and while it is in my power to make some atonement, as near to restitution or reparation, as is possible, to those I have wronged or misled. And do ye outwardly, and from a point of false bravery, make as light as ye will of my resolution, as ye are none of ye of the class of abandoned and stupid sots who endeavour to disbelieve the future existence of which ye are afraid, I am fure you will justify me in your bearts, if not by your practices; and one day you will wish you had joined with me in the fame resolution, and will confess there is more good sense in it, than now perhaps you will own.

Seven o'clock, Thursday morning.

You are very earnest, by your last Letter just given me) to hear again from me, before you fet out for Berks. I will therefore close with a few words upon the only subject in your Letter, which I can at present touch upon: And this is the Letter of which you give me a copy from the Lady.

Want of rest, and the sad scene I have before my eyes, have rendered me altogether incapable of accounting for the contents of it in any shape. You

fag

tha

con

I ha

deat

have worl

will i the oc

itself,

mjuri

with! thee a

good o Tho

, Jack

1

are in ecstasies upon it. You have reason to be so. if it be as you think. Nor would I rob you of your joy: But I must say, that I am amazed at it.

Surely, Lovelace, this furprifing Letter cannot be a forgery of thy own, in order to carry on some view, and to impose upon me. Yet by the stile of

it, it cannot; tho' thou art a perfect Proteus too.

I will not, however, add another word, after I have defired the return of this, and have told you, that I am

Your true Friend, and Well-wisher,

J. Belford.

LETTER LVI.

Mr. LOVELACE, To JOHN BELFORD, Efq. Aug. 24. Thursday Morn.

Received thy Letter in such good time, by the fellow's dispatch, that it gives me an opportunity of throwing in a few paragraphs upon it. I read a paffage or two of it to Mowbray; and we both agree, that thou art an absolute master of the Lamentable.

Poor Belton what terrible conflicts were thy last conflicts !- I hope, however, that he is happy : And I have the more hope, because the hardness of his death is likely to be fuch a warning to thee. If it have the effect thou declarest it shall have, what a world of mischief will it prevent! How much good will it do! How many poor wretches will rejoice at the occasion (if they know it) however melancholy in itself, which shall bring them in a compensation for injuries they had been forced to fit down contented with! But, Jack, tho' thy Uncle's death has made thee a rich fellow, art thou fure, that the making good of fuch a vow will not totally bankrupt thee?

Thou fayest I may laugh at thee, if I will. Not Is Jack: I do not take it to be a laughing subject:

K2

And

ac. ou

my

f

ď

e

1

in

re

uft

out

rds

at

ich

are

And I am heartily concerned at the loss we all have in poor Belton: And when I get a little settled, and have leisure to contemplate the vanity of all sublunary things (a subject that will now-and-then, in my gayest hours, obtrude itself upon me) it is very likely, that I may talk seriously with thee upon these topics; and, if thou hast not got too much the start of me in the Repentance thou art entering upon, will go hand-in-hand with thee in it. If thou hast, thou wilt let me just keep thee in my eye; for it is an up-hill work; and I shall see thee, at setting out, at a great distance; but as thou art a much heavier and clumser fellow than myself, I hope that without much pussing and sweating, only keeping on a good round dog-trot, I shall be able to overtake thee.

Mean time, take back thy Letter, as thou defireft. I would not have it in my pocket upon any account at

present; nor read it once more.

I am going down without feeing my Beloved. I was a hafty fool to write her a Letter, promifing that I would not come near her till I faw her at her Father's. For as she is now actually at Smith's, and I so near her, one short visit could have done no harm.

I fent Will, two hours ago with my grateful compli-

ments, and to know how she does.

How must I adore this charming creature! For I am ready to think my servant a happier fellow than my felf, for having been within a pair of stairs and an

apartment of her.

Mowbray and I will drop a tear apiece, as we ride along, to the memory of poor Belton:—As we ride along, I fay: For we shall have so much joy when we arrive at Lord M's, and when I communicate to him and my Cousins the dear creature's Letter, that we shall forget kvery-thing grievous: Since now their family-hopes in my Reformation (the point which lies so near their hearts) will all revive; it being an article

hu tui thi

him A pepa

Thu fever not h

after My very

worfe

of their faith, that if I marry, Repentance and Mor-

tification will follow of course.

Neither Mowbray nor I shall except of thy verbal invitation to the Funeral. We like not these dismal formalities. And as to the respect that is supposed to be shewn to the memory of a deceased friend in such an attendance, why should we do any-thing to ressect upon those who have made it a sashion to leave this parade to people whom they hire for that purpose?

Adieu, and be chearful. Thou canst now do no more for poor Belton, wert thou to howl for him to

the end of thy life.

I

at

and

no

oli-

rI

ny.

an

ride

ride

hen

e to

heir

lies

ticle

0

LETTER LVII.

Mr. BELFORD, To ROBERT LOVELACE, Efq.

Sat. Aug. 26.

O N Thursday Afternoon I assisted at the opening of poor Belton's Will, in which he has left me his sole Executor, and bequeathed me a Legacy of an hundred guineas; which I shall present to his unfortunate Sister, to whom he has not been so kind as I think he ought to have been. He also left Twenty-pounds apiece to Mowbray, Tourville Thyself, and Me, for a ring to be worn in remembrance of him.

After I had given some particular orders about the peparations to be made for his funeral, I went to town; but having made it late before I got in on Thursday night, and being fatigued for want of rest several nights before, and low in my spirits [I could not help it, Lovelace] I contented myself to send my compliments to the innocent Sufferer, to enquire after her health.

My Servant faw Mrs. Smith, who told him, She was very glad I was come to town; for that the lady was worse than she had been yet.

K 3

In

It is impossible to account for the contents of her Letter to you; or to reconcile those contents to the facts I have to communicate.

I was at Smith's by Seven Yesterday (Friday) morning; and sound that the Lady was just gone in a chair to St. Dunstan's to prayers: She was too ill to get out by Six to Covent Garden Church; and was forced to be supported to her chair by Mrs. Lovick. They would have persuaded her against going; but she said she knew not but that it might be her last opportunity. Mrs. Lovick, dreading that she would be taken worse at church, walked thither before her.

Mrs. Smith told me, She was so ill on Wednesday night, that she had desired to receive the Sacrament; and accordingly it was administered to her, by the Parson of the parish: Whom she besought to take all opportunities of affishing her in her solemn Preparation.

This the gentleman promised: And called in the morning to enquire after her health; and was admitted at the first word. He staid with her about half an hour; and when he came down, with his face turned aside, and a saltering accent, 'Mrs. 'Smith, said he, you have an Angel in your house.

• —I will attend her again in the evening, as she • defires, and as often as I think it will be agreeable • to her.'

Her encreased weakness she attributed to the fatigues she had undergone by your means; and to a Letter she had received from her Sister, which she answered the same day.

Mrs. Smith told me, that two different perfons had called there, one on Thursday Morning, one in the evening, to enquire after her state of health; and seemed as if commissioned from her relations for that purpose; but asked not to see her, only were very inquisitive after her visitors (particularly, it seems, after me: What could they mean by that?) after her

way

6 1

· f

iii

· h

· V

· W

W

th.

6 ha

ea:

go

after,

way of life, and expences; and one of them enquired after her manner of supporting them; to the latter of which, Mrs. Smith said, she had answered as the truth was, that she had been obliged to sell some of her cloaths, and was actually about parting with more; at which the enquirest (a grave old farmer-looking man) held up his hands, and said, Good God!—this will be sad, sad news to somebody! I believe I must not mention it. But Mrs. Smith says, She desired he would, let him come from whom he would. He shook his head, and said, If she died, the slower of the world would be gone, and the samily she belonged to, would be no more than a common samily (a). I was pleased with the man's expression.

You may be curious to know how she passed her time when she was obliged to leave her lodging to

avoid you.

Mrs. Smith tells me, 'That she was very ill when he went out on Monday morning, and fighed as if her heart would break as the came down flairs. and as she went through the shop into the coach, her Nurse with her, as you had informed me before: That she ordered the coachman (whom she ' hired for the day) to drive any-whither, fo it was 'into the Air: He accordingly drove her to Ham-'stead and thence to Highgate. There at the Bowling-green House she alighted, extremely ill, and having breakfasted, ordered the coachman to drive very flowly any-whither. He crept along to Muswell-hill, and put up at a publick house there; where she employed herself two hours in writing, tho' exceedingly weak and low; till the dinner the ' had ordered was brought in: She endeavoured to 'eat, but could not: Her appetite was gone, quite gone, she faid. And then she wrote on for three

⁽a) This man came from her Cousin Morden; as will be seen hereafter, Letters lxxxvi. and xc. of this Volume.

hours more: After which, being heavy, the dozed a little in an elbow-chair. When the awoke, the ordered the coachman to drive her very flowly to town, to the house of a friend of Mrs. Lovick; whom, as agreed upon, the met there: But, being extremely ill, the would venture home at a late hour, altho' the heard from the widow, that you had been there; and had reason to be shocked at your behaviour. She said, She sound there was no avoiding you: She was apprehensive the should not live many hours, and it was not impossible but the shock the sight of you must give her, would determine her sate in your presence.

determine her fate in your presence. ' She accordingly went home. She heard the relation of your aftonishing vagaries, with hands and eyes often lifted up; and with these words inter-' mingled, Shocking creature! Incorrigible wretch! and Will nothing make him ferious? And not being able to bear the thoughts of an interview with a man fo hardened, the took to her usual chair early in the morning, and was carried to the Templestairs, whither she had ordered her Nurse before her, to get a pair of oars in readiness (for her fatigues the day before made her unable to bear a coach); and then she was rowed to Chelsea, where fhe breakfasted; and after rowing about, put in at the Swan at Brentford-Aight were she dined; and would have written, but had no conveniency either of tolerable pens, or ink, or a private room; and then proceeding to Richmond, they rowed her back to Mortlake; where she put in, and drank · Tea at ahouse her waterman recommended to her. . She wrote there for an hour; and returned to the 'Temple; and when the landed, made one of the watermen get her a chair, and fo was carried to the widow's friend, as the night before; where the again met the widow, who informed her, that you had been after her twice that day.

Mrs.

Mr

any

me,

of :

you

the

Lett

be c

e

re

at

cy

n;

ner

nk

er.

he

he

he

he

ou

T5.

Mrs. Lovick gave her there her Sister's Letter (a); and she was so much affected with the contents of it, that she was twice very nigh fainting away; and wept bitterly, as Mrs. Lovick told Mrs. Smith; dropping some warmer expressions than ever they had heard proceed from her lips, in relation to her friends; calling them cruel, and complaining of ill offices done her, and of vile reports raised against her.

While she was thus disturbed, Mrs. Smith came to her, and told her, that you had been there a third time, and was just gone (at half an hour after Nine) having left word, how civil and respectful you would be; but that you was determined to see her at all events.

'She faid, It was hard she could not be permitted to die in peace: That her lot was a severe one: That she began to be afraid she should not forbear repining, and to think her punishment greater than her fault: But recalling herself immediately, she comforted herself that her life would be short, and with the affurance of a better.'

By what I have mentioned, you will conclude with me, that the Letter brought her by Mrs. Lovick (the superscription of which you saw to be written in her Sister's hand) could not be the Letter on the contents of which she grounded that she wrote to you, on her return home. And yet neither Mrs. Lovick, nor Mrs. Smith, nor the servant of the latter, know of any other brought her. But as the woman affured me, that she actually did write to you, I was eased of a suspicion which I had begun to entertain, that you (for some purpose I could not guess at) had forged the Letter from her of which you sent me a copy.

On Wednesday Morning, when she received your Letter in answer to hers, she said, Necessity may well be called the Mother of Invention—But Calamity is

5

⁽a) See Letter lx, of this Volume,

aft

to

low

tog

lege

lige

the

the Test of Integrity .-- I hope I have not taken an inexcuseable step- - And there she stopt a minute or two; and then faid, I shall now, perhaps, be allowed

to die in peace.

I staid till she came in. She was glad to see me: but, being very weak, faid, She must sit down before the could go up stairs: And so went into the backfhop; leaning upon Mrs. Lovick: And when she had fat down, 'I am glad to see you, Mr. Belford, faid she; I must fay fo---let mif-reporters fay what they will.'

I wondered at this expression (a); but would not

interrupt her.

Oh! Sir, faid she, I have been grievously harassed. Your friend, who would not let me live with reputation, will not permit me to die in peace. You fee how I am. Is there not a great alteration in me within this week! But 'tis all for the better. Yet were I to wish for life, I must say, that your friend, your barbarous friend, has burt me greatly.

She was fo very weak, fo fhort-breathed, and her words and actions fo very moving, that I was forced to walk from her; the two Women and her Nurle

turning away their faces also weeping.

I have had, Madam, faid I, fince I faw you, a most shocking scene before my eyes for days together. My poor friend Belton is no more. He quitted the world yesterday morning in such dreadful agonies, that the impression they have left upon me, have so weakened my mind ---

I was loth to have her think, that my grief was owing to the weak state I saw her in, for fear of di-

spiriting her.

This is only, Mr. Belford, interrupted the, in order to strengthen it, if a proper use be made of the impression. But I should be glad, since you are so humanely affected with the folemn circumstance, that you could have written an account of it to your gay friend,

(a) Explained in Letter lxii. of this Volume.

friend, in the style and manner you are master of. Who knows, as it would have come from an Affociate and of an Affociate, how it might have affected him? That I had done, I told her, in fuch a manner as

had, I believed, fome effect upon you.

His behaviour in this honest family so lately, said the, and his cruel pursuit of me, give but little hope

that any-thing ferious or folemn will affect him.

We had some talk about Belton's dying behaviour, and I gave her feveral particulars of the poor man's impatience and despair; to which she was very attentive; and made fine observations upon the subject of Procrastination.

A Letter and Packet were brought her by a man on horseback from Miss Howe, while we were talking. She retired up-stairs to read it; and while I was in discourse with Mrs. Smith and Mrs. Lovick, the Doctor and Apothecary both came in together. They confirmed to me my fears, as to the dangerous way the is in. They had both been apprifed of the new instances of implacableness in her friends, and of your persecutions: And the Doctor said, He would not for the world be either the unforgiving Father of that Lady, or the man who had brought her to this diffress. Her heart's broken: She'll die, said he: There is no faving her. But how, were I either the one or the other of the people I have named, I should support myself afterwards, I cannot tell.

When she was told we were all three together, she defired us to walk up. She arose to receive us, and after answering two or three general questions relating to her health, the addressed herself to us, to the fol-

lowing effect.

i-

1-

he

10

at

24 d

As I may not, faid she, see you three gentlemen together again, let me take this opportunity to acknowlege my obligations to you all. I am inexpreffibly obliged to You, Sir, and to You, Sir [courtefying to the Doctor and to Mr. Goddard] for your more than

K 6

friendly,

Vol. 7.

P

friendly, your paternal care and concern for me. Humanity in your profession, I dare say, is far from being a rare qualification, because you are gentlemen by your profession: But so much kindness, so much humanity, did never desolate creature meet with, as I have met with from you both. But indeed I have always observed, that where a person relies upon Providence, it never sails to rise up a new friend for

every old one that falls off.

This gentleman [bowing to me] who, some people think, should have been one of the last I should have thought of for my Executor--- is nevertheless (such is the strange turn that things have taken!) the only one I can chuse; and therefore I have chosen him for that charitable office, and he has been fo good as to accept of it: For, rich as I may boast myself to be, I am rather fo in right, than in fact, at this present. I repeat therefore my humble thanks to you all three, and beg of God to return to You and Yours [looking to each] an hundred-fold, the kindness and favour you have shewn me; and that it may be in the power of You and of Yours, to the end of time, to confer benefits, rather than to be obliged to receive them. This is a godlike power, gentlemen: I once rejoiced in it in some little degree; and much more in the prospect I had of its being enlarged to me; tho' I have had the mortification to experience the reverse, and to be obliged almost to every-body I have seen or met with: --- But all, originally, thro' my own fault; fo I ought to bear the punishment without repining: And I hope I do---Forgive these impertinencies: A grateful heart, that wants the power it wishes for, to express itself fuitably to its own impulses, will be at a loss what properly to dictate to the tongue; and yet, unable to restrain its overslowings, will force the tongue to fay weak and filly things, rather than appear ungratefully filent. Once more then, I thank ye all three for your kindness to me: And God Almighty make you that amends which at prefent I cannot!

She retired from us to her closet with her eyes full;

and left us looking upon one another.

We had hardly recovered ourselves, when she, quite eafy, chearful, and fmiling, returned to us. Doctor. faid she (seeing we had been moved) you will excuse me for the concern I give you, and fo will You, Mr. Goddard, and You, Mr. Belford; for 'tis a concern that only generous natures can shew; and to such natures sweet is the pain, if I may so say, that attends: fuch a concern. But as I have some few preparations ftill to make, and would not (though in ease of Mr. Belford's future cares, which is, and ought to be. part of my fludy) undertake more than it is likely I shall have time lent me to perform, I would beg of you to give me your opinions [You fee my way of living; and you may be affured, that I will do nothing wilfully to shorten my life] how long it may possibly be, before I may hope to be released from all my troubles.

They both hesitated, and looked upon each other. Don't be afraid to answer me, said she, each sweet hand pressing upon the arm of each gentleman, with that mingled freedom and reserve, which virgin modesty, mixed with conscious dignity, can only express, and with a look serenely earnest, Tell me how long you think I may hold it! And believe me, gentlemen, the shorter you tell me my time is likely to be, the more comfort you will give me.

With what pleasing woe, said the Doctor, do you fill the minds of those who have the happiness to converse with you, and see the happy frame you are in! What you have undergone within a few days past, has much hurt you: And should you have fresh troubles of those kinds, I could not be answerable for

your holding it-And there he paufed.

e

at

le.

tq

ee

ke

He was filent.

A fortnight, Sir? He was still filent.

Ten days ?--- A week ?--- How long, Sir ? with fmi-

new of the bloody propyer edition

ling earnestness.

If I must speak, Madam, If you have not better treatment than you have lately met with, I am afraid --- There again he stopt.

Afraid of what, Doctor? Don't be afraid --- How

long, Sir?

That a fortnight or three weeks may deprive the

world of the finest flower in it.

A fortnight or three weeks yet, Doctor?---But. God's will be done! I shall, however, by this means, have full time, if I have but strength and intellect, to do all that is now upon my mind to do. And fo, Sirs, I can but once more thank you [turning to each of us for all your goodness to me; and, having Letters to write, will take up no more of your time---Only, Doctor, be pleased to order me some more of those drops: They chear me a little, when I am low; and putting a fee into his unwilling hand --- You know the terms, Sir! --- Then, turning to Mr. Goddard, You'll be fo good, Sir, as to look in upon me to-night or to-morrow, as you have opportunity: And you, Mr. Belford, I know, will be defirous to fet out to prepare for the last office for your late friend: So I wish you a good journey, and hope to see you when that is performed.

She then retired, with a chearful and ferene air. The two gentlemen went away together. I went down to the women, and, enquiring, found, that Mrs. Lovick was this day to bring her twenty guineas

more, for some other of her apparel.

The widow told me, that the had taken the liberty to expostulate with her, upon the occasion she had for raifing this money, to fuch great disadvantage; and it produced the following short and affecting converfation between them. None

None of my friends will wear any-thing of mine, faid she. I shall leave a great many good things behind me.--And as to what I want the money for--don't be surprised:--But suppose I want it to purchase a house?

You are all mystery, Madam. I don't comprehend

Prop to tail a hear treasactibe apprehenoy

Why, then Mrs. Lovick, I will explain myself.--I have a man, not a woman, for my Executor: And
think you that I will leave to his care any-thing that
concerns my own person?---Now, Mrs. Lovick, smiling, do you comprehend me?

Mrs. Lovick wept.

O fie! proceeded the Lady, drying up her tears with her own handkerchief and giving her a kifs--Why this kind weakness for one, with whom you have been so little awhile acquainted? Dear, good Mrs. Lovick, don't be concerned for me on a prospect with which I have occasion to be pleased; but go to-morrow to your friends, and bring me the money they have agreed to give you.

Thus, Lovelace, it is plain, that she means to bespeak her last house! Here's presence of mind; here's
tranquility of heart, on the most affecting occasion!
---This is magnanimity indeed!---Couldst thou, or
could I, with all our boisterous bravery, and offensive
salse courage, act thus?---Poor Belton! how unlike

was thy behaviour!

Mrs. Lovick tells me, that the Lady spoke of a Letter she had received from her favourite divine Dr. Lewen, in the time of my absence; and of an Answer she had returned to it. But Mrs. Lovick knows not

the contents of either.

When thou receivest the Letter I am now writeing, thou wilt see what will soon be the end of all thy injuries to this divine Lady. I say, when thou receivest it; for I will delay it for some little time, lest thou shouldest take it into thy head (under pretence of resenting fenting the disappointment her Letter must give thee) to molest her again.

This Letter having detained me by its length, I

shall not now fet out for Epsom till to-morrow.

I should have mentioned, that the Lady explained to me what the one thing was, that she was afraid might happen to russle her. It was the apprehension of what may result from a visit which Col. Morden, as she is informed, designs to make you.

LETTER LVIII.

The Rev. Dr. Lewen, To Miss CL. HARLOWE.

Friday, Aug. 18.

Presuming, dearest and ever-respectable young Lady, upon your former favour, and upon your opinion of my judgment and sincerity, I cannot help addressing you by a few lines, on your present un-

happy fituation.

I will not look back upon the measures into which you have either been led or driven: But will only say as to those, that I think you are the least to blame of any young Lady that was ever reduced from happy to unhappy circumstances; and I have not been wanting to say as much, where I hoped my freedom would have been better received than I have had the mortification to find it to be.

What I principally write for now, is, to put you upon doing a piece of justice to yourself, and to your Sex, in the prosecuting for his life (I am assured his life is in your power) the most prosligate and abandoned of men, as he must be, who could act so basely, as I understand Mr. Lovelace has acted by you.

I am very ill; and am now forced to write upon my pillow; my thoughts confused; and incapable of method: I shall not therefore aim at method: But to give you in general my opinion.---And that is, That your Religion, your Duty to your Family, the Duty

you.

you owe to your Honour, and even Charity to your Sex, oblige you to give Public Evidence against this

very wicked man.

And let me add another consideration: The prevention, by this means, of the mischiefs that may otherwise happen between your Brother and Mr. Lovelace, or between the latter and your Cousin Morden, who is now, I hear, arrived, and resolves

to have juffice done you.

A confideration which ought to affect your Conficience [Forgive me, dearest young Lady, I think I am now in the way of my duty]; and to be of more concern to you, than that hard pressure upon your modesty which I know the appearance against him in an open Court must be of to such a Lady as you; and which, I conceive, will be your great difficulty. But I know, Madam, that you have dignity enough to become the blushes of the most naked truth, when necessity, justice, and honour, exact it from you. Rakes and Ravishers would meet with encouragement indeed, and most from those who had the greatest abhorrence of their actions, if violated modesty were never to complain of the injury it received from the villainous attempters of it.

In a word, the Reparation of your family dishonour now rests in your own bosom: And which only one of these two alternatives can repair; to wit, either to marry the offender, or to prosecute him at Law. Bitter expedients for a soul so delicate as yours!

He, and all his friends, I understand, solicit you to the first: And it is certainly, now, all the amends within his power to make. But I am affured, that you have rejected their solicitations, and his, with the indignation and contempt that his foul actions have deserved: But yet, that you refuse not to extend to him the Christian forgiveness he has so little reason to expect, provided he will not disturb you further.

But, Madam, the profecution I advise, will not

let your present and suture exemption from fresh disturbance from so vile a molester depend upon his courtesy: I should think so noble and so rightly-guided a spirit as yours, would not permit that it should, if

you could help it.

And can indignities of any kind be properly pardoned till we have it in our power to punish them? To pretend to pardon, while we are labouring under the pain or dishonour of them, will be thought by some to be but the vaunted mercy of a pusillanimous heart, trembling to refent them. The remedy I propose, is a severe one; but what pain can be more severe than the injury? or how will injuries be believed to grieve us, that are never honourably complained of?

I am fure, Miss Clarissa Harlowe, however injured and oppressed, remains unshaken in her sentiments of honour and virtue: And although she would sooner die than deserve that her modesty should be drawn into question; yet she will think no truth immodest that is to be uttered in the vindicated cause of innocence and chastity. Little, very little difference is there, my dear young Lady, between a suppressed evidence,

and a false one.

It is a terrible circumstance, I once more own, for a young Lady of your delicacy, to be under the obligation of telling so shocking a Story in public Court: But it is still a worse imputation, that she should pass

over fo mortal an injury unrefented.

Conscience, Honour, Justice, are on your side: And Modesty would, by some, be thought but an empty name, should you refuse to obey their dictates.

Brot favo

and

will,

cont

whet

ther

not;

pier e

I have been consulted, I own, on this subject. I have given it as my opinion, that you ought to profecute the abandoned man---But without my reasons. These I reserved, with a resolution to lay them before you unknown to any-body, that the result, if what I wish, may be your own.

I will

I will only add, that the misfortunes which have befallen you, had they been the lot of a child of my own, could not have affected me more than yours have done. My own child I love: But I both love and honour you: Since to love you, is to love virtue, good fense, prudence, and every-thing that is good and noble in woman.

Wounded as I think all these are by the injuries you have received, you will believe that the knowlege of your distresses must have afflicted, beyond what I

am able to express,

s. if

11

Let. 59.

Your fincere Admirer, and humble Servant,

ARTHUR LEWEN.

I just now understand, that your Sister will, by proper authority, propose this prosecution to you. I humbly presume, that the reason why you resolved not upon this step from the first, was, that you did not know, that it would have the Countenance and Support of your Relations.

LETTER LIX.

Mischarissa Harlowe, To the Rev. Dr. Lewen.

Reverend and Dear Sir, Sat. Aug. 19.

Thought, till I received your affectionate and welcome Letter, that I had neither Father, Uncle, Brother left; nor hardly a friend among my former favourers of your Sex. Yet, knowing you fo well, and having no reason to upbraid myself with a faulty will, I was to blame (even although I had doubted the continuance of your good opinion) to decline the trial whether I had forseited it or not; and if I had, whether I could not, honourably reinstate myself in it.

But, Sir, it was owing to different causes that I did not; partly to shame, to think how high, in my happier days, I stood in your esteem, and how much I

must

ir

ha

rac

aw

hav Fat

of

must be sunk in it, since those so much nearer in relation to me gave me up; partly to deep distress, which makes the humbled heart distident; and made mine asraid to claim the kindred mind in yours, which would have supplied to me in some measure all the

dear and lost relations I have named.

Then, So loth, as I sometimes was, to be thought to want to make a party against those whom both duty and inclination bid me reverence: So long trailed on between hope and doubt: So little my own mistress at one time; so fearful of making or causing mischief, at another; and not being encouraged to hope, by your kind notice, that my application to you would be acceptable:---apprehending, that my relations had engaged your silence at least (a)—

THESE—But why these unavailing retrospections now?—I was to be happy—In order to be happy; that is my hope!—Resigning therefore to That hope, I will, without any further preamble, write a sew lines (if writing to you, I can write but a sew) in an-

fwer to the subject of your kind Letter.

Permit me, then, to fay, That I believe your arguments would have been unanswerable in almost every other case of This nature, but in That of the

unhappy Clariffa Harlowe.

It is certain, that creatures who cannot stand the shock of public shame, should be doubly careful how they expose themselves to the danger of incurring private guilt, which may possibly bring them to it. But as to myself, suppose there were no objections from the declining way I am in as to my health; and supposing I could have prevailed upon myself to appear against This man; were there not room to apprehend, that the end so much wished for by my friends (to wit, his condign punishment) would not have been

⁽a) The stiff visit this good divine was prevailed upon to make her, as mentioned Vol. II. p. 171, 172. (of which, however, she was too generous to remind him) might warrant the Lady to think, that he had rather inclined to their party, as to the parental side, than to hers.

Obtained,

obtained, when it came to be seen, that I had confented to give him a claudestine meeting; and, in consequence of that, had been weakly tricked out of myself; and further still, had not been able to avoid living under one roof with him for several weeks; which I did (not only without complaint, but) without cause of complaint?

Little advantage in a Court (perhaps, bandied about, and jested profligately with) would some of those pleas in my favour have been, which out of Court, and to a private and serious audience, would have carried the greatest weight against him—Such, particularly, as the infamous methods to which he

had recourfe.

15.

d

ar.

1,

to

n.

er,

It would, no doubt, have been a ready retort from every mouth, that I ought not to have thrown myself into the power of such a man, and that I ought to

take for my pains what had befallen me.

But had the Profecution been carried on to effect, and had he even been fentenced to death, can it be supposed, that his family would not have had interest enough to obtain his pardon, for a crime thought too lightly of, though one of the greatest that can be committed against a creature valuing her honour above her life?—While I had been censured as pursuing with sanguinary views a man who offered me early all the reparation in his power to make?

And had he been pardoned, would he not then have been at liberty to do as much mischief as ever?

I dare fay, Sir, fuch is the affurance of the man upon whom my unhappy destiny threw me; and such his inveteracy to my family (which would then have appeared to be justified by their known inveteracy to him, and by their earnest endeavours to take away his life): that he would not have been forry to have had an opportunity to confront Me, and my Father, Uncles, and Brother, at the Bar of a Court of justice, on such an occasion. In which case,

would

. Vol. 7.

aı

an

fto

of

to

hea

wif

app

pur

Iha

you

opin

a par

Justil

you

But

would not (on his acquital, or pardon) refentments have been reciprocally heightened? And then would my Brother, or my Cousin Morden, have been more fecure than now?

How do these considerations aggravate my fault! My motives, at first, were not indeed blameable: But I had forgotten the excellent caution, which yet I was not ignorant of, That we ought not to do evil

that good may come of it.

In full conviction of the purity of my heart, and of the firmness of my principles [Why may I not, thus called upon, fay what I am conscious of, and yet without the imputation of faulty pride; fince all is but a Duty, and I should be utterly inexcusable, could I not justly fay what I do?-In this full conviction] he had offered me Marriage. He has avowed his penitence : A fincere penitence I have reason to think it, tho' perhaps not a Christian one. And his noble relations (kinder to the poor Sufferer than her own) on the same conviction, and his own not ungenerous acknowlegements, have joined to intercede with me to forgive and accept of him. Altho' I can not comply with the latter part of their intercession, have not you, Sir, from the best Rules, and from the divinest Example, taught me to forgive injuries?

The injury I have received from him is indeed of the highest nature, and it was attended with circumstances of unmanly baseness, and premeditation; yet, I bless God, it has not tainted my mind; it has not hurt my morals. No thanks indeed to the wicked man that it has not. No vile courses have followed it. My will is unviolated. The evil (respecting myself, and not my friends) is merely personal. No credulity, no weakness, no want of vigilance, have I to reproach myself with. I have, thro' Grace, triumphed over the deepest machinations. I have escaped from him. I have renounced him. The man whom once I could have loved, I have been

enabled

enabled to despise: And shall not Charity complete my triumph? And shall I not enjoy it?—And where would be my triumph, if he deserved my forgiveness?—Poor man! He has had a loss in losing me! I have the pride to think so, because I think I know my own heart. I have had none in losing him!

But I have another plea to make, which alone would have been enough (as I prefume) to answer the contents of your very kind and friendly Letter.

I know, my dear and reverend friend, the spiritual guide and director of my happier days! I know, that you will allow of my endeavour to bring myself to this charitable disposition, when I tell you how near I think myself to that great and awful moment, in which, and even in the ardent preparation to which, every sense of indignity or injury that concerns not the immortal Soul, ought to be absorbed in higher and more important contemplations.

Thus much for myself.

a

ot

ed

y-No

ve

e,

ve

ne

en

And for the satisfaction of my friends and favourers, Miss Howe is solicitous to have all those Letters and Materials preserved, which will set my whole story in a true light. The good Dr. Lewen is one

of the principal of those friends and favourers.

The warning that may be given from those papers to all such young creatures as may have known or heard of me, may be of more efficacy to the end wished for, as I humbly presume to think, than my appearance could have been in a Court of Justice, pursuing a doubtful event, under the disadvantages I have mentioned. And if, my dear and good Sir, you are now, on considering every-thing, of this opinion, and I could know it, I should consider it as a particular selicity; being as solicitous as ever to be justified in what I may in your eyes.

I am forry, Sir, that your indisposition has reduced you to the necessity of writing upon your pillow. But how much am I obliged to that kind and gene-

p.

uí

W

hir

fee and

in 1

US T and

Elop And

a m

inju

28 W

L

you

and hall Vo

rous concern for me, which has impelled you, as I may fay, to write a Letter, containing so many paternal lines, with fuch inconvenience to yourfelf!

May the Almighty bless you, dear and reverend Sir, for all your goodness to me of long time past, as well as for that which engages my prefent graintude! Continue to esteem me to the last, as I do and will venerate you! And let me bespeak your prayers, the continuance, I should say, of your prayers; for I doubt not, that I have always had them: And to them, perhaps, has in part been owing (as well as to your pious precepts instilled thro' my earlier youth) that I have been able to make the Stand I have made; altho' every-thing that you prayed for has not been granted to me by that Divine Wildom, which knows what is best for its poor creatures.

My prayers for you are, That it will please God to restore you to your affectionate flock; and after as many years of life as shall be for His service, and to your own comfort, give us a happy meeting in those regions of bleffedness, which you have taught me, as well by Example, as by Precept, to aspire to! CLARISSA HARLOWE.

LETTER LX.

Miss ARAB. HARLOWE, To Miss CL. HARLOWE.

In answer to bers to ber Uncle ANTONY of Aug. 31. (a).

Sifter CLARY, Monday, Aug. 21.

Find by your Letters to my Uncles, that they, as well as I, are in great difgrace with you for writeing our minds to you.

We can't help it, Sister Clary.

You don't think it worth your while, I find, a second time to press for the Bleffing you pretend to be have done your duty in asking for it: So you'll sit down satisfied with That, I suppose, and seave it to your wounded parents to repent hereaster that they have not done Theirs, in giving it to you, at the surface word; and in making such enquiries about you, as you think ought to have been made. Fine encouragement to enquire after a run-away Daughter! living with her sellow, as long as he would live with her! You repent also (with your full mind, as you modestly call it) that you wrote to me.

So we are not likely to be applied to any more, I

find, in this way. : 2018 to allow or holmor shints

2-

he

10

Well then, fince This is the case, Sister Clary, let me, with all Humility, address myself with a proposal or two to you; to which you will be graciously

pleafed to give an answer. The all studgling blood way

Now you must know that we have had hints given us from several quarters, that you have been used in such a manner by the villain you ran away with, that his life would be answerable for his crime, if it were fairly to be proved. And by your own

hints, fomething like it appears to us.

If, Clary, there be any thing but jingle and affected period in what proceeds from your full mind, and your dutiful consciousness; and if there be truth in what Mrs. Norton and Mrs. Howe have acquainted us with; you may yet justify your character to us, and to the world, in every-thing but your scandalous Elopement; and the Law may reach the villain: And could we but bring him to the gallows, what a meritorious revenge would that be to our whole injured family, and to the innocents he has deluded, as well as the saving from ruin many others!

Let me, therefore, know (if you please) whether you are willing to appear to do Yourself, and Us, and your Sex, this justice? If not, Sister Clary, we shall know what to think of you; for neither you

Vol. VII.

m

fuc

or i

me

have

my :

recei

fit: been

nor we can fuffer more than we have done from the feandal of your fall: And if you will, Mr. Ackland and Counfellor Derham will both attend you to make proper Enquiries, and to take Minutes of your Story, to found a process upon, if it will bear one with as great a probability of success as we are told it may be prosecuted with.

But by what Mrs. Howe intimates, this is not likely to be complied with; for it is what she hinted to you it seems by her lively Daughter, but without effect (a); and then, again, possibly, you may not at present behave so prudently in some certain points, as to entitle yourself to public justice; which if true, the

Lord have mercy upon you.

One word only more as to the above proposal:---Your admirer, Dr. Lewen, is clear in his opinion that

you should prosecute the villain.

But if you will not agree to this, I have another proposal to make to you; and that in the name of every one in the family; which is, that you will think of going to Penfylvania to relide there for some few years till all is blown over: And, if it please God to spare you, and your unhappy parents, till they can be fatisfied, that you behave like a true and uniform penitent; at least till you are One-and-twenty; you may then come back to your own Estate, or have the produce of it fent you thither, as you shall chuse. A period which my Father fixes, because it is the Cultom; and because he thinks your Grandfather should have fixed it; and because, let me add, you have fully proved by your fine conduct, that you were not at Years of discretion at Eighteen. Poor doting, tho good old man !-- Your Grandfather, he thought---But I would not be too fevere.

Mr. Hartley has a Widow-Sister at Pensylvania, with whom he will undertake you may board, and who is a sober, sensible, well-re'd woman. And

if you were once well there, it would rid your Father and Mother of a world of cares, and fears, and feandal; and I think is what you should wish for of all things.

Mr. Hartley will engage for all accommodations in your passage suitable to your rank and fortune; and he has a concern in a Ship, which will sail in a month; and you may take your secret-keeping Hannah with you, or whom you will of your newer acquaintance. Tis prefumed that your companions will be of your own Sex.

These are what I had to communicate to you; and if you'll oblige me with an Answer (which the hand that conveys this will call for on Wednesday Morn-

ing) it will be very condescending.

ARABELLA HARLOWE.

LETTER LXI.

Miss CL. HARLOWE, To Miss ARAB. HARLOWE.

Tuefday, Aug. 22.

WRITE to me, my hard-hearted Sister, in what manner you please, I shall always be thankful to you for your notice. But (think what you will of me) I cannot see Mr. Ackland and the Counsellor on such a business as you mention.

The Lord have mercy upon me indeed! For none elfe

will.

k

o

ou

A

uf-

uld

ully

t at

tho

nt--

m12,

and

And

Surely I am believed to be a creature past all shame, or it could not be thought of sending two Gentlemen to me on such an errand.

Had my Mother required of me (or would Modesty have permitted You to enquire into) the particulars of my sad Story, or had Mrs. Norton been directed to receive them from me, methinks it had been more sit: And I presume to think, that it would have been more in every one's character too, had they been L 2 required

required of me before such heavy judgment had been

paffed upon me, as has been paffed.

I know that this is Dr. Lewen's opinion. He has been fo good as to enforce it in a kind Letter to me. I have answered his Letter; and given such reasons as I hope will fatisfy bim. I could wish it were thought worth while to request of him a fight of my

Answer (a).

To your other proposal, of going to Pensylvania; this is my answer- - If nothing happen within a month which may full as effectually rid my parents and friends of that world of cares, and fears, and feandals, which you mention, and if I am then able to be carried on board of ship, I will chearfully obey my Father and Mother, altho' I were fure to die in the pal-And, if I may be forgiven for faying fo (for indeed it proceeds not from a spirit of reprisal) you shall fet over me, instead of my poor obliging, but really unculpable Hannah, your Betty Barnes; to whom I will be answerable for all my conduct. And I will make it worth her while to accompany me.

I am equally ferprifed and concerned at the hints which both you and my Uncle Antony give of new points of misbehaviour in me!---What can be meant

n

fli

W

an

he

rity

the

thei

piti

by them?

I will not tell you, Miss Harlowe, how much I am afflicted at your feverity, and how much I fuffer by it, and by your hard hearted Levity of style, because what I shall say may be construed into jingle and period, and because I know it is intended, very possibly for kind ends, to mortify me. All I will therefore fay, is, That it does not lofe its end, if that be it.

But, nevertheless (divesting myself as much as posfible of all refentment) I will only pray, that Heaven

⁽a) Her Letter containing the reasons she refers to, was not asked for; and Dr. Lewen's death, which fell out soon after he had received it, was the reason that it was not communicated to the family, till it was too late to do the fervice that might have been hoped for from it. will

will give you, for your own take, a kinder heart, than at present you feem to have; fince a kind heart, I am convinced, is a greater bleffing to its possessor, than it can be to any other person. Under this conviction I fubscribe myself, my dear Bella,

Your ever-affestionate Sifter,

CL. HARLOWE.

LETTER LXII.

Mrs. NORTON, To Miss CLARISSA HARLOWE.

In answer to hers of Thursday, Aug. 17 (a).

My dearest young Lady, Tuesday, Aug. 22.

THE Letters you fent me, I now return by the

hand that brings you this.

great liberties of meech mon

It is impossible for me to express how much I have been affected by them, and by your last of the 17th. Indeed, my dear Miss Clary, You are very harthly used; indeed you are! And if you should be taken from us, what grief and what punishment are they not treasuring up against themselves in the heavy reflections which their rash censures and unforgivingnels will occasion them.

But I find to what your Uncle Antony's cruel Letter is owing, as well as one you will be still more afflicted by [God help you, my poor dear child!] when it comes to your hand, written by your Sister, with proposals to you (b).

It was finished to send you yesterday, I know; and I apprife you of it, that you should fortify your

heart against the contents of it.

e-

le

of-

en

or; Was

too

vill

The motives, which incline them all to this feverity, if well grounded, would authorize any feverity they could express, and which, while they believe them to be fo, both They and You are to be equally pitied.

They (a) See Letter xi.

They are owing to the information of that officious Mr. Brand, who has acquainted them (from fome enemy of yours in the neighbourhood about you) that visits are made you, highly censurable, by a man of a free character, and an Intimate of Mr. Lovelace: who is often in private with you; fometimes twice or thrice a day.

Betty gives herfelf great liberties of speech upon this occasion, and all your friends are too ready to believe, that things are not as they fhould be; which makes me wish, that, let the gentleman's views be ever so honourable, you could entirely drop acquaint-

ance with him.

Something of this nature was hinted at by Betty to me before, but fo darkly, that I could not tell what to make of it; and this made me mention it to you

fo generally, as I did in my laft.

Your coufin Morden has been among them. He is exceedingly concerned for your misfortunes; and as they will not believe Mr. Lovelace would marry you, he is determined to go to Lord M's, in order to inform himself from Mr. Lovelace's own mouth, whether he intends to do you That justice or not.

He was extremely careffed by every one at his first arrival; but I am told there is some little coldness

between them and him at prefent.

I was in hopes of getting a fight of this Letter of Mr. Brand (a rash officious man!): But it seems Mr. Morden had it given him yesterday to read, and he

took it away with him.

God be you comfort, my dear Miss! But indeed I am exceedingly disturbed at the thoughts of what may still be the iffue of all these things. I am, my beloved young Lady, as hoose abouting flow it it

Your most affectionate and faithful JUDITH NORTON.

is cultured at 19

LETTER LXIII.

Mrs. NORTON, To Mils CLABISSA HARLOWE.

Tuesday, Aug. 22.

A FTER I had fealed up the inclosed, I had the honour of a private visit from your Aunt Hervey; who has been in a very low-spirited way, and kept her chamber for several weeks past; and is but just got abroad. how sadt movacill or be

She longed, she faid, to fee me, and to weep with me, on the hard fate that had befallen her beloved

Niece.

I will give you a faithful account of what paffed between us; as I expect, that it will, upon the whole, administer hope and comfort to you.

' She pitied very much your good Mother, who, fhe affured me, is obliged to act a part entirely contrary to her inclinations; as the herfelf, the owns,

had been in a great measure.

' She faid, that the poor Lady was with great difficulty with-held from answering your Letter to her; which had (as was your Aunt's expression) al-' most broken the heart of every one: That she had reason to think, that she was neither consenting to ' your two Uncles writing, nor approving of what they wrote.

' She is fure they all love you dearly; but have ' gone fo far, that they know not how to recede.

'That, but for the abominable league which your Brother had got every-body into (he refuting to fet out for Scotland till it was renewed, and till they ' had all promised to take no step towards a Reconcibiliation in his absence but by his consent; and to ' which your Sister's resentments kept them up); all ' would before now have happily fubfided.

That nobody knew the pangs which their inflexible behaviour gave them, ever fince you had 224

begun to write to them in so affecting and humble a style.

'That, however, they were not inclined to believe that you were either so ill, or so penitent, as you

' really are; and still less, that Mr. Lovelace is in

earnest in his Offers of Marriage.

'She is fure, however, she says, that all will soon be well: And the sooner for Mr. Morden's arrival:

. Who is very zealous in your behalf.

- 'She wished to Heaven, that you would accept of Mr. Lovelace, wicked as he has been, if he were now in earnest.
- 'It had always, she said, been matter of astonishment to her, that so weak a pride in her Cousin James, of making himself the whole family, should

' induce them all to refuse an alliance with such a fa-

· mily as Mr. Lovelace's was.

She would have it, that your going off with Mr.
Lovelace was the unhappiest step for your honour
and your interast that could have been taken; for
that altho' you would have had a severe trial the
next day, yet it would probably have been the
last; and your pathetic powers must have drawn
you off some friends—hinting at your Mother, at
your Uncle Harlowe, at your Uncle Hervey, and

· herfelf.'

But here (that the regret that you did not trust to the event of that meeting, may not, in your present low way, too much afflict you) I must observe, that it seems a little too evident, even from this opinion of your Aunt's, that it was not absolutely determined that all compulsion was designed to be avoided, since your freedom from it must have been owing to the party to be made among them by your persuasive eloquence and dutiful expostulation.

She owned, that fome of them were as much afraid of meeting you, as you could be of meeting

them

· i

· fe

you

pray

A

them :'--- But why fo, if they defigned, in the last

instance, to give you your way?

Your Aunt told me, That Mrs. Williams (a) had been with her, and asked her opinion, if it would be taken amis, if the defired leave to go up, to attend her dearest young Lady in her calamity. Your Aunt referred her to your Mother : But had heard no more of it.

' Her daughter (Miss Dolly) she said, had been frequently earnest with her on the same subject; and renewed her request with the greatest fervor

when your first Letter came to hand.

Your Aunt fays, That she then being very ill, wrote to your Mother upon i., hoping it would not be taken amis, if the permitted Miss Dolly to go; but that your Sifter, as from your Mother, anwered her, That now you feemed to be coming to, and to have a due fense of your faults, you must be

best entirely to their own management.

' Miss Dolly, the faid, had pined ever fince the ' had heard of Mr. Lovelace's baseness; being doubly mortified by it: First, on account of your fufferings; next, because the was one who rejoiced in 'your getting off, and vindicated you for it: And had incurred censure and ill-will on that account ' especially from your Brother and Sister; so that she feldom went to Harlowe-Place.

Make the best use of these intelligences, my dearest

young Lady, for your confolation.

I will only add, that I am, with the most fervent prayers for your Recovery and Restoration to favour,

Your ever-faithful

bediention of Market has given up.

ted contractive and contraction that

Judith Norton.

visations disavibate Starte L 5

(a) The former Housekeeper at Harlowe-Place.

)-

h

the soft in about the your little or seed and the shall LETTER LILIV.

Miss CL. HARLOWE, To Mrs. JUDITH NORTON. Thur fday, Aug. 24.

HE relation of fuch a conversation as passed between my Aunt and you, would have given me pleasure, had it come some time ago; because it would have met with a spirit more industrious than mine now is, to pick out remote comfort in the hope of a favourable turn that might one day have rewarded my

patient duty. Letter came to beat full rung com I did not doubt my Aunt's good-will to me. Her affection I did not doubt. But shall we wonder that Kings and Princes meet with fo little controll in their passions, be they ever so violent, when in a private family, an Aunt, nay, even a Mother in that family, shall chuse to give up a once favoured child against their own inclinations, rather than oppose an aspiring young man, who had armed himself with the authority of a Father, who, when once determined, never would be expostulated with?

And will you not blame me, if I fay, that good fense, that kindred indulgence, must be a little offended at the treatment I have met with; and if I own, that I think, that great rigour has been exercised towards me! And yet I am now authorized to call it rigour by the judgment of two excellent Sifters, my Mother and my Aunt, who acknowlege (as you tell me from my Aunt) that they have been obliged to join against me, contrary to their inclinations; and that, even in a point which might feem to concern my eternal welfare.

But I must not go on at this rate. For may not the inclination my Mother has given up, be the effect of a too fond indulgence, rather than that I merit the indulgence? And yet so petulantly perverse am I, that I

(a) The former Houlekeeper at Hulewe-

must tear myself from the subject.

All

of i

fo !

Go

the

ford

whi

All then that I will fay further to it, at this time, is, that were the intended goodness to be granted to me but a week hence, it would possibly be too late ... Too late, I mean, to be of the consolation to me, that I would wish from it: For what an inefficacious Preparation must I have been making, if it has not, by this time, carried me above... But above what! Poor mistaken creature! Unhappy self-deluder! that finds herself above nothing! Not able to subdue her

own faulty impatience!

d

.

I

.

nt

en

12-

to

he

fa

ul-

I

All

But in-deed to have done with a subject, that I dare not trust myself with; if it comes in your way, let my Aunt Hervey, let my dear Cousin Dolly, let the worthy Mrs. Williams, know, how exceedingly grateful to me their kind intentions and concern for me are: And, as the best warrant or justification of their good opinions (since I know that their favour for me is founded on the belief that I loved virtue) tell them, that I continued to love virtue to my last hour, as I presume to hope it may be said; and assure them, that I never made the least wilful deviation, however unhappy I became for one saulty step; which nevertheless was not owing to unworthy or perverse motives.

I am very forry, that my Coufin Morden has taken

My apprehensions on this intelligence are a great abatement to the pleasure I have in knowing that he still loves me.

My Sister's Letter to me is a most afflicting one---So needlesly, so ludicrously taunting!---But for that part
of it that is so, I ought rather to pity her, than to be
so much concerned at it as I am.

I wonder what I have done to Mr. Brand---I pray God to forgive both him and his informants, whoever they be. But if the scandal arise solely from Mr. Belford's visits, a very little time will confute it. Mean while, the packet I shall send you, which I sent to

L 6

Miss

Miss Howe, will I hope satisfy you, my dear Mrs. Norton, as to my reasons for admitting his visits.

My Sister's taunting Letter, and the Insteribleness of my dear friends—But how do remoter-begun subjects tend to the point which lies nearest the heart!

—As new caught bodily disorders all croud to a fractured or distempered part.

I will break off, with requesting your prayers, that I may be blessed with patience and due resignation; and with affuring you, that I am, and will be to the

last hour of my life,

Your equally grateful and affectionate

CL. HARLOWE.

LETTER LXV.

Miss Howe, To Miss CLARISSA HARLOWE.

In reply to hers of Friday Aug. 11 (a).

Yarmouth, Isle of Wight, Aug. 23.

My dearest Friend,

know, how exceedingly

I HAVE read the Letters and Copies of Letters you favoured me with: And I return them by a

particular hand.

I am extremely concerned at your indifferent state of health: But I approve of all your proceedings and precautions in relation to the appointment of Mr. Belford for an office, in which, I hope, neither he nor any-body else will be wanted to act, for many, very many years.

I admire, and so we do all, that greatness of mind which can make you so stedsastly despise (thro' such inducements as no other woman could resist, and in such desolate circumstances as you have been reduced to) the wretch that ought to be so heartily despised and

detefted.

What must the contents of those Letters from your relations

relations be, which you will not communicate to me! ... Fie upon them ! How my heart rifes !-- But I dare fay no more--- Tho' you yourself now begin to think

they use you with great severity.

Every-body here is so taken with Mr. Hickman (and the more from the horror they conceive at the character of the detestable Lovelace) that I have been teazed to death almost to name a day. This has given him airs; and, did I not keep him to it, he would behave as carelesly and as insolently as if he were fure of me. II have been forced to mortify himno less than four times since we have been here.

I made him lately undergo a fevere penance for fome negligences that were not to be passed over: Not designed ones, he said: But that was a poor excuse, as I told him: For, had they been defigned, he should never have come into my presence more: That they were not, shewed his want of thought and attention; and those were inexcusable in a man only m his probatory state.

He hoped he had been more than in a probatory

flate, he faid. want floor I milloup sile pi sie abant

d

And therefore, Sir, might be more careless!---So you add ingratitude to negligence, and make what you plead as accident, that itself wants an excuse, design, which deferves none.

I would not see him for two days, and he was so penitent, and so humble, that I had like to have lost myself, to make him amends: For, as you have faid, a resentment carried too high, often ends in an amends too humble.

I long to be nearer to you: But that must not yet be, it feems. Pray, my dear, let me hear from you as often as you can.

May Heaven encrease your comforts, and reftore

your health, are the prayers of

Your ever faithful and affectionate

ANNA HowF.

Vol. 7.

P. S. Excuse me that I did not write before : It was owing to a little coafting voyage I was obliged to give into. I show you lot I -- nom on

LETTER LXVI.

Miss CLARISSA HARLOWE, To Miss Howe.

Friday, Aug. 25.

YOU are very obliging, my dear Miss Howe, to account to me for your filence. I was easy in it, as I doubted not, that among fuch near and dear friends as you are with, you was diverted from writing by some such agreeable excursion as that you mention.

I was in hopes that you had given over, at this time of day, those very sprightly airs, which I have taken the liberty to blame you for, as often as you have given me occasion to do so; and that has been

I was always very grave with you upon this subject : And while your own and a worthy man's future happiness are in the question, I must enter into it, whenever you forget yourfelf, altho' I had not a day to live:

And indeed I am very ill.

I am fure, it was not your intention to take your future Husband with you to the little island to make him look weak and filly among those of your relations, who never before had feen him. Yet do you think it possible for them (however prepared and refolved they may be to like him) to forbear fmiling at him, when they fee him fuffering under your whimfical penances?' A modest man should no more be made little in his own eyes, than in the eyes of others. If he be, he will have a diffidence, which will give an aukwardness to every-thing he says or does: And this will be no more to the credit of your choice, thanto that of the approbation he meets with from your friends, or to his own credit. I

I love an obliging, and even an bumble deportment in a man to the woman he addresses. It is a mark of his politeness, and tends to give her that opinion of herfelf, which it may be supposed bashful merit wants to be inspired with. But if the woman exacts it with an high hand, the flews not either her own politeness or gratitude; altho' I must confess she does her courage. I gave you expectation that I would be very ferious with you. It a find that this too blow

O my dear, that it had been my lot (as I was: not permitted to live fingle) to have met with a man by whom I could have acted generously and unrefer-

vedly!

Mr. Lovelace, it is now plain, in order to have a pretence against me, taxed my behaviour to him with stiffness and distance. You, at one time, thought me guilty of some degree of Prudery. Difficult Situations should be allowed for; which often make feeming occasions for censure unavoidable. deserved not blame from him who made mine difficult. And you, my dear, had I had any other man to deal with, or had he had but half the merit which Mr. Hickman has, would have found that my doctrine on this subject should have governed my practice. indignay from a woman.

But to put myself out of the question-- I'll tell you what I should think, were I an indifferent by-stander, of those high airs of yours, in return for Mr. Hickman's humble demeanour. The Lady thinks of having the gentleman, I fee plainly, would I fay. But I fee, as plainly, that she has a very great indifference to him. And to what may this indif-' ference be owing? To one or all of these considerations, no doubt: That she receives his addreffes rather from motives of convenience than thoice: That she thinks meanly of his endowments and intellects; at least more highly of ber own? Or, the has not the generofity to use that power. with moderation, which his great affection for her puts into her hands.

How would you like, my dear, to have any of

these things said? on it and want in maidw

Then to give but the shadow of a reason for freelivers and free speakers to say; or to imagine, that Miss Howe gives her hand to a man who has no reason to expect any share in her heart, I am sure you would not wish that such a thing should be so much as supposed. Then all the regard from you to come afterwards; none to be shewn before; must, I should think, be capable of being construed as a compliment to the Husband made at the expence of the Wise's

and even of the Sex's delicacy.

There is no fear that attempts could be formed by the most audacious [Two Lovelaces there cannot be!] upon a character so revered for virtue, and so charmingly spirited, as Miss Howe's: Yet, to have any man encouraged to despise a Husband by the example of one who is most concerned to do him honour; what, my dear, think you of that? It is but too natural for envious men (and who that knows Miss Howe, will not envy Mr. Hickman!) to scoff at, and to jest upon, those who are treated with or will bear

If a man so treated have a true and ardent Love for the woman he addresses, he will be easily over-awed by her displeasure: And this will put him upon acts of submission, which will be called Meanness. And what woman of true spirit would like to have it said, that she would impose any thing upon the man from whom she one day expects protection and defence, that should be capable of being construed as a meanness, or unmanly abjectness in his behaviour, even to herself?---Nay, I am not sure, and I ask it of you, my dear, to resolve me, whether, in your own opinion, it is not likely, that a woman of spirit will despise rather than value more, the man who will take patiently

m

11

fer

ple

thi

at

ain

mu

Lor

agre

patiently an infult at her hands; especially before

company.

I have always observed, that prejudices in disfavour of a person at his first appearance, six deeper, and are much more difficult to be removed when sixed, than prejudices in favour: Whether owing to envy, or to that malignant principle so eminently visible in little minds, which makes them wish to bring down the more worthy characters to their own low level, I pretend not to determine. When once, therefore, a woman of your good sense gives room to the world to think she has not an high opinion of the Lover, whom, nevertheless, she entertains, it will be very difficult for her afterwards, to make that world think so well as she would have it, of the Husband she has chosen.

Give me leave to observe, that to condescend with dignity, and to command with such kindness, and sweetness of manners, as should let the condescension, while in a single state, be seen and acknowledged, are points, which a wise woman, knowing ber man should aim at: And a wise woman, I should think, would chuse to live single all her life rather than give herself to a man whom she thinks unworthy of a treatment so noble.

But when a woman lets her lover see, that she has the generosity to approve of and reward a well-meant service; that she has a mind that lists her above the little captious follies, which some (too licentiously, I hope) attribute to the Sex in general: That she resents not (if ever she thinks she has reason to be displeased) with petulance, or through pride: Nor thinks it necessary to insist upon little points, to come at or secure great ones, perhaps not proper to be aimed at: Nor leaves room to suppose she has so much cause to doubt her own merit, as to put the Love of the man she intends to savour, upon disagreeable or arrogant trials: But lets Reason be the

C

CE

ev

it

ret

qui

Wit

men

than

mar

felf,

well

Ido

I

one 1

the principal guide of her actions---She will then never fail of that true respect, of that sincere veneration, which she wishes to meet with; and which will make her judgment after Marriage consulted, sometimes with a preserence to a man's own; at other times, as a delightful confirmation of his.

And so much, my beloved Miss Howe, for this sub-

ject now, and I dare fay, for ever!

I will begin another Letter by-and-by, and send both together. Mean time, I am, &c.

LETTER LXVII.

Miss CLARISSA HARLOWE, To Miss Howe.

IN this Letter the Lady acquaints Miss Howe with Mr. Brand's Report; with her Sister's Proposals either that she will go abroad, or prosecute Mr. Lovelace. She complains of the severe Letters of her Uncle Antony and her Sister; but in milder terms than they deserved.

She fends her Dr. Lewen's Letter, and the Copy of

ber Answer to it.

She tells her of the difficulties she had been under to avoid seeing Mr. Lovelace. She gives her the contents of the Letter she wrote to him to divert him from his proposed visit: She is afraid, she says, that it is a step that is not strictly right, if Allegory or Metaphor he not allowable to one in her circumstances.

She informs her of her Cousin Morden's arrival and readiness to take her part with her relations; of his designed interview with Mr. Lovelace; and tells her what her apprehensions are upon it.

She gives her the purport of the conversation between her Aunt Hervey and Mrs. Norton. And then adds:

But were they ever fo favourably inclined to me now,

now, what can they do for me? I wish, and that for their sakes more than for my own, that they would yet relent—But I am very ill—I must drop my Pen—A sudden Faintness overspreads my heart—Excuse my crooked writing!—Adieu, my dear!—Adieu!

Three o'clock, Friday.

ONCE more, I resume my pen. I thought I had taken my last farewel of you. I never was so very oddly affected: Something that seemed totally to overwhelm my faculties---I don't know how to describe it---I believe I do amiss in writing so much, and takeing too much upon me: But an active mind, tho' clouded by bodily illness, cannot be idle.

I'll fee if the Air, and a discontinued attention, will help me. But if it will not, don't be concerned for me, my dear. I shall be happy. Nay, I am more so already, than of late I thought I could ever be in this life.--- Yet how this body close!---How

it incumbers!

to

rt

be

if

er

nd

of

nd

eent

ben

me

W,

Seven o'clock.

I could not fend this Letter away with so melancholy an ending, as you would have thought it. So I deferred closing it, till I saw how I should be on my return from my Airing: And now I must say, I am quite another thing: So alert !---that I could proceed with as much spirit as I began, and add more preachment to your lively subject, if I had not written more than enough upon it already.

I wish you would let me give you and Mr. Hickman joy. Do, my dear. I should take some to my-

self, if you would.

My respectful compliments to all your friends, as well to those I have the honour to know, as to those I do not know.

I HAVE just now been surprised with a Letter from one whom I long ago gave up all thoughts of hearing

0

e

fo

fa

to

d

tl

d

V

W

d

I

y

m

II

ra

CI

90

cr

ar

tw

Se

no

fo

fic

of

re

from. From Mr. Wyerley. I will inclose it. You'll be furprised at it, as much as I was. This feems to be a man whom I might have reclaimed. But I could not love him. Yet I hope I never treated him with arrogance. Indeed, my dear, if I am not too partial to myself, I think I refused him with more gentleness, than you retain fomebody else. And this recollection gives me less pain than I should have had in the other case, on receiving this instance of a generosity that affects me. I will also inclose the rough draught of my Answer, as soon as I have transcribed it.

If I begin another sheet, I shall write to the end of it: Wherefore I will only add, my prayers for your honour and prosperity, and for a long, long, happy life; and that, when it comes to be wound up, you may be as calm and as easy at quitting it, as I hope in God I shall be. I am, and will be, to the latest

moment,

Your truly affectionate and obliged Servant,

LETTER LXVIII.

Mr. WYERLEY, To Miss CLARISSA HARLOWS. Dearest Madam, Wednesday, Aug. 23.

VOU will be surprised to find renewed, at this distance of time, an address so positively though fo politely discouraged: But, however it be received, I must renew it. Every-body has heard, that you have been vilely treated by a man, who, to treat you ill, must be the vilest of men. Every-body knows your just resentment of his base treatment: That you are determined never to be reconciled to him: And that you perfift in these sentiments against all the entreaties of his noble relations, against all the prayers and repentance of his ignoble felf. And all the world that have the honour to know you, or have heard of him, applaud your resolution, as worthy of yourself; worthy thy of your virtue, and of that strict honour which was always attributed to you by every one who spoke

of you.

18

h

d,

10

10

91

at

es

-9

at

m,

But, Madam, were all the world to have been of a different opinion, it could never have altered mine. I ever loved you; I ever must love you. Yet have I endeavoured to refign to my hard fate. When I had fo many ways, in vain, fought to move you in my favour, I fat down, feemingly contented. I even wrote to you, that I would fit down contented. And I endeavoured to make all my friends and companions think I was. But nobody knows what pangs this felf: denial cost me! In vain did the Chace, in vain did Travel, in vain did lively Company, offer themselves, and were embraced in their turn: With redoubled force did my passion for you renew my unhappiness, when Ilooked into myfelf, into my own heart; for there did your charming image fit enthroned; and you engroffed me all.

I truly deplore those misfortunes, and those sufferings, for your own fake; which, nevertheless, encourage me to renew my bold hope. I know not particulars. I dare not enquire after them; because my fufferings would be encreased with the knowlege of what yours have been. I therefore defire not to know more than what common report wounds my ears with; and what is given me to know, by your absence from your cruel family, and from the Sacred Place, where I, among numbers of your rejected admirers, used to be twice a week fure to behold you doing credit to that Service of which your Example gave me the highest notions. But whatever be those misfortunes, of whatsoever nature those sufferings, I shall bless the occafion for my own fake (tho' for yours curse the author of them) if they may give me the happiness to know, that this my renewed address may not be absolutely rejected .-- Only give me hope, that it may one day meet with encouragement, if in the interim nothing happen,

t

C

0

d

m

be

de

the

ple

my

abl

the

happen, either in my morals or behaviour, to give you fresh offence. Give me but hope of this--Not absolutely to reject me is all the hope I ask for; and I will love you, if possible, still more than I ever loved you---And that for your sufferings; for well you deferve to be loved, even to adoration, who can, for Honour's and for Virtue's sake, subdue a passion which common spirits [I speak by cruel experience] find invincible; and this at a time when the black offender kneels and supplicates, as I am well assured he does (all his friends likewise supplicating for him) to be forgiven.

That you cannot forgive him, not forgive him so as to receive him again to favour, is no wonder. His offence is against Virtue: This is a part of your elfence. What magnanimity is this! How just to yourself, and to your spotless character! Is it any merit to admire more than ever a Lady who can so exaltedly distinguish? It is not. I cannot plead it.

What hope have I left, may it be faid, when my address was before rejected, now, that your sufferings, fo nobly borne, have, with all good judges, exalted your character? Yet, Madam, I have to pride myself in this, That while your friends (not looking upon you in the just light I do) persecute and banish you; while your Estate is with-held from you, and threatened (28 I know) to be with-held, as long as the chicaning Law, or rather the chicaneries of its practifers, can keep-it from you: While you are destitute of protection; every-body standing aloof, either thro' fear of the injurer of one family, or of the hard-hearted of the other; I pride myself, I say, to stand forth, and offer my Fortune, and my Life, at your devotion. With a selfish hope indeed: I should be too great an hypocrite not to own this! And I know how much you abhor infincerity.

But, whether you encourage that hope or not, accept my best services, I beseech you, Madam: And

be pleased to excuse me for a piece of honest Art, which the nature of the case (doubting the honour of your notice otherwise) makes me chuse to conclude with---It is this:

If I am to be still the most unhappy of men, let your pen by one line tell me so. If I am permitted to indulge a hope, however distant, your silence shall be deemed by me, the happiest indication of it that you can give---Except that still happier---(the happiest that can befal me) a signification that you will accept the tender of that Life and Fortune, which it would be my pride and my glory to sacrifice in your service, leaving the reward to your self.

Be your determination as it may, I must for ever admire and love you. Nor will I ever change my condition, while you live, whether you change yours or not: For, having once had the presumption to address You, I cannot stoop to think of any other weman: And this I solemnly declare in the presence of that God, whom I daily pray to bless and protect you, be your determination what it will with regard to,

0

y

8,

11

in

u

le

ng an

0-

Par

ed

th,

on.

an

ich

2C-

ind be Your most devoted and ever-affectionate and faithful Servant,

ALEXANDER WYERLEY.

LETTER LXIX.

Miss Cl. Harlowe, To Alex. Wyerley, Esq; Sir, Saturday, Aug. 26.

THE generofity of your purpose would have commanded not only my notice, but my thanks, although you had not given me the alternative you are pleased to call artful. And I do therefore give you my thanks for your kind Letter.

At the time you diftinguished me by your favourable opinion, I told you, Sir, that my choice was the Single Life. And most truly did I tell you so.

When

When that was not permitted me, and I looked round upon the several gentlemen who had been proposed to me, and had reason to believe that there was not one of them against whose morals or principles there lay not some exception, it would not have been much to be wondered at, if FANCY had been allowed to give a preference, where JUDGMENT was at a loss to determine.

Far be it from me to fay this with a defign to upbraid you, Sir, or to reflect upon you. I always wished you well. You had reason to think I did. You had the generosity to be pleased with the frankness of my behaviour to you; as I had with that of yours to me: And I am forry, very forry, to be now told, that the acquiescence you obliged me with, gave you so much pain.

Had the option I have mentioned been allowed me afterwards (as I not only wished, but proposed) things had not happened that did happen. But there was a kind of fatality by which our whole family was impelled, as I may say; and which none of us were permitted to avoid. But this is a subject that cannot

0

uí

and

tati

the

by t

realc

gel a

I

negle

(a) i

Vo

be dwelt upon.

As matters are, I have only to wish, for your own sake, that you will encourage and cultivate those good motions in your mind, to which many passages in your kind and generous Letter now before me, must be owing. Depend upon it, Sir, that such motions wrought into Habit, will yield you pleasure at a time when nothing else can. And at present, shining out in your actions and conversation, will commend you to the worthiest of our Sex. For, Sir, the man who is good upon choice, as well as by education, has that quality in himself, which ennobles the human race, and without which the most dignified by birth or rank are ignoble.

As to the resolution you solemnly make not to marry while I live, I should be concerned at it, were I not morally fure, that you may keep it, and yet not be detrimented by it: Since a few, a very few days, will convince you, that I am got above all human dependence; and that there is no need of that protection and favour, which you so generously offer to, Sir,

Your obliged Well-wisher, and humble Servant, CL. HARLOWE.

LETTER LXX.

Mr. LOVELACE, To JOHN BELFORD, Efq;

Monday Noon, Aug. 28.

A BOUT the time of poor Belton's interment last night, as near as we could guess, Lord M. Mowbray and Myself toasted once, To the Memory of bonest Tom Belton; and, by a quick transition to the living, Health to Miss Harlowe; which Lord M. obligingly began, and, To the Happy Reconciliation; and then we stuck in a remembrance To bonest Jack Belford, who, of late, we all agreed, is become an useful and humane man; and one who prefers his friend's service to his own.

But what is the meaning I hear nothing from thee (a)? And why doft thou not let me into the grounds of the fudden Reconciliation between my Beloved and her Friends, and the cause of the generous invitation which she gives me of attending her at her Father's former in the state of the state

ther's fome time hence ?

Thou must certainly have been let into the Secret by this time; and I can tell thee, I shall be plaguy jealous if there be any one thing pass between my Angel and thee, that is to be concealed from me. For either I am a principal in this cause, or I am nothing.

I have dispatched Will. to know the reason of thy

neglect.

H

rt

n

nd

in

ıft

ns

me

ut

ou

ho

hat

ce,

nk

to

ere

(a) Mr. Belford had not yet fent him his last-written Letter. His teason for which see p. 207.

Vol. VII. M But,

But, let me whisper a word or two in thy ear. I begin to be askaid, after all, that this Letter was a stratagem to get me out of town, and for nothing else: For, in the sirst place, Tourville, in a Letter I received this morning, tells me, that the Lady is actually very ill [I am sorry for it with all my soul!] This, thou'lt say, I may think a reason why she cannot set out as yet: But then, I have heard on the other hand but last night, that the family is as implacable as ever; and my Lord and Lexpect this very afternoon a visit from Colonel Morden; who undertakes, it seems, to question me as to my intention with regard to his

m

er

thi

por

to

the

felv

can

ing

once

as to

Love

riffa]

But it

the pi

ceived

Sure i

Up

Cousin.

This convinces me, that if she has apprised her friends of my offers to her, they will not believe me to be in earnest, till they are affured that I am so from my own mouth. But then I understand, that the intended visit is an officiousness of Morden's own, without the desire of any of her friends.

Now, Jack, what can a man make of all this? My intelligence as to the continuance of her family's implacableness is not to be doubted; and yet when I read her Letter, what can one fay!---Surely, the dear

little rogue will not lye!

I never knew her dispense with her word, but once: And that was, when she promised to forgive me after the dreadful Fire that had like to have happened at our Mother's, and yet would not see me the next day, and afterwards made her escape to Hampstead, in order to avoid forgiving me: And as she severely smarted for this departure from her honour given (for it is a sad thing for good people to break their word when it is in their power to keep it) one would not expect, that she should set about deceiving again; more especially by the premeditation of writing. Thou, perhaps, wilt ask, What honest man is obliged to keep his promise with a Highwayman? for well I know thy unmannerly way of making comparisons: But I say,

every honest man is --- And I will give thee an illu-firation.

Here is a marauding varlet, who demands your money, with a pistol at your breast. You have neither money nor valuable effects about you; and promise solemnly, if he will spare your life, that you will send him an agreed-upon sum, by such a day, to such a place.

The question is, If your life is not in the fellow's

power?

ar

e:

er

at

IV.

ler

ted

5 2

n it

et,

pe-

er-

eep

hy

ay,

ery

How he came by the power is another question; for which he must answer with his life when caught---

So he runs risque for risque.

Now if he give you your life, does he not give, think you, a valuable confideration for the money you engage your honour to fend him! If not, the fum must be exorbitant, or your life is a very paltry one, even in your own opinion.

I need not make the application; and I am fure, that even thou thyself, who never sparest me, and thinkest thou knowest my heart by thy own, canst not possibly put the case in a stronger light against me.

Then, why do good people take upon themselves to censure, as they do, persons less scrupulous than themselves? Is it not because the latter allow themselves in any liberty, in order to carry a point? And can my not doing my duty, warrant another for not do-

ing his? --- Thou wilt not fay it can.

And how would it found, to put the case as strongly once more, as my greatest enemy would put it, both as to fact and in words---Here has that profligate wretch Lovelace broken his vow with and deceived Miss Clanissa Harlowe.---A vile fellow! would an enemy say: But it is like him. But when it comes to be said, that the pious Clarissa has broken her word with and deceived Lovelace; Good Lord! would every one say!

Sure it cannot be!

Upon my Soul, Jack, fuch is the veneration I have
M 2 for

for this admirable woman, that I am shocked barely at putting the case---And so wilt thou, if thou respectes there as thou oughtest: For thou knowest, that men and women, all the world over, form their opinions of one another, by each person's professions and known practices. In this Lady therefore it would be as unpardonable to tell a wilful untruth, as it would be strange if I keep my word.---In Love-cases, I mean: for as to the rest, I am an honest moral man, as all who know me can testify.

And what, after all, would this Lady deserve if she has deceived me in this case? For did she not set me prancing away upon Lord M's best nag, to Lady Sarah's, and to Lady Betty's, with an erect and triumphing countenance, to shew them her Letter to me?

And let me tell thee, that I have received their congratulations upon it: Well, and now, Cousin Lovelace, cries one; Well, and now, Cousin Lovelace, cries t'other; I hope you'll make the best of Husbands to so excellent and so forgiving a Lady!---And now we shall soon have the pleasure of looking upon you as a reformed man, added one! And now we shall see you in the way we have so long wished you to be in, cried out the other!

My Cousins Montague also have been ever since rejoicing in the new relationship. Their charming Cousin, and their lovely Cousin, at every word! And how dearly they will love her! What lessons they will take from her! And yet Charlotte, who pretends to have the eye of an eagle, was for finding out some mystery in the style and manner, till I over-

bore her, and laughed her out of it.

As for Lord M. he has been in hourly expectation of being fent to with propofals of one fort or other from the Harlowes: And still we have it, that such proposals will be made by Colonel Morden when he comes; and that the Harlowes only put on a face of irreconcileableness, till they know the issue of Morden's visit, in order to make the better terms with us.

Yo by

four

Iha

very

he w

was the y

T

Indeed, if I had not undoubted reason, as I said, to believe the continuance of their antipathy to me, and implacableness to ber, I should be apt to think there might be some soundation for my Lord's conjecture; for there is a cursed deal of low cunning in all that samily, except in the Angel of it; who has so much generosity of Soul, that she despites Cunning,

both name and thing.

What I mean by all this, is, to let thee see, what a stupid sigure I shall make to all my own family, if my Clarissa has been capable, as Gulliver in his abominable Yahoo Story phrases it, of saying the thing that is not. By my Soul, Jack, if it were only that I should be outwitted by such a novice at plotting, and that it would make me look silly to my kinswomen here, who know I value myself upon my contrivances, it would vex me to the heart; and I would instantly clap a feather-bed into a coach-and-six, and fetch her away, sick or well, and marry her at my leisure. But Col. Morden is come, and I must break off.

LETTER LXXI.

Mr. BELFORD, To ROBERT LOVELACE, Efq;

Monday Night, Aug. 28.

Doubt you will be all impatience, that you have not heard from me fince mine of Thursday last. You would be still more so, if you knew that I had

by me a Letter ready-written.

g

!!

ns

ng

1.

ner

ich

he

of

010

115.

I went early yesterday morning to Epsom; and sound every-thing disposed according to the directions I had lest on Friday; and at night the solemn office was performed. Tourville was there; and behaved very decently, and with greater concern than I thought he would ever have expressed for any-body.

Thomasine, they told me, in a kind of disguise, was in an obscure pew, out of curiosity (for it seems the was far from shewing any tokens of grief) to see the

M 3

last office performed for the man whose heart she had

fo largely contributed to break.

I was obliged to stay till this afternoon, to settle several necessary matters, and to direct inventories to be taken, in order for appraisement; for every-thing is to be turned into money, by his Will. I presented his Sister with the hundred guineas the poor man lest me as his Executor, and desired her to continue in the house, and take the direction of every-thing, till I could hear from his Nephew at Antigua, who is Heir at Law. He had lest her but Fifty Pounds, altho' he knew her indigence; and that it was owing to a vile Husband, and not to herself, that she was indigent.

The poor man left about two hundred pounds in money, and two hundred pounds in two East-India bonds; and I will contrive, if I can, to make up the poor woman's fifty pounds, and my hundred guineas, two hundred pounds to her; and then she will have some little matter coming in certain, which I will oblige her to keep out of the hands of a Son, who has completed that ruin which his Father had very

near effected.

I gave Tourville his twenty pounds, and will fend

t

n

d

h

h:

you and Mowbray yours by the first order.

And so much for poor Belton's affairs till I see you. I got to town in the Evening, and went directly to Smith's. I found Mrs. Lovick and Mrs. Smith in the back-shop, and I saw they had been both in tears. They rejoiced to see me, however; and told me, that the Doctor and Mr. Goddard were but just gone; as was also the worthy Clergyman, who often comes to pray by her; and all three were of opinion, that she would hardly live to see the entrance of another week. I was not so much surprized as grieved; for I had seared as much when I left her on Saturday.

I fent up my compliments; and the returned, that the would take it for a favour if I would call upon her in

1

10

ry.

be

u.

to

in

TS.

ne,

ne;

nes

hat

her

for

hat

her

in the morning, by Eight o'clock. Mrs. Lovick told me, that she had fainted away on Saturday, while she was writing, as she had done likewise the day before; and having received benefit then by a little turn in a chair, she was carried abroad again. She returned somewhat better; and wrote till late; yet had a pretty good night; and went to Covent-garden Church in the morning: But came home so ill, that she was obliged to lie down.

When she arose, seeing how much grieved Mrs. Lovick and Mrs. Smith were for her, she made apologies for the trouble she gave them—You were happy, said she, before I came hither. It was a cruel thing in me to come among honest strangers, and to

be fick and die with you.

When they touched upon the irreconcileableness of her friends, I have had ill offices done me to them, faid she, and they do not know how ill I am; nor will they believe any-thing I should write. But yet I cannot fometimes forbear thinking it a little hard, that out of fo many near and dear friends as I have living, not one of them will vouchfafe to look upon me. No old fervant, no old friend, proceeded the, to be permitted to come near me, without being fure of incurring displeasure! And to have such a great work to go thro' by myself, a young creature as I am, and to have every-thing to think of as to my temporal matters, and to order, to my very interrment! No dear Mother, faid the sweet sufferer, to pray by me and bless me!--- No kind Sifter to footh and comfort me !- But come, recollected she, how do I know but all is for the best-If I can but make a right use of my discomforts ?- Pray for me, Mrs. Lovick-Pray for me, Mrs. Smith, that I may-I have great need of your prayers .-- This cruel man has discomposed me. His persecutions have given me a pain just here [putting her hand to her heart] What a step has he made me take to avoid him!---M. 4

Who can touch pitch, and not be defiled? He has made a bad spirit take possession of me, I think--- Broken in upon all my duties. And will not yet, I doubt. let me be at reft. Indeed he is very cruel--- But, this is one of my trials, I believe. By God's grace, I shall be easier to-morrow, and especially if I have no more of his tormentings, and if I can get a tolerable night. And I will fit up till Eleven, that I may.

She faid, That tho' this was fo heavy a day with her, she was at other times, within these few days past especially, bleffed with bright hours; and particularly, that the had now-and-then fuch joyful affurances (which she hoped were not presumptuous ones) that God would receive her to his mercy, that fhe could hardly contain herfelf, and was ready to think herfelf above this earth while she was in it: And what, inferred she to Mrs. Lovick, must be the State itself, the very aspirations after which have often cast a beamy light thro' the thickest darkness, and when I have been at the lowest ebb, have dispelled the black clouds of despondency ?--- as I hope they soon will this fpirit of repining.

She had a pretty good night it feems; and this morning went in a chair to St. Dunstan's Church.

The chairmen told Mrs. Smith, that after prayers (for the did not return till between Nine and Ten) they carried her to a house in Fleet-street, whither they never waited on her before. And where dost think this was? - - Why to an Undertaker's! Good Heaven! what a woman is this! She went into the back-shop, and talked with the master of it about half an hour, and came from him with great ferenity; he waiting upon her to her chair with a respectful countenance, but full of curiofity and feriousness.

"Tis evident, that she then went to bespeak her bouse that she talked of (a)--- As soon as you can, Sir, were her words to him as she got into the chair. Mrs.

Mrs. Smith told me this with the same surprize and

grief that I heard it.

She was very ill in the afternoon, having got cold either at St. Dunstan's, or at Chapel, and sent for the Clergyman to pray by her; and the women, unknown to her, sent both for Dr. H. and Mr. Goddard: Who were just gone, as I told you, when I came to pay my respects to her this evening.

And thus have I recounted from the good women

what paffed to this night fince my absence.

I long for to-morrow, that I may see her: And yet 'tis such a melancholy longing, as I never experienced, and know not how to describe.

Tuesday, Aug. 29.

I was at Smith's at half an hour after Seven. They told me that the Lady was gone in a chair to St. Dunstan's; but was better than she had been in either of
the two preceding days; and that she said to Mrs.
Lovick and Mrs. Smith, as she went into the chair,
I have a good deal to answer for to you, my good
friends, for my vapourish conversation of last night.

If, Mrs. Lovick, faid she, smiling, I have no new matters to discompose me, I believe my spirits will

hold out purely.

She returned immediately after prayers.

Mr. Belford, faid she, as she entered the back-shop where I was (and upon my approaching her) I am very glad to see you. You have been performing for your poor friend a kind last office. 'Tis not long ago since you did the same for a near relation. Is it not a little hard upon you, that these troubles should fall so thick to your lot? But they are charitable offices: And it is a praise to your humanity, that poor dying people know not where to chuse so well.

I told her I was forry to hear she had been so ill fince I had the houour to attend her; but rejoiced to

find, that now she seemed a good deal better.

M 5

It will be fometimes better, and fometimes worse, replied she, with poor creatures, when they are balancing between life and death. But no more of these matters just now. I hope, Sir, you'll breakfast with me. I was quite vapourish yesterday. I had a very bad spirit upon me. Had I not, Mrs. Smith? But I hope I shall be no more so. And to-day I am persectly serene. This day rises upon me as if it would be a bright one.

She defired me to walk up, and invited Mr. Smith and his wife, and Mrs. Lovick also, to breakfast with her. I was better pleased with her liveliness than

with her looks.

The good people retiring after breakfast, the sol-

lowing conversation passed between us.

Pray, Sir, let me ask you, said she, if you think I may promise myself that I shall be no more molested by your friend?

I hefitated: For how could I answer for such a

man?

What shall I do, if he comes again?—You see how I am.—I cannot sly from him now—If he has any pity lest for the poor creature whom he has thus reduced, let him not come.—But have you heard from

him lately? And will he come?

I hope not, Madam. I have not heard from him fince Thursday last, that he went out of town, rejoicing in the hopes your Letter gave him of a Reconciliation between your friends and you, and that he might in good time see you at your father's; and he is gone down to give all his friends joy of the news, and is in high spirits upon it.

Alas for me! I shall then surely have him comeup to persecute me again! As soon as he discovers that That was only a stratagem to keep him away, he will come up; and who knows but even now he is upon the road? I thought I was so bad, that I should have been out of his and every-body's way before now; for

I ex-

at

fay

I expected not, that this contrivance would ferve me above two or three days; and by this time he must have found out, that I am not so happy as to have any hope of a reconciliation with my family; and then he will come, if it be only in revenge for what he will think a deceit, but is not I hope a wicked one.

I believe I looked furprised to hear her confess that her Letter was a stratagem only; for she said, You wonder, Mr. Belford, I observe, that I could be guilty of such an artistice. I doubt it is not right: It was done in a hurry of spirits. How could I see a man who had so mortally injured me; yet, pretending sorrow for his crimes (and wanting to see me) could behave with so much shocking levity, as he did to the honest people of the house? Yet, 'tis strange too, that neither you nor he found out my meaning on perusal of my Letter. You have seen what I wrote, no doubt?

I have, Madam. And then I began to account

for it, as an innocent artifice.

Thus far indeed, Sir, it is innocent, that I meant him no hurt, and had a right to the effect I hoped for from it; and he had none to invade me. But have you, Sir, that Letter of his in which he gives you (as I suppose he does) the Copy of mine?

I have, Madam. And pulled it out of my Lettercase: But hesitating—Nay, Sir, said she, be pleased to read my Letter to yourself---I desire not to see his —and see if you can be longer a stranger to a mean-

ing fo obvious.

d

ap

at

ill

n

ve

or

I re'd it to myself---Indeed, Madam, I can find nothing but that you are going down to Harlowe-Place to be reconciled to your Father and other Friends: And Mr. Lovelace presumed that a Letter from your Sister, which he saw brought when he was at Mr. Smith's, gave you the welcome news of it.

She then explained all to me, and that, as I may fay, in Six words---A religious meaning is couched M 6 under

under it, and that's the reason that neither you nor I could find it out.

Read but for my Father's house, Heaven, said he, and for the interposition of my dear blessed

friend, suppose the Mediation of my Saviour (which

f humbly rely upon); and all the rest of the Letter will be accounted for.' I hope (repeated she) that it is a pardonable artistice. But I am atraid it is not strictly right.

I re'd it so, and stood astonished for a minute at her Invention, her Piety, her Charity, and at thine and

mine own Stupidity, to be thus taken in.

And now, thou vile Lovelace, what hast thou to do (the Lady all consistent with herself, and no hopes lest for thee) but to hang, drown, or shoot thyself, for an outwitted boaster?

My furprize being a little over, she proceeded: As to the Letter that came from my Sister while your friend was here, you will soon see, Sir, that it is the

cruellest Letter she ever wrote me.

And then she expressed a deep concern for what might be the consequence of Col. Morden's intended visit to you; and besought me, that if now, or at any time hereaster, I had opportunity to prevent any surther mischief, without detriment or danger to myself, I would do it.

I affured her of the most particular attention to this and to all her commands; and that in a manner so agreeable to her, that she invoked a blessing upon me for my goodness, as she called it, to a desolate creature who suffered under the worst of Orphanage;

fe

m

m

as

he

to I I

those were her words.

She then went back to her first subject, her uneasiness for fear of your molesting her again; and said, If you have any influence over him, Mr. Belford, prevail upon him, that he will give me the assurance, that the short remainder of my time shall be all my own. I have need of it. Indeed I have. Why will he wish to interrupt me in my duty? Has he not punished me enough for my preserence of him to all his Sex? Has he not destroyed my same and my fortune? And will not his causless vengeance upon me be complete, unless he ruin my Soul too?—Excuse me, Sir, for this vehemence! But indeed it greatly imports me, to know that I shall be no more disturbed by him. And yet, with all this aversion, I would sooner give way to his visit, though I were to expire the moment I saw him, than to be the cause of any fatal misunderstanding between you and him.

I affured her, that I would make fuch a representation of the matter to you, and of the state of her health, that I would undertake to answer for you, that

you would not attempt to come near her.

And for this reason, Lovelace, do I lay the whole matter before you, and desire you will authorize me,, as soon as this and mine of Saturday last come to your

hands, to diffipate her fears.

This gave her a little satisfaction; and then she said, that had I not told her that I could promise for you, she was determined, ill as she is, to remove somewhere out of my knowlege as well as out of yours. And yet, to have been obliged to leave people I am but just got acquainted with, said the poor Lady, and to have died among perfect strangers, would have:

completed my hardships.

This conversation, I found, as well from the length, as the nature of it, had satigued her; and seeing her change colour once or twice, I made that my excuse, and took leave of her: Desiring her permission, however, to attend her in the evening; and as often as possible; for I could not help telling her, that every time I saw her, I more and more considered her as a beatissed spirit; and as one sent from Heaven to draw me after her out of the miry gulph in which I had been so long immersed.

And laugh at me if thou wilt; but it is true, that

her, as one just entering into a Companionship with Saints and Angels. This thought so wholly possessed me, that I could not help begging, as I went away, her prayers and her blessing; with the reverence due to an Angel.

In the evening, she was so low and weak, that I took my leave of her, in less than a quarter of an hour. I went directly home. Where, to the pleafure and wonder of my Cousin and her Family, I now pass many honest evenings: Which they impute to

your being out of town.

I shall dispatch my packet to-morrow morning early by my own servant, to make thee amends for the suspense I must have kept thee in: Thou'lt thank me for that, I hope; but wilt not, I am sure, for send-

ing thy fervant back without a Letter.

I long for the particulars of the conversation between you and Mr. Morden: The Lady, as I have hinted, is full of apprehensions about it. Send me back this packet when perused; for I have not had either time or patience to take a copy of it.---And I beseech you enable me to make good my engagements to the poor Lady that you will not invade her again.

LETTER LXXII.

Mr. BELFORD, To ROBERT LOVELACE, E/q;

Wednesday, Aug. 30.

I HAVE a conversation to give you that passed between this admirable Lady and Dr. H. which will furnish a new instance of the calmness and serenity with which she can talk of death, and prepare for it, as if it were an occurrence as familiar to her as drefsing and undressing.

As foon as I had dispatched my servant to you with my Letters of the 26th, 28th, and yesterday the

29th,

e

F

1

h

n

0

t

3

11

fi

fe

tl

fc

th

n

h

ar

th

m

20th, I went to pay my duty to her, and had the pleasure to find her, after a tolerable night, pretty lively and chearful. She was but just returned from her usual devotions. And Doctor H. alighted as she entered the door.

After enquiring how she did, and hearing her complaints of shortness of breath (which she attributed to inward decay, precipitated by her late harasses, as well from her friends as from you) he was for advising

her to go into the air.

What will that do for me? faid she: Tell me truly, good Sir, with a chearful aspect (you know you cannot disturb me by it) whether now you do not put on the true physician; and, despairing that anything in Medicine will help me, advise me to the Air, as the last resource?---Can you think the Air will avail in such a malady as mine?

He was filent.

r

h,

I ask, said she, because my friends (who will possibly some time hence enquire after the means I used for my recovery) may be satisfied that I omitted nothing which so worthy and so skilful a physician prescribed?

The Air, Madam, may possibly help the difficulty

of breathing, which has fo lately attacked you.

But, Sir, you fee how weak I am. You must fee that I have been consuming from day to day; and now, if I can judge by what I feel in myself, putting her hand to her heart, I cannot continue long. If the Air would very probably add to my days, the I am far from being desirous to have them lengthened, I would go into it; and the rather, as I know Mrs. Lovick would kindly accompany me. But if I were to be at the trouble of removing into new lodgings (a trouble which I think now would be too much for me) and this only to die in the country, I had rather the Scene were to be shut up here. For here have I meditated the spot, and the manner, and every-thing,

23

1

0

n

I

W

N

I

pa

no

011

no

yo

he

as well of the minutest as of the highest consequence, that can attend the solemn moments. So Doctor, tell me truly, May I stay here, and be clear of any imputations of curtailing, through wilfulness or impatiency, or through resentments which I hope I am got above, a life that might otherwise be prolonged?—Tell me, Sir; you are not talking to a coward in this respect; indeed you are not!—Unaffectedly smiling.

The Doctor turning to me, was at a loss what to fay, lifting up his eyes only in admiration of her.

Never had any patient, faid she, a more indulgent and more humane physician—But since you are lost to answer my question directly, I will put it in other words—You don't enjoin me to go into the Air, Doc-

tor, do you?

I do not, Madam. Nor do I now visit you as a physician; but as a person whose conversation I admire, and whose sufferings I condole. And to explain myself more directly, as to the occasion of this day's visit in particular, I must tell you, Madam, that, understanding how much you suffer by the displeasure of your friends; and having no doubt, but that if they knew the way you are in, they would alter their conduct to you; and believing it must cut them to the heart, when, too late, they shall be informed of every-thing; I have resolved to apprise them by Letter (stranger as I am to their persons) how necessary it is for some of them to attend you very speedily. For their sakes, Madam, let me press for your approbation of this measure.

She paused; and at last said, This is kind, very kind, in you, Sir. But I hope that you do not think me so perverse, and so obstinate, as to have lest till now any means unessayed, which I thought likely to move my friends in my savour. But now, Doctor, said she, I should be too much disturbed at their grief, if they were any of them to come or to send

S

d

t

.

1)

1

11

0

11

d

0

to me: And perhaps, if I found they still loved me, wish to live; and so should quit unwillingly that life, which I am now really fond of quitting, and hope to quit, as becomes a person who has had such a wean-

ing-time as I have been favoured with.

I hope, Madam, faid I, we are not so near as you apprehend, to that deplorable catastrophe you hint at with such an amazing presence of mind. And therefore I presume to second the Doctor's motion, if it were only for the sake of your Father and Mother, that they may have the satisfaction, if they must lose you, to think, they were first reconciled to you.

It is very kindly, very humanely confidered, faid she. But, if you think me not so very near my last hour; let me defire this may be postponed till I see what effect my Cousin Morden's mediation may have. Perhaps he may vouchfafe to make me a visit yet; after his intended interview with Mr. Lovelace is over; of which, who knows, Mr. Belford, but your next Letters may give an account? I hope it will not be a fatal one to any-body. Will you promise me, Doctor, to forbear writing for two days only, and I will communicate to you any-thing that occurs in that time; and then you shall take your own way? Mean time, I repeat my thanks for your goodness to me.-Nay, dear Doctor, hurry not away from me so precipitately [for he was going, for fear of an offered fee]: I will no more affront you with tenders that have pained you for some time past: And since I must now, from this kindly offered favour, look upon you only as a friend, I will affure you henceforth, that I will give you no more uneafiness on that head: And now, Sir, I know I shall have the pleasure of seeing you oftener than heretofore.

The worthy gentleman was pleased with this affurance, telling her, that he had always come to see her with great pleasure, but parted with her, on the account she hinted at, with as much pain; and that

.Vol. 7.

he should not have forborn to double his visits, could he have had this kind affurance as early as he wished for it.

There are few instances of like disinterestedness, I doubt, in this tribe. Till now I always held it for gospel, That friendship and physician were incompatible things; and little imagined, that a man of medicine, when he had given over his patient to death, would think of any visits but those of ceremony, that he might stand well with the family, against it came to their turns to go through his turnpike.

After the Doctor was gone, she fell into a very serious discourse of the vanity of life, and the wisdom of preparing for death, while health and strength remained, and before the infirmities of body impaired the faculties of the mind, and disabled them from acting with the necessary efficacy and clearness: The whole calculated for every one's meridian, but particularly, as it was easy to observe, for Thine and Mine.

She was very curious to know further particulars of the behaviour of poor Belton in his last moments. You must not wonder at my enquiries, Mr. Belsord, said she; for who is it that is to undertake a journey into a country they never travelled to before, that enquires not into the difficulties of the road, and what accommodations are to be expected in the way?

I gave her a brief account of the poor man's terrors, and unwillingness to die: And when I had done; Thus, Mr. Belford, said she, must it always be, with poor Souls who have never thought of their long voyage till the moment they are to embark for it.

She made fuch other observations upon this subject, as, coming from the mouth of a person who will so soon be a companion for angels, I shall never forget. And indeed, when I went home, that I might en-

graft

I

n

graft them the better on my memory, I entered them down in writing : But I will not let you fee them until you are in a frame more proper to benefit by them,

than you are likely to be in one while.

Thus far I had written, when the unexpected early return of my fervant with your packet (yours and he meeting at Slough, and exchanging Letters) obliged me to leave off to give its contents a reading.-Here, therefore, I close this Letter.

LETTER LXXIII.

Mr. Lovelace, To John Belford, Efq;

Tuesday Morn. Aug. 29.

NOW, Jack, will I give thee an account of what paffed on occasion of the visit made us by Col. Morden.

He came on horseback, attended by one servant; and Lord M. received him as a relation of Miss. Harlowe's, with the highest marks of civility and

respect.

it d

le.

1. ids

VS

115

rk.

a,

10

et.

n-

aft

After some general talk of the times, and of the. weather, and fuch nonfense as Englishmen generally make their introductory topics to conversation, the Colonel addressed himself to Lord M. and to me, as follows:

I need not, my Lord, and Mr. Lovelace, as you: know the relation I bear to the Harlowe family, make any apology for entering upon a fubject, which, on account of that relation, you must think is the principal reason of the honour I have done myself in. this vifit.

Miss Harlowe, Miss Clarissa Harlowe's affair, said Lord M. with his usual forward bluntness. That, Sir, is what you mean. She is, by all accounts, the most excellent woman in the world.

I am glad to hear that is your Lordship's opinion.

of her. It is every one's.

t

n k

V

t

f

1

f

tl

C

n

i

ir

id

It is not only my opinion, Col. Morden (proceeded the prating Peer) but it is the opinion of all my family. Of my Sifters, of my Nieces, and of Mi. Lovelace himfelf.

Gol. Would to Heaven it had been always Mr.

Lovelace's opinion of her!

Lovel. You have been out of England, Colonel, a good many years. Perhaps you are not yet fully

apprised of all the particulars of this case.

Col. I have been out of England, Sir, about Seven years. My Coufin Clary was then about Twelve years of age: But never was there at Twenty fo discreet, so prudent, and so excellent a creature. All that knew her, or faw her, admired her. Mind and Person, never did I fee fuch promifes of perfection in any young Lady: And I am told, nor is it to be wondered at, that as she advanced to maturity, she more than justified and made good those promises.-Then as to Fortune --- what her Father, what her Uncles, and what I myself, intended to do for her, besides what her Grandfather had done --- There is not a finer Fortune in the County.

Lovel. All this, Colonel, and more than this, is Miss Clarissa Harlowe; and had it not been for the implacableness and violence of her family (all resolved to push her upon a match as unworthy of her, as hate-

ful to her) she had still been happy.

Col. I own, Mr. Lovelace, the truth of what you observed just now, that I am not thoroughly acquainted with all that has paffed between you and my Coufin. But permit me to fay, that when I first heard that you made your addresses to her, I knew but of one objection against you. That, indeed, a very great one: And upon a Letter fent me, I gare her my free opinion upon the subject (a). But had it not been for that, I own, that in my private mind, there could not have been a more fuitable match: For

For you are a gallant gentleman, graceful in your person, easy and genteel in your deportment, and inyour family, fortunes, and expectations, happy as a man can wish to be. Then the knowlege I had of you in Italy (altho', give me leave to fay, your conduct there was not wholly unexceptionable) convinces me, that you are brave: And few gentleman come up to you in wit and vivacity. Your education has given you great advantages; your manners are engaging, and you have travelled; and I know, if you'll excuse me, you make better observations than you are governed by. All these qualifications make k not at all furprifing, that a young Lady should love you: And that this Love, joined to that indifcreet warmth wherewith my Cousin's friends would have forced her inclinations in favour of men who are far your inferiors in the qualities I have named, should throw her upon your protection. But then, if there were these two strong motives, the one to induce. the other to impel her, let me ask you, Sir, If the were not doubly entitled to generous usage from a man whom she chose for her protector; and whom, let me take the liberty to fay, the could fo amply reward for the protection he was to afford her?

Lovel. Miss Clarissa Harlowe was entitled, Sir, to the best usage that man could give her. I have no scruple to own it. I will always do her the justice she so well deserves. I know what will be your inference; and have only to say, That time past cannot

be recalled. Perhaps I wish it could.

d

10

The Colonel then in a very manly strain set sorth the wickedness of attempting a woman of virtue and character. He said, that men had generally too many advantages from the weakness, credulity, and inexperience of the sair Sex: That their early Learning, which chiefly consisted in instaming Novels, and idle and improbable Romances, contributed to enerwate and weaken their minds: That his Cousin, however,

1

b

e

fu

b

ar

th

in

tic

do

tha

fay

fpe

wh:

he f

however, he was fure, was above the reach of common seduction, and not to be instruenced to the rashmess her parents accused her of, by weaker motives than their violence, and the most solemn promises on my part: But, nevertheless, having those motives, and her prudence (eminent as it was) being rather the effect of constitution than experience (a fine advantage, however, he said, to ground an unblameable suture life upon) she might not be apprehensive of bad designs, in a man she loved: It was, therefore, a very heinous thing to abuse the considence of such a woman.

He was going on in this trite manner; when, interrupting him, I said; These general observations, Colonel, suit not perhaps this particular case. But you yourself are a man of gallantry; and, possibly, were you to be put to the question, might not be able to vindicate every action of your life, any more than I.

Col. You are welcome, Sir, to put what questions you please to me. And, I thank God, I can both

own and be ashamed of my errors.

Lord M. looked at me; but as the Colonel did not by his manner feem to intend a reflection, I had no occasion to take it for one; especially as I can as readily own my errors, as he, or any man, can his, whether oshamed of them or not.

He proceeded. As you feem to call upon me, Mr. Lovelace, I will tell you (without boafting of it) what has been my general practice, till lately, that I hope

I have reformed it a good deal.

I have taken liberties, which the Laws of Morality will by no means justify; and once I should have thought myself warranted to cut the throat of any young fellow, who should make as free with a Sister of mine, as I have made with the Sisters and Daughters of others. But then I took care never to promise any thing I intended not to perform. A modest ear should

should as soon have heard downright Obscenity from my lips, as Matrimony, if I had not intended it. Young Ladies are generally ready enough to believe we mean honourably, if they love us; and it would look like a strange affront to their virtue and charms, that it should be supposed needful to put the question whether in your address you mean a wife. But when once a man makes a promise, I think it ought to be performed; and a woman is well warranted to appeal to every one against the persidy of a deceiver; and is always sure to have the world of her side.

Now, Sir, continued he, I believe you have for much honour as to own, that you could not have made way to for eminent a virtue, without promising marriage; and that very explicitly and folemnly—

I know very well, Colonel, interrupted I, all you would fay. You will excuse me, I am sure, that I break in upon you, when you find it is to answer the

end you drive at.

r

d

I own to you then, that I have acted very unworthily by Miss Clarissa Harlowe; and I'll tell you surther, that I heartily repent of my ingratitude and baseness to her. Nay, I will say still surther, that I am so grossy culpable as to her, that even to plead, that the abuses and affronts I daily received from her implacable relations, were in any manner a provocation to me to act vitely by her, would be a mean and sow attempt to excuse myself---So low and so mean, that it would doubly condemn me. And if you can say worse, speak it.

He looked upon Lord M. and then upon me, two or three times. And my Lord faid, My kinfman

speaks what he thinks, I'll answer for him.

Lovel. I do, Sir; and what can I fay more? And

what further, in your opinion, can be done?

Col. Done! Sir? Why, Sir, [in a haughty tone he spoke] I need not tell you that Reparation follows

Repentance.

Repentance. And I hope you make no scruple of justifying your fincerity as to the one, by the other.

I hesitated (for I relished not the manner of his speech, and his haughty accent) as undetermined

whether to take proper notice of it or not.

Col. Let me put this question to you, Mr. Lovelace: Is it true, as I have heard it is, That you would marry my Cousin, if she would have you?---What say you, Sir?---

This wound me up a peg higher.

Lovel. Some questions, as they may be put, imply commands, Colonel. I would be glad to know how I am to take yours? And what is to be the end of your interrogatories?

Col. My questions are not meant by me as commands, Mr. Lovelace. The end is, to prevail upon a gentleman to act like a gentleman, and a man of

honour.

Lovel. (briskly) And by what arguments, Sir, do

you propose to prevail upon me?

Col. By what arguments, Sir, prevail upon a gentleman to act like a gentleman!---I am furprised at That question from Mr. Lovelace.

Lovel. Why fo, Sir?

Col. WHY so, Sir! (angrily) --- Let me---

Lovel. (interrupting) I don't chuse, Colonel, to

be repeated upon, in that accent.

Lord M. Come, come, gentlemen, I beg of you to be willing to understand one another. You young gentlemen are so warm---

Col. Not I, my Lord---I am neither very young, nor unduly warm. Your Nephew, my Lord, can make me be every-thing he would have me to be.

Lovel. And that shall be, whatever you please to

be Colonel.

Col. (fiercely) The choice be yours, Mr. Lovelace. Friend or Foe! as you do or are willing to do justice to one of the finest women in the world.

Lord

le

it,

wh

wh

his

mai

to

we:

mitt

Lord M. I guessed from both your characters, what would be the case when you met. Let me interpose, gentlemen, and beg you but to understand one another. You both shoot at one mark; and if you are patient, will both bit it. Let me beg of you, Colonel, to give no challenges—

Col. Challenges, my Lord!—They are things I ever was readier to accept than to offer. But does your Lordship think, that a man so nearly related as I have the honour to be to the most accomplished wo-

man on earth-

Lord M. (interrupting) We all allow the excellencies of the Lady—And we shall all take it as the greatest honour to be allied to her that can be conferred upon us.

Col. So you ought, my Lord!

Lord M. So we ought, Colonel! And so we do!

—And pray let every one do as he ought!—and no more than he ought; and you, Colonel, let me tell

you, will not be fo hafty.

n

0

Lovel. (coolly) Come, come, Col. Morden, don't let this dispute, whatever you intend to make of it, go farther than with you and me. You deliver your-felf in very high terms. Higher than ever I was talked to in my life. But here, beneath this roof, 'twould be inexcuseable for me to take that notice of it, which perhaps it would become me to take elsewhere.

Col. This is spoken as I wish the man to speak, whom I should be pleased to call my Friend, if all his actions were of a piece; and as I would have the man speak, whom I would think it worth my while to call my Foe. I love a man of Spirit, as I love my Soul. But, Mr. Lovelace, as my Lord thinks we aim at one mark, let me say, that were we permitted to be alone for six minutes, I dare say, we Vol. VII.

⁽a) See Orway's Orphan.

should soon understand one another perfectly well.—
And he moved to the door.

Lovel. I am entirely of your opinion, Sir; and will

attend you.

My Lord rung, and stept between us: Colonel, return, I beseech you return, said he: For he had stept out of the room, while my Lord held me—Nephew,

you shall not go out.

The Bell and my Lord's raised voice brought in Mowbray, and Clements, My Lord's gentleman; the former in his careless way, with his hands behind him, What's the matter, Bobby? What's the matter, my Lord?

Only, only, only, stammer'd the agitated Peer, these young gentlemen are, are, are—are young gentlemen, that's all.—Pray, Colonel Morden [who again entered the room with a sedater aspect] let this cause

have a fair tryal, I beseech you.

Col. With all my heart, my Lord.

Mowbray whisper'd me, What is the cause, Bobby?—Shall I take the gentleman to task for thee, my boy?

Not for the world, whisper'd I. The Colonel is a gentleman, and I defire you'll not say one word.

Well, well, well, Bobby, I have done. I can turn thee loose to the best man upon God's earth; that's all, Bobby; strutting off to the other end of the room.

Col. I am forry, my Lord, I should give your Lordship the least uneafiness. I came not with such

a design.

Lord M. Indeed, Colonel, I thought you did, by your taking fire so quickly. I am glad to hear you say you did not. How soon a little spark kindles into a flame; especially when it meets with such combustible spirits!

Col. If I had had the least thought of proceeding to extremities, I am sure Mr. Lovelace would have

given

Y

la

ho

for

the

hor

the

N

Co

langu

does

nour.

ing, th

withou

Col.

1

given me the honour of a meeting where I should have been less an intruder: But I came with an amicable intention;—To reconcile differences, rather than to widen them.

Lovel. Well then, Col. Morden, let us enter upon the subject in your own way. I don't know the man I should sooner choose to be upon terms with, than one whom Miss Clarissa Harlowe so much respects. But I cannot bear to be treated, either in

word or accent, in a menacing way.

Lord M. Well, well, well, gentlemen, this is somewhat like. Angry men make to themselves beds of nettles, and when they lie down in them, are uneasy with every-body. But I hope you are friends. Let me hear you say you are. I am persuaded, Colonel, that you don't know all this unhappy Story. You don't know how desirous my kinsman is, as well as all of us, to have this matter end happily. You don't know, do you, Colonel, that Mr. Lovelace, at all our requests, is disposed to marry the Lady?

Col. At all your requests, my Lord?---I should have hoped, that Mr. Lovelace was disposed to do justice for the sake of justice; and when at the same time the doing of justice was doing himself the highest

honour.

n

e

ar

by

ou

nto

111-

ng

ve

ren

Mowbray lifted up his before half-closed eyes to the Colonel, and glanced them upon me.

Lovel. This is in very high language, Colonel.

Mowbr. By my Soul, I thought fo.

Col High language, Mr. Lovelace? Is it not just

language?

Lovel. It is, Colonel. And I think, the man that does honour to Miss Clarissa Harlowe, does me honour. But, nevertheless, there is a manner in speaking, that may be liable to exception, where the words, without that manner, can bear none.

Col. Your observation in the general is undoubtedly

N 2

just:

just: But if you have the value for my Cousin, that you say you have, you must needs think-

Lovel. You must allow me, Sir, to interrupt you — If I have the value I say I have---I hope, Sir, when I say I have that value, there is no room for that if, pronounced as you pronounced it with an emphasis.

Col. You have broken in upon me twice, Mr. Lovelace. I am as little accustomed to be broken in

upon, as you are to be repeated upon.

Lord M. Two barrels of gunpowder, by my conficience! What a devil will it fignify talking, if thus you are to blow one another up at every wry word?

Lovel. No man of honour, my Lord, will be easy to have his veracity called in question, though but by

implication.

Col. Had you heard me out, Mr. Lovelace, you would have found, that my if was rather an if of inference, than of doubt. But 'tis, really, a strange liberty gentlemen of free principles take; who at the same time that they would resent unto death the imputation of being capable of telling an untruth to a Man, will not scruple to break thro' the most solemn oaths and promises to a Woman. I must assure you, Mr. Lovelace, that I always made a conscience of my yows and promises.

Lovel. You did right, Colonel. But let me tell you, Sir, that you know not the man you talk to, if you imagine he is not able to rife to a proper refentment, when he fees his generous confessions taken for

a mark of base-spiritedness.

Col. (warmly and with a fneer) Far be it from me, Mr. Lovelace, to impute to you the baseness of spirit you speak of; for what would that be, but to imagine, that a man who has done a very slagrant injury, is not ready to shew his bravery in defending it—

Mowbr. This is damn'd severe, Colonel. It is

no

by Jove. I could not take so much at the hands of any man breathing as Mr. Lovelace before this took

at yours.

Gol. Who are You, Sir? What pretence have you to interpole in a cause where there is an acknowleged guilt on one side, and the honour of a considerable family wounded in the tenderest part by that guilt on the other?

Mowbr. (whispering to the Colonel) My dear child, you will oblige me highly, if you will give me the opportunity of answering your question. And was going out.

The Colonel was held in by my Lord. And I

brought in Mowbray.

Col. Pray, my good Lord, let me attend this officious gentleman, I befeech you do. I will wait upon your Lordship in three minutes, depend upon it.

Lovel. Mowbray, is this acting like a friend by me, to suppose me incapable of answering for myself? And shall a man of honour and bravery, as I know Colonel Morden to be (rash as perhaps in this visit he has shewn himself) have it to say, that he comes to my Lord M's house, in a manner naked as to attendants and friends, and shall not for That reason be rather borne with, than insulted? This moment, my dear Mowbray, leave us. You have really no concern in this business; and if you are my friend, I desire you'll ask the Colonel pardon for interfering in it in the manner you have done.

Mowbr. Well, well, Bob; thou shalt be arbiter in this matter. I know I have no business in it---And, Colonel, (holding out his hand) I leave you to one who knows how to defend his own cause as well as any

man in England.

ıt

15

y

Col. (taking Mowbray's band, at Lord M's request)
You need not tell me that, Mr. Mowbray. I have
no doubt of Mr. Lovelace's ability to defend his own

N.3

cause,

cause, were it a cause to be defended. And let me tell you, Mr. Lovelace, that I am assonished to think, that a brave man, and a generous man, as you have appeared to be in two or three instances that you have given in the little knowlege I have of you, should be capable of acting as you have done by the most excellent of her Sex.

Lord M. Well, but, gentlemen, now Mr. Mowbray is gone, and you have both shewn instances of courage and generosity to boot, let me desire you to lay your heads together amicably, and think whether there be any-thing to be done to make all end happily for the Lady?

Lovel. But hold, my Lord, let me fay one thing, now Mowbray is gone; and that is, that I think a gentleman ought not to put up tamely one or two fe-

vere things that the Colonel has faid.

Lord M. What the devil canst thou mean? I thought all had been over. Why thou hast nothing to do, but to confirm to the Colonel, that thou art willing to marry Miss Harlowe, if she will have thee.

Col. Mr. Lovelace will not scruple to say That, I suppose, notwithstanding all that has passed: But if you think, Mr. Lovelace, I have said any-thing I should not have said, I suppose it is this, That the man who has shewn so little of the Thing Honour, to a defenceless unprotected woman, ought not to stand so nicely upon the empty Name of it, with a man who is expostulating with him upon it. I am forry to have cause to say this, Mr. Lovelace; but I would on the same occasion repeat it to a King upon his throne, and surrounded by all his guards.

the mill? more coals upon the fire? You have a mind to quarrel both of you, I fee that. Are you not willing, Nephew, are you not most willing, to marry this Lady, if the can be prevailed upon to have you?

Lovel. Damn me, my Lord, if I'd marry my Empress upon such treatment as this.

Lord M. Why now, Bob, thou art more choleric than the Colonel. It was his turn just now. And now you see he is cool, you are all gunpowder.

Lovel. I own the Colonel has many advantages over me; but, perhaps, there is one advantage he has

not, if it were put to the trial.

Col. I came not hither, as I faid before, to feek the occasion: But if it be offered me, I won't refuse it—And since we find we disturb my good Lord M. I'll take my leave, and will go home by the way of St. Alban's.

Lovel. I'll fee you part of the way, with all my heart,

Colonel.

Col. I accept your civility very chearfully, Mr. Lovelace.

Lord M. (interposing again, as we were both for going out) And what will this do, gentlemen? Suppose you kill one another, will the matter be bettered or worsted by that? Will the Lady be made happier or unhappier, do you think by either or both of your deaths? Your characters are too well known to make fresh instances of the courage of either needful. And, I think, if the honour of the Lady is your view, Colonel, it can be no other way so effectually promoted, as by Marriage. And, Sir, if you would use your interest with her, it is very probable, that you may succeed, tho' nobody else can.

Lovel. I think, my Lord, I have faid all that a man can fay (fince what is passed cannot be recalled;) and you see Col. Morden rises in proportion to my coolness, till it is necessary for me to affert myself, or

even be would despise me.

any way, any method, that you think reasonable and honourable to propose, to bring about a Reconciliation with the Lady? That is what we all wish for. And I can tell you, Sir, it is not a little owing to her family, and to their implacable usage of her, that N 4

her refentments are heightened against my kinsman; who, however, has used her vilely; but is willing to repair her wrongs .---

Lovel. Not, my Lord, for the fake of her family; nor for this gentleman's haughty behaviour; but for her own fake, and in full fense of the wrongs I have

done her.

Gol. As to my haughty behaviour, as you call it, Sir, I am mistaken if you would not have gone beyoud it in the like case, of a relation so meritorious, and fo unworthily injured. And, Sir, let me tell you, that if your motives are not Love, Honour, and Justice, and if they have the least tincture of mean Compation for her, or of an unchearful affent on your part, I am fure it will neither be defired or accepted by a person of my cousin's merit and sense; nor shall I wish that it should.

Lovel. Don't think, Colonel, that I am meanly compounding off a debate, that I should as willingly go thro' with you as to eat or drink, if I have the occasion given me for it: But thus much I will tell you, That my Lord, that Lady Sarah Sadleir, Lady Betty Lawrance, my two Coulins Montague, and myfelf, have written to her in the most solemn and fincere mauner, to offer her fuch terms, as no one but herfelf would refuse, and this long enough before Col. Morden's arrival was dreamt of.

Col. What reason, Sir, may I ask, does she give, against listening to so powerful a mediation, and to

fuch offers?

Livel. It looks like capitulating, or elfe---

Col. It looks not like any fuch thing to me, Mr. Lovelace, who have as good an opinion of your spirit as man can have. And what, pray, is the part I act, and my motives for it? Are they not, in defiring that justice may be done to my Cousin Clarissa Harlowe, that I feek to establish the honour of Mrs. Lovelace, if matters can once be brought to bear?

Lovel.

1.

Lovel. Were the to honour me with her acceptance of That name, Mr. Morden, I should not want you or any man to affert the honour of Mrs. Lovelace.

Cal. I believe it. But till the has honoured you with that acceptance, the is nearer to me than to you, Mr. Lovelace. And I fpeak this, only to fhew you, that in the part I take, I mean rather to deferve your thanks than your displeasure, tho against your felf, were there occasion. Nor ought you to take it amis, if you rightly weigh the matter: For, Sir, whom does a Lady want protection against but her injurers? And who has been her greatest injurer?----Till, therefore, the becomes entitled to your protection, as your Wife, you yourfelf cannot refuse me fome merit in wishing to have justice done my Cousin. But, Sir, you were a going to fay, that if it were not to look like capitulating, you would hint the reasons my Coufin gives against accepting such an honourable mediation?

I then told him of my fincere offers of Marriage: I made no difficulty, I faid, to own my apprehenfions, that my unhappy behaviour to her had great-' ly affected her: But that it was the implacableness: of her friends that had thrown her into despair, and given her a contempt for life.' I told him, 'That ' she had been so good, as to send me a Letter to divertime from a visit my heart was set upon making her: A Letter, on which I built great hopes, because she affured me in it, that she was going to ber. Father's; and that I might fee her there, when she was received, if it were not my own fault?

Col. Is it possible? And were you, Sir, thus ear-

neft? And did she send you such a Letter?

Lord M. confirmed both; and also, that, in obedience to her defire, and that intimation, I had come down without the fatisfaction I had proposed to myfelf in feeing her.

It is very true, Colonel, faid I: And I should have N 5 told told you This before: But your heat made me decline it; for, as I faid, it had an appearance of meanly capitulating with you. An abjectness of heart, of which had I been capable, I should have despised myself as much as I might have expected you would despise me.

Lord M. proposed to enter into the proof of all this: He said, in his phraseological way, That one Story was good, till another was heard: That the Harlowe samily and I, 'twas true, had behaved like so many Orsans to one another; and that they had been very free with all our samily besides: That nevertheless, for the Lady's sake, more than for theirs, or even for mine (he could tell me) he would do greater things for me, than they could ask, if she could be brought to have me: And that this he wanted to declare, and would somer have declared, if he could have brought us fooner to patience, and a good understanding.

The Colonel made excuses for his warmth, on the

fcore of his affection to his Coufin.

My regard for her made me readily admit them: And so a fresh bottle of Burgundy, and another of Champagne, being put upon the table, we sat down in good humour, after all this blustering, in order to enter closer into the particulars of the case: . Which I undertook, at both their desires, to do.

But these things must be the subject of another Letter, which shall immediately follow this, if it do

not accompany it.

bla

Mean time you will observe, That a bad cause gives a man great disadvantages: For I myself think, that the interrogatories put to me with so much spirit by the Colonel, made me look cursedly mean; at the same time that it gave him a superiority which I know not how to allow to the best man in Europe. So that, literally speaking, as a good man would infer, guilt is its own punisher; in that it makes the most lofty spirit look like the miscreant he is--- A good man,

I fay: So, Jack, proleptically I add, Thou haft no right to make the observation.

LETTER LXXIV.

Mr. LOVELACE. In Continuation.

Tuesday Afternoon, Aug. 29.

Went back in this part of our conversation to the day that I was obliged to come down to attend my-Lord, in the dangerous illness which some feared would

have been his laft.

I told the Colonel, 'What earnest Letters I had written to a particular friend, to engage him to pre-' vail upon the Lady not to flip a day that had been ' proposed for the private celebration of our nuptials; and of my Letters (a) written to herfelf on that subject;' for I had stept to my closet, and fetched down all the Letters and Draughts and Copies of Letters relating to this affair.

I read to him ' feveral paffages in the Copies of those Letters, which thou wilt remember make not "a little to my honour.' And I told him, 'That 'I wished I had kept Copies of those to my friend on the same occasion; by which he would have: ' feen how much in earnest I was in my professions. to her, although the would not answer one of-"them.' And thou mayst remember, that one of those four Letters accounted to herself, why I was defirous fhe should remain where I had left her (b).

I then proceeded to give him an account of the ' visit made by Lady Sarah and Lady Betty to Lord M. and me, in order to induce me to do her justice : Of my readiness to comply with their defires; and of their high opinion of her merit: Of the visit " made to Miss Howe by my Cousins Montague, in the name of us all, to engage her interest with her "friend in my behalf: Of my conversation with

⁽⁴⁾ See Letters xiv. xv. xvi, xx. of Vol. VI. (b) See Vol. VI. p. 6gs.

Miss Howe, at a private Assembly, to whom I gave the same assurances, and besought her interest with

her friend.'

I then read the copy of the Letter (tho' so much to my disadvantage) which was written to her by Miss Charlotte Montague, Aug. 1. (a) entreating her alliance in the names of all our family.

This made him ready to think, that his fair Cousin carried her resentment against me too far. He did not imagine, he said, that either myself or our family

had been fo much in earnest.

So thou feest, Belford, that it is but glossing over one part of a Story, and omitting another, that will make a bad cause a good one at any time. What an admirable Lawyer should I have made! And what a poor hand would this charming creature, with all her innocence, have made of it in a Court of Justice against a man who had so much to say and to shew for himself!

I then hinted at the generous annual tender which Lord M. and his Sisters made to his fair Cousin, in apprehension that she might suffer by her friends im-

placablengis.

And his also the Colonel highly applauded, and was pleased to lament the unhappy misunderstanding between the two families, which had made the Harlowes less fond of an alliance with a family of so much honour as this instance shewed ours to be.

I then told him, 'That having, by my friend 'I meaning thee who was admitted into her presence

- (and who had always been an admirer of her vir-
- tues, and had given me such advice from time to time in relation to her as I wished I had followed)
- been affured, that a visit from me would be very
- disagreeable to her, I once more resolved to try what a Letter would do; and that, accordingly,

on the 7th of August I wrote her one.

· This,

⁽a) See Letter xv. of this Volume,

'This, Colone, is the Copy of it. I was then out of humour with my Lord M. and the Ladies of my family. You will therefore read it to your-

6 felf (a).

This Letter gave him high fatisfaction. You write here, Mr. Lovelace, from your heart. "Tis a Letter full of penitence and acknowlegement. Your request is reasonable-- To be forgiven only as you shall appear to deserve it after a time of probation, which you leave to her to fix. Pray, Sir, did she return an Answer to this Letter?

She did, but with reluctance, I own, and not till I had declared by my friend, that if I could not procure one, I would go up to town, and throw myself at her feet.

I wish I might be permitted to see it, Sir, or to hear such parts of it read, as you shall think proper.

Turning over my papers, Here it is, Sir (b). I will make no scruple to put it into your hands.

This is very obliging, Mr. Lovelace.

He read it. My charming Cousin!---How strong her resentments!—Yet how charitable her wishes! Good Heaven! that such an excellent creature---But, Mr. Lovelace, it is to your regret, as much as to mine, I doubt not—

Interrupting him, I fwore that it was.

So it ought, said he. Nor do I wonder that it should be so. I shall tell you by-and-by, proceeded he, how much she suffers with her friends by salse and villainous reports. But, Sir, will you permit me to take with me these two Letters? I shall make use of them to the advantage of you both.

I told him, I would oblige him with all my heart. And this he took very kindly (as he had reason); and put them in his pocket book, promising to return them

in a few days.

I then told him, 'That upon this her refusal, I

⁽a) See Letter xxviii.

278 took upon myself to go to town, in hopes to move

her in my favour; and that, though I went without e giving her notice of my intention, yet had she got

fome notion of my coming, and fo contrived to be out of the way: And at last, when she found I was

fully determined at all events to fee her, before I

went abroad (which I shall do, faid I, if I cannot prevail upon her) she sent me the Letter I have al-

ready mentioned to you, defiring me to fuspend my

· purposed visit: And that for a reason which amazes and confounds me; because I don't find there is any-

thing in it: And yet I never knew her once dif-

pense with her word; for she always made it a

maxim, that it was not lawful to do evil, that good " might come of it: And yet in this Letter, for no

reason in the world but to avoid seeing me (to gratify an humour only) has the fent me out of town,

depending upon the affurance the had given me.'

Col. This is indeed furprifing. But I cannot believe that my Cousin, for fuch an end only, or indeed for any end, according to the character I hear of her, should stoop to make use of such an artifice.

Lovel. This, Colonel, is the thing that aftonishes me; and yet, see here !--- This is the Letter she wrote

me--- Nay, Sir, 'tis her own hand.

Col. I fee it is; and a charming hand it is.

Lovel. You observe, Colonel, that all her hopes of Reconciliation with her parents are from you. You are her dear bleffed friend! She always talked of you

with delight.

Col. Would to Heaven I had come to England be fore the left Harlowe-Place !--- Nothing of this had then happened. Not a man of those whom I have heard that her friends proposed for her, should have had her. Nor you, Mr. Lovelace, unless I had found you to be the man every one who fees you, must wish you to be: And if you had been that man, no one living should I have preferred to you for such an excellence.

1

1

u

fe: th My Lord and I both joined in the wish : And 'faith

I wished it most cordially.

The Colonel read the Letter twice over, and then returned it to me. 'Tis all a mystery, said he. I can make nothing of it. For, alas! her friends are as averse to a Reconciliation as ever.

Lord M. I could not have thought it. But don't you think there is something very favourable to my Nephew in this Letter---Something that looks as if the

Lady would comply at last?

d

e

e

d

10

x-Iy Col. Let me die if I know what to make of it. This Letter is very different from her preceding one?---

You returned an answer to it, Mr. Lovelace?

Lovel. An Answer, Colonel! No doubt of it. And an Answer full of transport. I told her, 'I would directly set out for Lord M's, in obedience to her will. I told her, that I would consent to anything she should command, in order to promote this happy Reconciliation. I told her, that it should be my hourly study to the end of my life, to deferve a goodness so transcendent.' But I cannot sorbear saying, that I am not a little shocked and surprised, if nothing more be meant by it than to get me into the country without seeing her.

Col. That can't be the thing, depend upon it, Sir. There must be more in it than That. For were that all, she must think you would soon be undeceived, and that you would then most probably resume your intention---Unless, indeed, she depended upon seeing me in the interim, as she knew I was arrived. But I own, I know not what to make of it. Only that she does me a great deal of honour, if it be me that she calls her blessed friend, whom she always loved and honoured. Indeed, I ever loved her: And if I die unmarried, and without children, shall be as kind to her, as her grandsather was: And the rather, as I fear that there is too much of envy and self-love in the resentments her Brother and Sister endeavour to

ń

0

if

g

ir

h

th

bo

CI

for

keep up in her Father and Mother against her. But I shall know better how to judge of This, when my Coufin James comes from Edinburgh; and he is every hour expected.

But let me ask you, Mr. Lovelace, What is the name of your friend, who is admitted fo easily into my Coufin's presence? Is it not Belford, pray?

Lovel. It is, Sir; and Mr. Belford's a man of ho-

nour; and a great admirer of your fair Coufin .

Was I right, as to the first, Jack? The last I have fuch strong proof of, that it makes me question the first; fince the would not have been out of the way of my intended visit but for thee.

Col. Are you fure, Sir, that Mr. Belford is a man

of honour.

Lovel. I can swear for him, Colonel. What makes

you put this question?

Col. Only this: That an officious pragmatical novice has been fent up to enquire into my Cousin's life and conversation: And, would you believe it? the frequent vifits of this gentleman have been interpreted. basely to her disreputation .- Read that Letter, Mr. Lovelace; and you will be shocked at every part of it.

This curfed Letter, no doubt, is from the young Levite, whom thou, Jack, describedst, as making enquiry of Mrs. Smith about Miss Harlowe's charac-

ter and, visitors (a).

I believe I was a quarter of an hour in reading it: For I made it, tho' not a short one, fix times as long as it is, by the additions of oa hs and curses to every pedantic line. Lord M. too helped to lengthen it, by the like execrations. And thou, lack, wilt have as much reason to curse as we.

You cannot but see, said the Colonel, when I had done reading it, that this fellow has been officious in his malevolence; for what he fays is mere hearfay, and that hearfay conjectural scandal without fact, or the

the appearance of fact, to support it; so that an unprejudiced eye, upon the face of the Letter, would
condemn the writer of it, as I did, and acquit my
Cousin. But yet, such is the spirit by which the rest
of my relations are governed, that they run away with
the belief of the worst it infinuates, and the dear creature has had shocking Letters upon it; the pedant's
hints are taken; and a voyage to one of the Colonies
has been proposed to her, as the only way to avoid
Mr. Belford and you. I have not seen these Letters
indeed; but they took a pride in repeating some of
their contents, which must have cut the poor Soul to
the heart; and these, joined to her former sufferings
---What have you not, Mr. Lovelace, to answer
for?

Lovel. Who the devil could have expected fuch consequences as these? Who could have believed there could be parents so implacable? Brother and Sister so envious? And, give me leave to say, a Lady so immoveably fixed against the only means that could be taken to put all right with every-body?---And what now can be done?

Lord M. I have great hopes, that Col. Morden may yet prevail upon his Coufin. And by her last Letter, it runs in my mind, that she has some thoughts of forgiving all that's past. Do you think, Colonel, if there should not be such a thing as a Reconciliation going forward at present, that her Letter may not imply, that if we could bring such a thing to bear with her friends, she would be reconciled with Mr. Lovelace?

Col. Such an artifice would better become the Ita-

thip has been in Italy, I prefume?

Lovel. My Lord has read Boccacio, perhaps; and that's as well, as to the hint he gives, which may be borrowed from one of that author's stories. But Miss Clariffa Harlowe is above all artifice. She must have some meaning I cannot fathom.

r

th

uj

of

are

Bra thy

low

rafc

me 1

tien

Col. Well, my Lord, I can only say, That I will make some use of the Letters Mr. Lovelace has obliged me with: And after I have had some talk with my Cousin James, who is hourly expected; and when I have dispatched two or three affairs that press upon me; I will pay my respects to my dear Cousin; and shall then be able to form a better judgment of things. Mean time I will write to her; for I have sent to enquire about her, and find she wants consolation.

Letter of that fellow Brand for a day or two, you

will oblige me.

Col. I will. But remember, the man is a Parson, Mr. Lovelace; an innocent one too, they say. Else I had been at him before now. And these College Novices, who think they know every-thing in their Cloisters, and that all Learning lies in Books, make dismal figures when they come into the world among Men and Women.

Firebrand, I think in my conscience!

Thus ended this doughty conference.

I cannot say, Jack, but I am greatly taken with Col. Morden. He is brave and generous, and knows the world; and then his contempt of the Parsons is a

certain fign that he is one of Us.

We parted with great civility: Lord M. (not a little pleafed that we did, and as greatly taken with the Colonel) repeated his wish after the Colonel was gone, that he had arrived in time to fave the Lady; if that would have done it.

I wish so too. For by my Soul, Jack, I am every day more and more uneasy about her. But I hope

fhe is not so ill as I am told she is.

I have made Charlotte transcribe the Letter of this Firebrand, as my Lord calls him; and will inclose her Copy of it. All thy phlegm I know will be roused into vengeance when thou readest it.

n

2

th

126

y;

ery

pe

his

feat

I know not what to advise as to shewing it to the Lady. Yet, perhaps, she will be able to reap more fatisfaction than concern from it, knowing her own innocence; in that it will give her to hope that her friends treatment of her is owing as much to mifreprefentation as to their own natural implacableness. Such a mind as hers, I know, would be glad to find out the shadow of a reason for the shocking Letters the Colonel fays they have fent her, and for their proposal to her of going to some one of the Colonies [Confound them all---But if I begin to curfe, I shall never have done] --- Then-it may put her upon fuch a defence as fhe might be glad of an opportunity to make, and to shame them for their monstrous credulity---But this I leave to thy own fat-headed prudence ... Only it vexes me to the heart, that even Scandal and Calumny should dare to furmise the bare possibility of any man's sharing the favours of a woman, whom now methinks I could worship with a veneration due only to a Divinity. 31/30年4月10日日日本海岸村

Charlotte and her Sifter could not help weeping at the base aspersion: When, when, said Patty, lifting up her hands, will this Sweet Lady's Sufferings be as

an end ?--- O Coufin Lovelace !---

And thus am I blamed for every one's faults! -- When her brutal Father curses her, it is I. I upbraid her with her severe Mother. The implacableness of her stupid Uncles is all mine. The virulence of her Brother, and the spite and envy of her Sister, are entirely owing to me. The Letter of this rascal Brand is of my writing---O Jack, what a wretch is thy Lovelace!

RETURNED without a Letter !---This damn'd fellow Will. is returned without a Letter !---Yet the rascal tells me that he hears you have been writing to me these two days!

Plague confound thee, who must know my impatience, and the reason for it! 284

To fend a man and horse on purpose; as I did! My imagination chained to the belly of the beaft, in order to keep pace with him !--- Now he is got to this place; Now to that; Now to London; Now to thee !

Now [a Letter given him] whip and spur upon the return. This town just entered, not staying to bait: That village passed by: Leaves the wind behind him: in a foaming fweat man and horse.

And in this way did he actually enter Lord M's

Court-yard.

The reverberating pavement brought me down---The Letter, Will! The Letter, Dog !--- The Let-

ter, Sirrah!

No Letter, Sir !--- Then wildly staring round me, fifts clenched, and grinning like a Maniac, Confound thee for a dog, and him that fent thee without one! --- This moment out of my fight, or I'll scatter thy stupid brains thro' the air. I fnatched from his holsters a pistol, while the rascal threw himself from the foaming beaft, and ran to avoid the fate which I wished with all my foul thou hadst been within the reach of me to have met with.

But, to be as meek as a lamb to one who has me at his mercy, and can wring and torture my Soul as he pleases, What canst thou mean to send back my varlet without a Letter?---I will fend away by daydawn another fellow upon another beaft for what thou hast written; and I charge thee on thy allegiance, that thou dispatch him not back empty-handed.

di

in

Wi

fo

no

tog

pat

I fi

fort

nos,

POSTSCRIPT.

Charlotte, in a whim of delicacy, is displeased that I fend the inclosed Letter to you--- That her hand-writing, forfooth! should go into the hands of a fingle man!

There's encouragement for thee, Belford! This is a certain fign that thou may'ft have her if thou

C

e

18

y

u

e,

ed

er

rds

his

nou

ilt.

wilt. And yet, till she had given me this unerring demonstration of her glancing towards thee, I could not have thought it. Indeed I have often in pleafantry told her, that I would bring such an affair to bear. But I never intended it: because she really is a dainty girl. And thou art such a clumsy sellow in thy person, that I should as soon have wished her a Rhinoceros for an husband, as thee. But, poor little dears! they must stay till their time's come! They won't have this man, and they won't have that man, from Seventeen to Twenty-sive: But then, asraid, as the saying is, that God has forgot them, and finding their bloom departing, they are glad of whom they can get, and verify the Fable of the Parson and the Pears.

LETTER LXXV.

Mr. BRAND, To JOHN HARLOWE, Efq;

[Inclosed in the preceding.]

Worthy Sir, my very good Friend and Patron,

Arrived in town yesterday, after a tolerably pleafant journey (considering the hot weather, and dusty roads). I put up at the Bull and Gate in Holborn, and hastened to Covent-garden. I soon sound the house where the unhappy Lady lodgeth. And, in the back-shop, had a good deal of discourse (a) with Mrs. Smith (her Landlady) whom I sound to be so highly preposessed in her savour, that I saw it would not answer your desires to take my informations altogether from her: And being obliged to attend my patron, (who, to my forrow,

Miserum est aliena vivere quadra)

I find wanteth much waiting upon, and is another fort of a man than he was at College: For Sir, inter nos, honours change manners. For the aforesaid causes,

h

yo

fid

Th

Wit

hat

dou

is o

dee

a pe

aver

vad

I

I thought it would best answer all the ends of the commission with which you honoured me, to engage, in the desired scrutiny, the wife of a particular friend, who liveth almost over-against the house where she lodgeth, and who is a gentlewoman of character and sobriety, a mather of children, and one who knoweth the world well.

To her I applied myself therefore, and gave her a short history of the case, and desired she would very particularly enquire into the conduct of the unhappy young Lady; her present way of life and subsistence; her visitors, her employments, and such like: for these, Sir, you know, are the things whereof you wished to be informed.

Accordingly, Sir, I waited upon the gentlewoman aforefaid, this day; and, to my very great trouble (because I know it will be to yours, and likewise to all your worthy family's) I must say, that I do find things look a little more darkly, than I hoped they would. For, alas! Sir, the gentlewoman's report turneth not out so favourable for Miss's reputation, as I wished, as you wished, and as every one of her friends wished. But so it is throughout the world, that one false step generally brings on another; and peradventure a worse, and a still worse; till the poor timed soul (a very sit epithet of the divine Quarles's!) is quite entangled, and (without infinite mercy) lost for ever.

It feemeth, Sir, she is, notwithstanding, in a very ill state of health. In this, both gentlewomen (that is to say, Mrs. Smith her landlady, and my friend's wise) agree. Yet she goeth often out in a chair, to prayers (as it is said). But my friend's wise told me, that nothing is more common in London, than that the frequenting of the Church at morning prayers is made the pretence and cover for private Assignations. What a sad thing is this! that what was designed for wholsome nourishment to the poor Soul, should be turned into rank poison! But as Mr. Daniel de Foe (an ingenious

ingenious man, tho' a dissenter) observeth (But indeed it is an old proverb; only I think he was the first that put it into verse)

God never had a House of Pray'r, But Satan had a Chapel there.

Yet to do the Lady justice, nobody cometh home with her: Nor indeed can they, because she goeth forward and backward in a Sedan, or Chair (as they call it). But then there is a gentleman of no good character (an intimado of Mr. Lovelace) who is a constant visitor of her, and of the people of the house, whom he regaleth and treateth, and hath (of consequence) their high good words.

I have thereupon taken the trouble (for I love to be exact in any commission I undertake) to enquire particularly about this gentleman, as he is called (albeit I hold no man so but by his actions: For, as Juvenal

faith,

--- Nobilitas fola est, atque unica virtus)

And this I did before I would fit down to write to

you.

His name is Belford. He hath a paternal estate of upwards of one thousand pounds by the year; and is now in mourning for an Uncle who lest him very confiderably besides. He beareth a very prossigate character as to women (for I enquired particularly about That) and is Mr. Lovelace's more especial privado, with whom he holdeth a regular correspondence; and hath been often seen with Miss (tête à tête) at the window---In no bad way, indeed: But my friend's wise is of opinion, that all is not as it should be. And, indeed, it is mighty strange to me, if Miss be so notable a penitent (as is represented) and if she have such an aversion to Mr. Lovelace, that she will admit his privado into her retirements, and see no other company.

I understand, from Mrs. Smith, that Mr. Hickman

was to see her fome time ago, from Miss Howe; and I am told, by another hand (You fee, Sir, how diligent I have been to execute the commissions you gave me) that he had no extraordinary opinion of this Belford, at first; tho' they were feen together one morning by the opposite neighbour, at breakfast: And another time this Belford was observed to watch Mr. Hickman's coming from her; fo that, as it should feem, he was mighty zealous to ingratiate himself with Mr. Hickman; no doubt, to engage him to make a favourable report to Miss Howe of the intimacy he was admitted into by her unhappy friend; who (as she is very ill) may mean no harm in allowing his visits (for he, it feemeth, brought to her, or recommended, at least, the Doctor and Apothecary that attend her): But I think (upon the whole) it looketh not well.

I am forry, Sir, I cannot give you a better account of the young Lady's prudence. But, what shall we fay?

Uvaque conspectà livorem ducit ab uva,

as Juvenal observeth.

One thing I am afraid of; which is, That Miss may be under necessities; and that this Belford (who, as Mrs. Smith owns, hath offered her money, which she, at the time, refused) may find an opportunity to take advantage of those necessities: And it is well observed by that poet, that

Ægre formosam poteris servare puellam: Nunc prece, nunc pretio, forma petita ruit.

And this Belford (who is a bold man, and hath, as they fay, the look of one) may make good that of Horace (with whose writings you are so well acquainted; nobody better);

> Audax omnia perpeti, Gens humana ruit per vetitum nefas.

Forgive

114

Forgive me, Sir, for what I am going to write! But if you could prevail upon the rest of your family to join in the Scheme which you, and her virtuous Sifler, Miss Arabella, and the Archdeacon, and I, once talked of (which is to perfuade the unhappy young Lady to go, in some creditable manner, to some one of the foreign Colonies) it might not fave only her own credit and reputation, but the reputation and credit of all her family, and a great deal of vexation moreover. For it is my humble opinion, that you will hardly (any of you) enjoy yourselves while this (once innocent) young Lady is in the way of being fo frequently heard of by you: And this would put her out of the way both of this Belford and of that Lovelace, and it might, peradventure, prevent as much evil as scandal.

You will forgive me, Sir, for this my plainness.

Ovid pleadeth for me,

10-

d;

ive

- Adulator mullus amicus erit.

And I have no view but that of approving myself a zealous well-wisher to all your worthy family (where-to I owe a great number of obligations) and very particularly, Sir,

Your obliged and bumble Servant,

Wedn. Aug. 9.

ELIAS BRAND.

P. S. I shall give you further hints when I come down (which will be in a few days); and who my informants were; but by these you will see, that I have been very assiduous (for the time)

in the talk you fet me upon.

The length of my Letter you will excuse; for I need not tell you, Sir, what narrative, complex, and conversation Letters (such a one as mine) require. Every one to his talent. Letter-writing is mine, I will be bold to say; and that my correspondence was much coveted at the Univer-Vol. VII.

fity, on that account, by Tyro's, and even by Sophs, when I was hardly a Soph myself. But this I should not have taken upon me to mention, but only in defence of the length of my Letter; for nobody writeth shorter, or pithier, when the subject requireth common forms only—But in apologizing for my prolixity, I am adding to the fault (if it were one, which however I cannot think it to be, the subject considered: But this I have said before in other words): So, Sir, if you will excuse my Possscript, I am sure you will not find fault with my Letter.

One word more, as to a matter of erudition, which you greatly love to hear me flart, and dwell upon. Dr. Lewen once, in your presence (as you, my good Patron, cannot but remember) in a smartish kind of debate between him and me, took upon him to censure the parenthetical style, as I call it. He was a very learned and judicious man, to be fure, and an ornament to our Function: But yet I must needs fay, that it is a style which I greatly like; and the good Doctor was then past his youth, and that time of life, of consequence, when a fertile imagination, and rich fancy, pour in ideas so fast upon a writer, that parentheses are often wanted (and that for the fake of brev ty, as well as perspicuity) to save the reader the trouble of reading a paffage more than once. Every man to his talent (as I said before). We are all so apt to set up our natural byasses for general standards, that I wondered the less at the worthy Doctor's stiffness on this occasion. He smiled at me, you may remember, Sir-And, whether I was right or not, Lam fure I smiled at him. And you my worthy Patron (as I had the fatisfaction to observe) feemed to be of my party. But was it not ftrange, that the old gentleman and

0

m

and I should so widely differ, when the end with both (that is to say, perspicuity or clearness) was the same?—But what shall we say?—

Errare eft bominis, fed non perfiftere-

I think I have nothing to add until I have the honour of attending you in person; but that I am (as above) &c. &c. &c. E. B.

LETTER LXXVI.

Mr. BELFORD, To ROBERT LOVELACE, Efq;

Wednesday Night, Aug. 30.

I T was lucky enough that our two servants met at Hannah's (a), which gave them so good an opportunity of exchanging their Letters time enough for each to return to his master early in the day.

Thou dost well to boast of thy capacity for manageing Servants, and to set up for correcting our Poets in their characters of this class of people (b), when, like a madman, thou canst beat their teeth out, and attempt to shoot them thro' the head, for not bringing

to thee what they had no power to obtain.

d

at

ile

it-

as of

to

apt an-

thy

iled

her

bim.

atis-

arty.

man

and

You well observe (c) that you would have made a thorough-paced Lawyer. The whole of the conversation-piece between you and the Colonel, affords a convincing proof that there is a black and a white side to every cause: But what must the Conscience of a partial whitener of his own cause, or blackener of another's, tell him, while he is throwing dust in the eyes of his judges, and all the time knows his own guilt?

The Colonel, I fee, is far from being a faultless man: But while he sought not to carry his point by breach of faith, he has an excuse which thou hast

⁽a) The Windmill, near Slough.

⁽b) See p. 182--185.

not. But with respect to him, and to us all, I can now, with detestation of some of my own actions, see, that the taking advantage of another person's good opinion of us, to injure (perhaps to ruin) that other, is the most ungenerous wickedness that can be committed.

Man acting thus by man, we should not be at a loss to give such actions a name: But is it not doubly and trebly aggravated, when such advantage is taken of an unexperienced and innocent young creature, whom we pretend to love above all the women in the world; and when we seal our pretences by the most solemn vows and protestations of inviolable honour, that we can invent.

I fee that this gentleman is the best match thou ever couldest have had, upon all accounts: His spirit such another impetuous one as thy own; soon takeing fire; vindictive; and only differing in This, that the cause he engages in is a just one. But, commend me to honest brutal Mowbray, who, before he knew the cause, offers his sword in thy behalf against a man who had taken the injured side, and whom he had never seen before.

As foon as I had run thro' your Letters, and the copy of that of the incendiary Brand's (by the latter of which I faw to what cause a great deal of this last implacableness of the Harlowe family is owing) I took coach to Smith's, altho' I had been come from thence but about an hour, and had taken leave of the

0

01

an

WO

Ma

feve

dati

of e

that

Lady for the night.

I fent down for Mrs. Lovick, and defired her, in the first place, to acquaint the Lady (who was busied in her closet) that I had Letters from Berks: In which I was informed, that the interview between Col. Morden and Mr. Lovelace had ended without ill confequences; that the Colonel intended to write to her very soon, and was interesting himself mean while in her savour, with her relations; that I hoped, that this

this agreeable news would be means of giving her good rest; and I would wait upon her in the morning by the time she should return from prayers with all the particulars.

She fent me word, that she should be glad to see me in the morning; and was highly obliged to me

for the good news I had fent her up.

I then, in the back-shop, re'd to Mrs. Lovick and to Mrs. Smith, the copy of Brand's Letter, and asked them, If they could guess at the man's informant? They were not at a loss; Mrs. Smith having seen the same fellow Brand who had talked with her, as I mentioned in a former (a), come out of a Milaner's shop over-against them; which Milaner, she said, had also lately been very inquisitive about the Lady.

I wanted no further hint; but, bidding them take no notice to the Lady of what I had re'd, I shot over the way, and asking for the mistress of the house, she

came to me.

Retiring with her, at her invitation, into her parlour, I defired to know, if she were acquainted with a young country Clergyman of the name of Brand. She hesitatingly, seeing me in some emotion, owned, that she had some small knowlege of the gentleman. Just then came in her husband, who is it seems a petty officer in the Excise (and not an ill-behaved man) who owned a fuller knowlege of him.

I have the Copy of a Letter, faid I, from this Brand, in which he has taken great liberties with my character, and with That of the most unblameable Lady in the world, which he grounds upon informations that you, Madam, have given him. And then I re'd to them several passages in his Letter; and asked, What soundation she had for giving that fellow such impressions

of either of us?

e

d

h

d.

n-

er

in

nat

his

They knew not what to answer: But at last said, that he had told them how wickedly the young Lady

O 3 had

had run away from her parents: What worthy and rich people they were: In what favour he stood with them; and that they had employed him to enquire

after her behaviour, visitors, &c.

They faid, 'That indeed they knew very little of the young Lady; but that [Curse upon their cenforiousness!] it was but too natural to think, that where a Lady had given way to a delufion, and taken so wrong a step, she would not stop there: That the most Sacred Places and Things were but too often made cloaks for bad actions: That Mr. Brand had been informed (perhaps by fome enemy of mine) that I was a man of very free principles, and an intimado, as he calls it, of the man who had ruined her. And that their coufin Barker, a Manteaumaker, who lodged up one pair of stairs' (and who, at their defire, came down and confirmed what they faid) ' had often, from her window, feen me with the Lady in her chamber, and both talking very earnestly together: And that Mr. Brand being unable to account for her admitting my vifits, and knowing I was but a new acquaintance of hers, and an old one of Mr. Lovelace, thought himself obliged to lay these matters before her friends.

This was the fum and substance of their tale. O how I curfed the Cenforiousness of this plaguy Triumvirate! A Parson, a Milaner, and a Manteaumaker! The two latter, not more by bufiness led to adorn the persons, than generally by scandal to destroy the reputations, of those they have a mind to exercise

m

no

cal

Bu

foo

affi

of f

tho

thy

their talents upon l

The two women took great pains to persuade me, that they themselves were people of Conscience: Of consequence, I told them, too much addicted, I feared, to cenfure other people who pretended not to their strictness; for that I had ever found Censorioufness, Narrowness, and Uncharitableness, to prevail too much with those who affected to be thought They more pious than their neighbours.

They answered, That that was not their Case; and that they had fince enquired into the Lady's character and manner of life, and were very much concerned to think any-thing they had faid should be made use of against her: And as they heard from Mrs. Smith, that she was not likely to live long, they should be forry she should go out of the world a fufferer by their means, or with an ill opinion of them, tho' strangers to her. The husband offered to write, if I pleased, to Mr. Brand, in vindication of the Lady; and the two women faid, they should be glad to wait upon her in person, to beg her pardon for anything she had reason to take amiss from them; because they were now convinced that there was not fuch another young Lady in the world.

I told them, That the least faid of the affair to the Lady, in her present circumstances, was best. That she was an heavenly creature, and fond of takeing all occasions to find excuses for her relations on their implacableness to her: That therefore I should take fome notice to her of the uncharitable and weak furmifes which gave birth to fo vile a fcandal: But that I would have him, Mr. Walton (for that is the husband's name) write to his acquaintance Brand as: foon as possible, as he had offered—And fo I left

them.

I

to

1.

e.

ht

ey

As to what thou fayeft of thy charming Coufin, let me know, if thou haft any meaning in it. I have not the vanity to think myself deserving of such a Lady as Miss Montague: And should not therefore care to expose myself to her scorn, and to thy derision. But were I affured I might avoid both these, I would soon acquaint thee, that I should think no pains nor affiduity too much to obtain a share in the good graces of fuch a Lady.

But I know thee too well-to depend upon any-thing thou fayest on this subject. Thou lovest to make thy friends the object of ridicule to Ladies; and ima-

0.4

gineft,

ginest, from the vanity (and in this respect, I will say littleness) of thine own heart, that thou shinest the brighter for the foil.

Thus didft thou once play off the rough Mowbray with Mifs Hatton, till the poor fellow knew not how

to go either backward or forward.

296

LETTER LXXVII.

Mr. BELFORD, To ROBERT LOVELACE, Efq;

Thursday, 13 o'clock, Aug. 31.

AM just come from the Lady, whom I lest chearful and ferene.

She thanked me for my communication of the preceding night. I re'd to her fuch parts of your Letters as I could read to her; and I thought it was a good test to distinguish the froth and whipt-syllabub in them from the cream, in what one could and could not read to a woman of fo fine a mind; fince four parts out of fix of thy Letters, which I thought entertaining as I re'd them to myfelf, appeared to me, when I should have re'd them to her, most abominable stuff, and gave me a very contemptible idea of thy talents, and of my own judgment.

She was far from rejoicing, as I had done, at the disappointment her Letter gave you when explained.

She faid, She meant only an innocent Allegory, which might carry Instruction and Warning to you, when the meaning was taken, as well as answer her own hopes for the time. It was run off in a hurry. She was afraid, it was not quhite right in her. hoped the end would excuse (if it could not justify) the means. And then she again expressed a good deal of apprehension, lest you should still take it into your head to molest her, when her time, she said, was fo short, that she wanted every moment of it; repeating what she had once faid before, that when the wrote, the was to ill, that the believed the should

not have lived till now. If 'she had thought she should, she must have studied for an expedient that would have better answered her intentions. Hinting at a removal out of the knowlege of us both.

But she was much pleased that the conference between you and Colonel Morden, after two or three such violent sallies, as I acquainted her you had had between you, ended so amicably; and said she must absolutely depend upon the promise I had given her to use my utmost endeavours to prevent surther mischief on her account.

She was pleased with the justice you did her character o her Cousin.

She was glad to hear, that he had so kind an opinion of her, and that he would write to her.

I was under an unnecessary concern, how to break to her, that I had the copy of Brand's vile Letter: Unnecessary, I say; for she took it just as you thought she would, as an excuse she wished to have for the implacableness of her friends; and begged I would let her read it herself; for, said she, the contents cannot disturb me, be they what they will.

I gave it to her, and she re'd it to herself; a tear now-and-then being ready to start, and a sigh sometimes interposing.

She gave me back the Letter with great and surpriseing calmness, considering the subject.

There was a time, faid she, and that not long since, when such a Letter as this would have greatly pained me. But I hope I have now got above all these things: And I can refer to your kind offices, and to those of Miss Howe, the justice that will be done to my memory among my friends. There is a good and a bad light in which every-thing that befals us may be taken. If the human mind will busy itself to make the worst of every disagreeable occurrence, it will never want woe. This Letter, affecting as the subject of it is to my reputation, gives me more plea-

0

1,

;

n ld

ot

0 5

fure than pain, because I can gather from it, that had not my friends been prepossessed by misinformed or rash and officious persons, who are always at hand to state or sooth the passions of the Assumption, they could not have been so immoveably determined against measure now they are sufficiently cleared from every imputation of unforgivingness; for, while I appeared to them in the character of a vile hypocrite, pretending to true penitence, yet giving up myself to prosligate courses, how could I expect either their pardon or blessing?

But, Madam, faid I, you'll fee by the date of this Letter, August 9, that their feverity, previous to that

cannot be excused by it.

It imports me much, replied fhe, on account of my present wishes, as to the office you are so kind to undertake, that you should not think harshly of my friends. I must own to you, that I have been apt fometimes myself to think them not only severe, but cruel. Suffering minds will be partial to their own cause and merits. Knowing their own hearts, if sincere, they are apt to murmur when harshly treated: But if they are not believed to be innocent, by perfons who have a right to decide upon their conduct according to their own judgments, how can it be helped? Befides, Sir, How do you know, that there are not about my friends as well-meaning mifreprefenters as Mr. Brand really feems to be? But be this as it will, there is no doubt that there are and have been multitudes of persons, as innocent as myself, who have fuffered upon furmifes as little probable as those on which Mr. Brand founds his judgment. Your intimacy, Sir, with Mr. Lovelace, and (may I fay?) a character which, it feems, you have been less solicitous formerly to justify, than perhaps you will be for the future, and your frequent vifits to me, may well be thought to be questionable circumstances in my conduct.

I could only admire her in filence.

te

gu

CY

But you see, Sir, proceeded she, how necessary it is for young people of our Sex to be careful of our company. And how much, at the same time, it behoves young persons of yours, to be chary of their own reputation, were it only for the sake of such of ours, as they may mean honourably by; and who otherwise may suffer in their good names for being seen in their company.

As to Mr. Brand, continued she, he is to be pitied; and let me enjoin you, Mr. Belford, not to take up any resentments against him which may be detrimental either to his person or his fortunes. Let his function and his good meaning plead for him. He will have concern enough, when he finds every-body whose displeasure I now labour under, acquitting my memory of perverse guilt, and joining in a general

pity for me.

y

u

11

This, Lovelace, is the woman whose life thou hast curtailed in the blossom of it!—How many opportunities must thou have had of admiring her inestimable worth, yet couldst have thy senses so much absorbed in the Woman in her charming person, as to be blind to the Angel that shines out in such full glory in her mind! Indeed, I have ever thought myself, when blest with her conversation, in the company of a real Angel: And I am sure it would be impossible for me, were she to be as beautiful, and as crimsoned over with health, as I have seen her, to have the least thought of Sex, when I heard her talk.

Thursday, Three o'clock, Aug. 31.

On my re-visit to the Lady, I found her almost as much a sufferer from joy, as she had sometimes been from grief: For she had just received a very kind Letter from her Cousin Morden; which she was so good as to communicate to me. As she had already begun to answer it, I begged leave to attend her in the evening, that I might not interrupt her in it.

06

The:

The Letter is a very tender one * * * *

Here Mr. Belford gives the substance of it upon his memory; but that is omitted; as the Letter is given at length [See the next Letter.] And then adds:

But, alas! all will be now too late. For the decree is certainly gone out—The world is unworthy of her.

LETTER LXXVIII.

Colonel MORDEN, To Miss CL. HARLOWE.

Tuefday, Aug. 29.

I Should not, my dearest Cousin, have been a fortnight in England, without either doing myself the
honour of waiting upon you in person, or of writing
to you; if I had not been busying myself almost all
the time in your service, in hopes of making my
Visit or Letter still more acceptable to you—acceptable as I have reason to presume either will be from
the unquestionable Love I ever bore you, and from
the esteem you always honoured me with.

Little did I think, that so many days would have been required to effect my well-intended purpose, where there used to be a love so ardent on one side, and where there still is, as I am thoroughly convinced,

the most exalted merit on the other!

I was yesterday with Mr. Lovelace and Lord M. I need not tell you, it seems, how very desirous the whole family and all the Relations of that Nobleman are of the honour of an alliance with you; nor how exceedingly earnest the ungrateful man is to make you all the reparation in his power.

I think, my dear Cousin, that you cannot now do better than to give him the honour of your hand. He says such just and great things of your virtue, and so

heartily

0

heartily condemns himself, that I think there is honourable room for you to forgive him: And the more room, as it seems you are determined against a legal.

profecution.

Your effectual forgiveness of Mr. Lovelace, it is evident to me, will accelerate a general Reconciliation: For, at present, my other Cousins cannot perfuade themselves, that he is in earnest to do you justice; or that you would refuse him, if you believed he was.

But, my dear Cousin, there may possibly be something in this affair, to which I may be a stranger. If there be, and you will acquaint me with it, all that a naturally warm heart can do in your behalf shall be done.

I hope I shall be able, in my next visits to my several Cousins, to set all right with them. Haughty spirits, when convinced that they have carried resentments too high, want but a good excuse to condescend: And parents must always love the child they once loved.

But if I find them inflexible, I will fet out, and attend you without delay; for I long to fee you, after

fo many years absence.

Mean while, I beg the favour of a few lines to know if you have reason to doubt Mr. Lovelace's Sincerity. For my part, I can have none, if I am to judge from the conversation that passed between us yesterday, in presence of Lord M.

You will be pleased to direct for me at your Uncle

Antony's.

U.

0

(o

Permit me, my dearest Cousin, till I can procure a happy Reconciliation between you and your Father, and Brother, and Uncles, to supply the place to you of all those near relations, as well as that of

Your affectionate Kinsman, and bumble Servant,

LETTER LXXIX.

Miss CL. HARLOWE, To WM. MODDEN, Esq:

Thursday, Aug. 21.

I MOST heartily congratulate you, dear Sir, on your return to your native country.

I heard with much pleasure that you were come; but I was both afraid and ashamed, till you encouraged me by a first notice, to address myself to you.

How confoling is it to my wounded heart to find, that you have not been carried away by that tide of refentment and displeasure with which I have been so unhappily overwhelmed---But that, while my still nearer relations have not thought fit to examine into the truth of vile reports raised against me, you have informed yourself of my innocence, and generously credited the information!

I have not the least reason to doubt Mr. Lovelace's Sincerity in his offers of Marriage: Nor that all his relations are heartily desirous of ranking me among them. I have had noble instances of their esteem for me, on their apprehending that my Father's displeasure must have subjected me to difficulties: And this, after I had absolutely resused their pressing solicitations in their kinsman's savour, as well as his own.

Nor think me, my dear Cousin, blameable for refusing him. I had given Mr. Lovelace no reason to think me a weak creature. If I had, a man of his character might have thought himself warranted to endeavour to make ungenerous advantage of the weakness he had been able to inspire. The consciousness of my own weakness (in that case) might have brought me to a composition with his wickedness.

I can indeed forgive him. But that is, because I think his crimes have set me above him. Can I be above the man, Sir, to whom I shall give my hand and my vows; and with them a Sanction to the most

pre-

Wi

pre

Sin

hor

any

my

blef

give

and

pity

bleff

premeditated baseness? No, Sir! Let me say, that your Cousin Clarissa, were she likely to live many years, and that (if she married not this man) in penury or want, despited and forsaken by all her friends, puts not so high a value upon the conveniencies of life, nor upon life itself, as to seek to re-obtain the one, or to preserve the other, by giving such a Sanction: A Sanction, which (were she to perform ber

duty) would reward the violator.

Nor is it so much from Pride as from Principle, that I say this. What, Sir! when Vistue, when Chastity, is the crown of a woman, and particularly of a Wise, shall your Cousin stoop to marry the many who could not form an attempt upon bers, but upon a presumption, that she was capable of receiving his offered hand, when he had found himself mistaken in the vile opinion he had conceived of her? Hitherto he has not had reason to think me weak. Nor will give an instance so slagrant, that weak I am, in a point in which it would be criminal to be found weak.

One day, Sir, you will perhaps know all my Story. But, whenever it is known, I beg, that the Author of my calamities may not be vindictively fought after. He could not have been the author of them, but for a strange concurrence of unhappy causes. As the Law will not be able to reach him when I am gone, the apprehension of any other fort of vengeance terrifies me since, in such a case, should my friends be safe, what honour would his death bring to my memory?---If any of them should come to missortune, how would my fault be aggravated!

God long preserve you, my dearest Cousin, and bless you but in proportion to the consolation you have given me, in letting me know that you still love me; and that I have one near and dear relation who can pity and forgive me (and then will you be greatly

bleffed ---); is the prayer of

0

S

0-1

e.

--

18:

I

e.

d

A

C--

Your ever-grateful and affectionate

CLARISSA HARLOWE.

LETTER LXXX.

Mr. LOVELACE, To JOHN BELFORD, Esq; In answer to bis Letters lvii. lxxi.

Thursday, Aug. 31.

Cannot but own, that I am cut to the heart by this Miss Harlowe's interpretation of her Letter. She ought never to be forgiven. She, a meek perfon, and a penitent, and innocent, and pious, and I know not what, who can deceive with a foot in the

grave !---

'Tis evident, that she sat down to write this Letter with a design to mislead and deceive. And if she be capable of That, at such a criss, she has as much need of Heaven's forgiveness, as I have of hers: And, with all her cant of Charity and Charity, if she be not more sure of it, than I am of her real pardon, and if she take the thing in the light she ought to take it in, she will have a few darker moments yet to come than she seems to expect.

Lord M. himself, who is not one of those (to speak in his own phrase) who can penetrate a millstone, sees the deceit, and thinks it unworthy of her; tho my Cousins Montague vindicate her. And no wonder: This cursed partial Sex [I hate 'em all—by my Soul, I hate 'em all!] will never allow any-thing against an individual of it, where ours is concerned. And why! Because, if they censure deceit in another, they must

condemn their own hearts.

She is to fend me a Letter after she is in Heaven, is she? The devil take such allegories; and the devil take thee for calling this absurdity an innocent artifice!

I infift upon it, that if a woman of her character, at such a critical time, is to be justified in such a deception, a man in sull health and vigour of body and mind, as I am, may be excused for all his stratagems

anu

fo

th

to

not

tud

in 1

go

Dan

and attempts against her. And, thank my Stars, I can now fit me down with a quiet conscience on that fcore. By my Soul, I can, Jack. Nor has anybody, who can acquit ber, a right to blame me. with fome, indeed, every-thing she does must be good, every-thing I do must be bad-And why? Because she has always taken care to coax the stupid misjudging world, like a Woman: While I have confantly defied and despised its censures, like a Man.

But, notwithstanding all, you may let her know from me, that I will not molest her, fince my visits. would be fo shocking to her: And I hope she will take this into her confideration as a piece of generofity which she could hardly expect after the deception the has put upon me. And let her further know, that if there be any-thing in my power, that will contribute either to her ease or honour, I will obey her, at the very first intimation, however disgraceful or detrimental to myself. All this, to make her unapprehensive, and that she may have nothing to pullher back.

If her curfed relations could be brought as chearfully to perform their parts, I'd answer life for life

for her recovery.

But who, that has fo many ludicrous images raised in his mind by thy aukward penitence, can forbear laughing at thee? Spare, I befeech thee, dear Belford, for the future, all thine own aspirations, if thou wouldst not dishonour those of an Angel indeed.

When I came to that passage, where thou fayst, that thou confiderest her (a) as one fent from Heaven, to draw thee after her---for the heart of me, I could not for an hour put thee out of my head, in the attitude of Dame Elizabeth Carteret, on her monument: in Westminster-Abbey. If thou never observedst it, go thither on purpose; and there wilt thou see this. Dame in effigie, with uplifted head and hand, the: latter-

(a) See p. 253:

en, evil

k.

es

Y

r:

ul,

an

y?

ust

arti+

ter, deand ems

and

latter taken hold of by a Cupid every inch of stone, one clumfy foot lifted up also, aiming, as the Sculptor defigned it, to ascend; but so executed, as would rather make one imagine, that the Figure (without shoe or stocken, as it is, tho' the rest of the body is robed) was looking up to its Corn-cutter: The other riveted to its native earth, bemired, like thee (immersed thou callest it) beyond the possibility of unflicking itself. Both Figures, thou wilt find, seem to be in a contention, the bigger, whether it should pull down the leffer about its ears—the leffer (a chubby fat little varlet, of a fourth part of the other's bigness, with wings not much larger than those of a butterfly) whether it should raise the larger to a Heaven it points to, hardly big enough to contain the great toes of either.

Thou, wilt say, perhaps, that the Dame's figure in flone may do credit, in the comparison, to thine, both in grain and shape, wooden as thou art all over: But that the Lady, who, in every-thing but in the trick she has plaid me so lately, is truly an Angel, is but forrily represented by the fat-slanked Cupid. This I allow thee. But yet there is enough in thy aspirations, to strike my mind with a resemblance of thee and the Lady to the Figures on the wretched monument; for thou oughtest to remember, that, prepared as she may be to mount to her native skies, it is impossible for her to draw after her a heavy sellow who has so much to repent of as thou hast.

But now, to be serious once more, let me tell you, Belford, that, if the Lady be really so ill as you write she is, it will become you [No Roman style bere!] in a case so very affecting, to be a little less pointed and farcastic in your reslections. For, upon my Soul, the matter begins to grate me most consoundedly.

I am now so impatient to hear oftener of her, that I take the hint accidentally given me by our two fel-

lows

ma

You

him

lows meeting at Slough, and resolve to go to our friend Doleman's at Uxbridge; whose Wise and Sifter, as well as he, have so frequently pressed me to give them my company for a week or two. There shall I be within two hours ride, if any-thing should happen to induce her to see me: For it will well become her piety, and avowed charity, should the worst happen [The Lord of Heaven and Earth, however, avert that worst!] to give me that pardon from her lips, which she has not denied me by pen and ink. And as she wishes my Reformation, she knows not what good effects such an interview may have upon me.

I shall accordingly be at Doleman's to-morrow morning, by Eleven at furthest. My fellow will find me there at his return from you (with a Letter, I hope). I shall have Joel with me likewise, that I may send the oftener, as matters fall out. Were I to be still nearer, or in town, it would be impossible to with-hold myself from seeing her.

But, if the worst happen !—as, by your continuals knelling, I know not what to think of it !—[Yet, once more, Heaven avert that worst !—How natural is it to pray, when one cannot help one's self!]—
THEN say not, in so many dreadful words, what the event is—Only, that you advise me to take a trip to Paris—And that will stab me to the heart.

I so well approve of your generosity to poor Belton's Sister, that I have made Mowbray give up his. Legacy, as I do mine, towards her India Bonds. When I come to town, Tourville shall do the like; and we will buy each a Ring, to wear in memoy of the honest fellow, with our own money, that we may perform his will, as well as our own.

My fellow rides the rest of the night. I charge you, Jack, if you would save his life, that you fend

him not back empty-handed.

y

d

t,

Sy.

1-

ell

ou

13

ed

my

id-

hat

fel-

WS.

LET-

LETTER LXXXI.

Mr. Belford, To Robert Lovelace, Esq;

Tuesday Night, Aug. 28.

at

it

tha

are

ord

Mo

nea

days

trou

of a

fuch

any-

that

My (

WHEN I concluded my last, I hoped, that my next attendance upon this furprizing Lady would furnish me with some particulars as agreeable as now could be hoped for from the declining way she is in, by reason of the welcome Letter she had received from her Cousin Morden. But it proved quite otherwise to me, tho' not to berself; for I think I never was more shocked in my life than on the oc-

casion I shall mention presently.

When I attended her about Seven in the evening, she told me, that she found herself in a very petulant way, after I had left her. Strange, said she, that the pleasure I received from my Cousin's Letter should have such an effect upon me? But I could not help giving way to a comparative humour, as I may call it, and to think it very hard, that my nearer relations did not take the methods, which my Cousin Morden kindly took, by enquiring into my merit or demerit, and giving my cause a fair audit before they proceeded to condemnation.

She had hardly faid this, when she started, and a blush overspread her sweet face, on hearing, as I also did, a fort of lumbering noise upon the stairs, as if a large trunk were bringing up between two people. And, looking upon me with an eye of concern, Blunderers! said she, they have brought in something two hours before the time.—Don't be surprised, Sir

--- It is all to fave you trouble.

dam, faid she, What have you done?---Mrs. Lovick, entering, made the same exclamation. Lord have mercy upon me, Madam, cried I, what have you done!---For, she stepping at the instant to the door,

I

as.

0-

n,

ng

110

12-

ck,

ve

ou

017 the the women told me, it was a Coffin .--- O Lovelace ? that thou hadft been there at the moment !--- Thou, the causer of all these shocking Scenes! Surely thou couldst not have been less affected than I, who have

no guilt, as to her, to answer for.

With an intrepidity of a piece with the preparation, having directed them to carry it into her bedchamber, she returned to us: They were not to have brought it in till after dark, faid she--- Pray, excuse me, Mr. Belford: And don't you, Mrs. Lovick, be concerned: Nor you, Mrs. Smith .--- Why should you? There is nothing more in it, than the unusualness of the thing. Why may we not be as reasonably shocked at going to the Church where are the monuments of our ancestors, with whose dust we even hope our dust shall be one day mingled, as to be

moved at fuch a fight as this?

We all remaining filent, the women having their aprons at their eyes, Why this concern for nothing at all? faid the: If I am to be blamed for any-thing, it is for shewing too much solicitude, as it may be thought, for this earthly part. I love to do everything for myself that I can do. I ever did. Every other material point is fo far done, and taken care of, that I have had leifure for things of leffer moment. Minuteneffes may be observed, where greater articles are not neglected for them. I might have had this to order, perhaps, when less fit to order it. I have no Mother, no Sifter, no Mrs. Norton, no Miss Howe, near me. Some of you must have seen this in a few days, if not now; perhaps have had the friendly trouble of directing it. And what is the difference of a few days to you, when I am gratified, rather than discomposed by it? I shall not die the sooner for such a preparation. Should not every-body that has any-thing to bequeath make their Will? And who, that makes a Will, should be afraid of a Cossin ?---My dear friends [to the women] I have confidered

these things; do not, with such an object before you as you have had in me for weeks, give me reason to

think you have not.

210

How reasonable was all this !---It shewed, indeed, that she herself had well considered it. But yet we could not help being shocked at the thoughts of the Cossin thus brought in; the lovely person before our eyes, who is in all likelihood so soon to fill it.

We were all filent still, the women in grief, I in a manner stunned. She would not ask me, she said; but would be glad, since it had thus earlier than she had intended been brought in, that her two good friends would walk in and look upon it. They would be less shocked, when it was made more samiliar to their eye: Don't you lead back, said stre, a starting Steed to the object he is apt to start at, in order to samiliarize him to it, and cure his starting? The same reason will hold in this case. Come, my good friends, I will lead you in.

I took my leave; telling her she had done wrong, very wrong; and ought not, by any means, to have

fuch an object before her.

The women followed her in.--- Tis a strange Sex! Nothing is too shocking for them to look upon, or see acted, that has but Novelty and Curiosity in it.

Down I posted; got a chair; and was carried home, extremely shocked and discomposed: Yet, weighing the Lady's arguments, I know not why I was so affected---except, as she said, at the Unusual-

ness of the thing.

While I waited for a chair, Mrs. Smith came down, and told me, that there were devices and inferiptions upon the Lid. Lord bless me! Is a Coffin a proper subject to display fancy upon?---But these great minds cannot avoid doing extraordinary things!

LET-

up

she

ord

bols

whiits r

LETTER LXXXII.

Mr. BELFORD, To ROBERT LOVELACE, Efq;

Friday Morn. Sept. 1.

IT is furprising, that I, a Man, should be so much affected as I was, at such an object as is the subject of my former Letter; who also, in my late Uncle's case, and poor Belton's, had the like before me, and the directing of it: When she, a Woman, of so weak and tender a frame, who was to fill it so soon perhaps to fill it!) could give orders about it, and draw out the devices upon it, and explain them with so little concern as the women tell me she did to them last night after I was gone.

I really was ill, and restless all night. Thou were the subject of my execration, as she of my admiration, all the time I was quite awake: And, when I dozed, I dreamt of nothing but of slying Hour-glasses, Deaths-heads, Spades, Mattocks, and Eternity; the hint of her devices (as given me by Mrs. Smith) run-

ning in my head.

ed

ety

y I

al-

me

in.

ffin

nefe

gs!

T

However, not being able to keep away from Smith's, I went thither about Seven. The Lady was just gone out: She had slept better, I found, than I, tho' her solemn repository was under her

window not far from her bed-fide.

I was prevailed upon by Mrs. Smith and her Nurse Shelburne (Mrs. Lovick being abroad with her) to go up and look at the devices. Mrs. Lovick has since shewn me a copy of the draught by which all was ordered. And I will give thee a sketch of the symbols.

The principal device, neatly etched on a plate of white metal, is a crowned Serpent, with its tail in its mouth, forming a ring, the emblem of Eternity: And in the circle made by it is this inscription:

CLARISSA HARLOWE.

[Then the year]

For ornaments: At top, an Hour-glass winged, At bottom, an Urn.

Under the Hour-glass, on another plate, this in-

fcription :

HERE the wicked cease from troubling: And HERE the weary be at rest. Job. iii. 17.

Over the urn, near the bottom:

Turn again unto thy rest, O my soul! For the Lord hath rewarded thee: And why? Thou hast delivered my soul from death; mine eyes from tears; and my feet from falling. Ps. cxvi. 7, 8.

Over this text is the head of a white Lily fnapt fhort off, and just falling from the stalk; and this inscription over that, between the principal plate and the lily:

The days of man are but as grass. For he flourisheth as a flower of the field: For, as soon as the wind goeth over it, it is gone; and the place thereof, shall know it no more. Ps. ciii. 15, 16. W

te

· I

[lo

· li

T

in

fo.

hi.

' lie

elf

the

V

She excused herself to the women, on the score of her youth, and being used to draw for her needleworks, for having shewn more fancy than would perhaps be thought suitable on so solemn an occasion.

The date, April 10. she accounted for, as not being able to tell what her closing-day would be; and as That was the fatal day of her leaving her Father's

house.

She discharged the Undertaker's Bill after I went away, with as much chearfulness as she could ever have have paid for the cloaths she sold to purchase this her palace: For such she called it; reslecting upon herself for the expensiveness of it, saying, That they might observe in her, that pride lest not poor mortals to the last: But indeed she did not know but her Father would permit it, when furnished, to be carried down to be deposited with her Ancestors; and, in that case, she ought not to discredit those Ancestors in her appearance amongst them.

It is covered with fine black cloth, and lined with white fatten; foon, she faid, to be tarnished by viler

earth than any it could be covered by.

The burial-dress was brought home with it. The women had curiosity enough, I suppose, to see her open That, if she did open it.—And, perhaps, thou wouldest have been glad to have been present, to have admired it too!—

Mrs. Lovick faid, she took the liberty to blame her; and wished the removal of such an object—from her bedchamber, at least: And was so affected with the noble answer she made upon it, that she en-

tered it down the moment she lest her.

he

1.

of

S,

be

ot

nd

r's

ent

ver

ave

'To persons in health, said she, this sight may ' be shocking: and the preparation, and my unconcernedness in it, may appear affected: But to me, who have had fo gradual a weaning-time from the world, and so much reason not to love it, I must ' fay, I dwell on, I indulge (and, strictly speaking, I enjoy) the thoughts of death. For, believe me' [looking stedfastly at the awful receptacle]; 'Be-'lieve what at this instant I feel to be most true, 'That there is fuch a vast superiority of weight and 'importance in the thought of death, and its hopedfor happy consequences, that it in a manner anni-'hilates all other considerations and concerns. Be-'lieve me, my good friends, it does what nothing 'else can do: It teaches me, by strengthening in me the force of the Divinest Example, to forgive the Vol. VII. injuries

' injuries I have received; and shuts out the remem-

brance of past evils from my foul.'

And now let me ask thee, Lovelace, Dost thou think, that, when the time shall come that thou shalt be obliged to launch into the boundless Ocean of Eternity, thou wilt be able (any more than poor Belton) to act thy part with such true Heroism, as this sweet and tender blossom of a woman has manifested, and continues to manifest!

O no! it cannot be!—And why can't it be?—The reason is evident: She has no wilful errors to look back upon with self-reproach—and her mind is strengthened by the consolations which flow from that religious restitude which has been the guide of all her actions; and which has taught her rather to chuse to be a Sufferer, than an Aggressor!

This was the support of the divine Socrates, as thou hast read. When led to execution, his wife lamenting that he should suffer being innocent, Thou sool, said he, wouldst thou wish me to be guilty!

LETTER LXXXIII.

Mr. Belford, To Robert Lovelace, Efq;

HOW aftonishing, in the midst of such affecting Scenes, is thy mirth on what thou callest my own aspirations! Never, surely, was there such another man in this world, thy talents and thy levity taken together!---Surely, what I shall send thee with this will affect thee. If not, nothing can, till thy own bour come:—And heavy will then thy reslections be!

I am glad, however, that thou enablest me to assure the Lady, that thou wilt no more molest her; that is to say, in other words, That, after having ruined her fortunes, and all her worldly prospects, thou wilt be so gracious, as to let her lie down and

die in peace.

Thy

to

fev

fen

vife

as h

a th

and

Thy giving up to poor Belton's Sister the little Legacy, and thy undertaking to make Mowbray and Tourville follow thy example, are, I must say to thy honour, of a piece with thy generosity to thy Rosebud and her Johnny; and to a number of other good actions, in pecuniary matters: altho' thy Rosebud's is, I believe, the only instance where a pretty woman was concerned, of such a disinterested bounty.

Upon my faith, Lovelace, I love to praise thee; and often and often, as thou knowest, have I studied for occasions to do it; Insomuch that when for the life of me I could not think of any-thing done by thee that deserved praise, I have taken pains to applaud the not ungraceful manner in which thou hast performed

actions that merited the gallows.

Now thou art so near, I will dispatch my servant to thee, if occasion requires. But, I fear, I shall soon give thee the news thou art apprehensive of. For I am just now sent for by Mrs. Smith; who has ordered the messenger to tell me, that she knew not if the Lady will be alive when I come.

Friday, Sept 1. Two o'Clock, at Smith's.

I COULD not close my Letter in such an uncertainty as must have added to your impatience. For you have, on several occasions, convinced me, that the suspense you love to give, would be the greatest torment to you that you could receive. A common case with all aggressive and violent spirits, I believe. I will just mention then (your servant waiting here till I have written) that the Lady has had two very severe sits: In the last of which whilst she lay, they sent to the Doctor and Mr. Goddard, who both advised, that a messenger should be dispatched for me, as her Executor; being doubtful, whether, if she had a third, it would not carry her off.

She was tolerably recovered by the time I came: and the Doctor made her promise before me, that,

P 2

while

and

Thy

ıg

UN

er

10-

rill

our

al-

er;

ing

Ets,

a

ar

to

let

on to

while she was so weak, she would not attempt any more to go abroad; for, by Mrs. Lovick's description, who attended her, the shortness of her breath, her extreme weakness, and the fervor of her devotions when at Church, were contraries, which, pulling different ways (the Soul aspiring, the Body sinking) tore

her tender frame in pieces.

So much for the present. I shall detain Will. no longer, then just to beg, that you will send me back this packet, and the last. Your memory is so good, that once reading is all you ever give, or need to give, to any-thing. And who but ourselves can make out our characters, were you inclined to let any-body fee what passes between us? If I cannot be obliged, I shall be tempted to with-hold what I write, till I have time to take a copy of it (a).

A Letter from Miss How is just now brought by a particular messenger, who says he must carry back a few lines in return. But, as the Lady is just retired to lie down, the man is to call again by-and-by.

LETTER LXXXIV.

Mr. LOVELACE, To JOHN BELFORD, Efq.

Uxbridge, Sept. 1. Twelve o'clock at Night.

I Send you the papers with this. You must account to me honeftly and fairly when I fee you for the earnestness with which you write for them. then also will we talk about the contents of your last dispatch, and about some of your severe and unfriendly reflections.

Mean time, whatever thou doft, don't let the wonderful creature leave us! Set before her the fin of her preparation, as if the thought the could depart

⁽a) It may not be amiss to observe, that Mr. Belford's solicitude to get back his Letters was owing to his defire of fulfilling the Lady's withes, that he would furnish Miss Howe with materials to vindicate her memory. when

when she pleased. She'll persuade herself, at this rate, that she has nothing to do, when all is ready, but to lie down, and go to sleep: And such a lively fancy as hers will make a reality of a jest at any time.

A jest, I call all that has passed between her and me; a mere jest to die for—For has not her Triumph over me, from first to last, been infinitely greater than her

Sufferings from me?

e

in

rt

ode

cate

nep

Would the facred regard I have for her purity, even for her personal as well as intellectual purity, permit, I could prove this as clear as the Sun. Tell therefore the dear creature, that she must not be wicked in her piety. There is a too much, as well as a too little, even in righteousness. Perhaps she does not think of that.---O that she would have permitted my attendance, as obligingly as she does of thine!---The dear Soul used to love Humour. I remember the time that she knew how to smile at a piece of apropos Humour. And, let me tell thee, a smile upon the Lips, or a sparkling in the Eye, must have had its correspondent chearfulness in a Heart so sincere as hers.

Tell the Doctor, I will make over all my Possessions, and all my Reversions, to him, if he will but prolong her life for one twelvemonth to come. But for one twelvemonth, Jack !---He will lose all his reputation with me, and I shall treat him as Belton did his Doctor, if he cannot do this for me, on so young a subject. But Nineteen, Belford !--- Nineteen cannot so soon die of grief, if the Doctor deserve that title; and so blooming and so sine a constitution as she had but three or four months ago!

But what need the Doctor to ask her leave to write to her friends? Could he not have done it, without letting her know any-thing of the matter? That was one of the likeliest means that could be thought of, to bring some of them about her, since she is so de-

P 3 fir

n

et

of

ver

an

you

COL

firous to see them. At least, it would have induced them to fend up her favourite Norton. But these plaguy folemn fellows are great traders in parade. They'll cram down your throat their poisonous drugs by wholefale, without asking you a question; and have the affurance to own it to be prescribing: But, when they are to do good, they are to require your consent.

How the dear creature's character rifes in every line of thy Letters! But it is owing to the uncommon occasions she has met with that she blazes out upon us with fuch a meridian lustre. How, but for those occasions, could her noble sentiments, her prudent consideration, her forgiving spirit, her exalted benevolence, and her equanimity in view of the most shocking prospects (which set her in a light so superior to all her Sex, and even to the philosophers of antiquity) have been manifested?

I know thou wilt think I am going to claim some merit to myself, for having given her such opportunities of fignalizing her virtues. But I am not; for, if I did, I must share that merit with her implacable relations, who would justly be entitled to two thirds of it, at least : And my foul disdains a partnership in

any-thing with fuch a family.

But this I mention as an answer to thy reproaches, that I could be so little edified by perfections, to which, thou supposeft, I was for so long together daily and hourly a personal witness---When, admirable as the was in all the faid, and in all the did, occafion had not at that time ripened, and called forth, those amazing perfections which now astonish and confound me.

Hence it is, that I admire her more than ever; and that my Love for her is less personal, as I may fay, more intellectual, than ever I thought it could be to woman.

Hence also it is, that I am confident (would it pleafe please the Fates to spare her, and make her mine) I could love her with a purity that would draw on my own FUTURE, as well as ensure her TEMPORAL happiness.---And hence, by necessary consequence, shall I be the most miserable of all men, if I am de-

prived of her.

Thou severely reflectest upon me for my levity: The Abbey instance in thine eye, I suppose. And I will be ingenuous enough to own, that as thou seest not my heart, there may be passages, in every one of my Letters, which (the melancholy occasion considered) deserve thy most pointed rebukes. But, faith, Jack, thou art such a tragi-comical mortal, with thy leaden aspirations at one time, and thy slying hourglasses and dreaming terrors at another, that, as Prior says, What serious is, thou turn'st to farce; and it is impossible to keep within the bounds of decorum or gravity, when one reads what thou writest.

But to restrain myself (for my constitutional gaiety was ready to run away with me again) I will repeat, I must ever repeat, that I am most egregiously affected with the circumstances of the case: And, were this Paragon actually to quit the world, should never enjoy myself one hour together, though I were to live

to the age of Methusalem.

n

S,

to

er

ra-

ca-

th,

ind

er;

nay

puld

d it

leafe

Indeed it is to this deep Concern, that my Levity is owing: For-I struggle and struggle, and try to buffer down my cruel reflections as they rise; and when I cannot, I am forced, as I have often said, to try to make myself laugh, that I may not cry; for one or other I must do: And is it not philosophy carried to the highest pitch, for a man to conquer such tumults of soul as I am sometimes agitated by, and, in the very height of the storm, to be able to quaver out an horse-laugh?

Your Seneca's, your Epictetus's, and the rest of your Stoical tribe, with all their Apathy-nonsense, could not come up to this. They could forbear wry

P 4

faces:

faces: Bodily pains they could well enough feem to fupport; and that was all: But the pangs of their own smitten-down Souls they could not laugh over, though they could at the follies of others. They re'd grave lectures; but they were grave. This high point of philosophy, to laugh and be merry in the midst of the most soul-harrowing woes, when the heart-strings are just bursting asunder, was reserved

for thy Lovelace.

There is something owing to Constitution, I own; and that this is the laughing time of my life. For what a woe must that be, which for an hour together can mortify a man of Six or Seven-and-twenty, in high blood and spirits, of a naturally gay disposition, who can sing, dance, and scribble, and take and give delight to them all?---But then my grief, as my joy, is sharper-pointed than most other men's; and, like what Dolly Welby once told me, describing the parturient throes, if there were not lucid intervals, if they did not come and go, there would be no bearing them.

AFTER all, as I am so little distant from the dear creature, and as she is so very ill, I think I cannot excuse myself from making her one visit. Nevertheless, if I thought her so near---[What word shall I use, that my soul is not shocked at!] and that she would be too much discomposed by a visit; I would not think of it.---Yet how can I bear the recollection, that, when she last went from me (her innocence so triumphant over my premeditated guilt, as was enough to reconcile her to life, and to set her above the sense of injuries so nobly sustained, that) she should then depart with an incurable fracture in her heart; and that that should be the last time I should ever see her!---How, how, can I bear this resection!

O Jack! how my Conscience, that gives edge even

even to thy blunt reflections, tears me!---Even this moment would I give the world to punish the cruel reproacher from me by one ray of my usual gaiety!---Sick of myself!---Sick of the remembrance of my vile plots; and of my light, my momentary ecstasy [Villainous burglar, felon, thief, that I was!] which has brought upon me such durable and such beavy remorse! what would I give that I had not been guilty of such barbarous and ungrateful persidy to the most excellent of God's creatures!

I would end, methinks, with one sprightlier line!
---But it will not be.---Let me tell thee then, and re-

joice at it if thou wilt, that I am

Inexpressibly miserable!

LETTER LXXXV.

Mr. Belford, To Robert Lovelace, Efq;

Sat. Morning, Sept. 2.

J HAVE some little pleasure given me by thine, just now brought me. I see now that thou hast a little humanity lest. Would to heaven, for the dear Lady's sake, as well as for thy own, that thou hadst romaged it up from all the dark forgotten corners of

thy foul a little fooner;

The Lady is alive, and ferene, and calm, and has all her noble intellects clear and ftrong: But Nineteen will not however fave her. She fays, she will now content herself with her closet duties, and the visits of the Parish-minister; and will not attempt to go out. Nor, indeed, will she, I am afraid, ever walk up or down a pair of stairs again.

I am forry at my foul to have this to fay: But it

would be a folly to flatter thee.

٢

d

As to thy feeing her, I believe the least hint of that

fort, now, would cut off some hours of her life.

What has contributed to her ferenity, it feems, is, That, taking the alarm her fits gave her, the has enWhich she had deferred doing till this time, in hopes, as she said, of some good news from Harlowe-Place; which would have induced her to alter some

passages in it.

Miss Howe's Letter was not given her till Four in the afternoon, yesterday; at what time the messenger returned for an Answer. She admitted him into her presence in the Dining-room, ill as she then was, and she would have written a few lines, as desired by Miss Howe; but, not being able to hold a pen, she bid the messenger tell her, that she hoped to be well enough to write a long Letter by the next day's post; and would not now detain him.

Saturday, Six in the Afternoon.

I CALLED just now, and found the Lady writing to Miss Howe. She made me a melancholy compliment, that she shewed me not Miss Howe's Letter, because I should soon have that and all her papers before me. But she told me, that Miss Howe had very considerately obviated to Colonel Morden several things which might have occasioned misapprehensions between him and me; and had likewise put a lighter construction, for the sake of peace, on some of your actions, than they deserved.

She added, That her Cousin Morden was warmly engaged in her favour with her friends: And one good piece of news Miss Howe's Letter contained; that her Father would give up some matters, which (appertaining to her of right) would make my Executorship the easier in some particulars that had given

her a little pain.

She owned she had been obliged to leave off (in the

Letter she was writing) through weakness.

Will. fays, he shall reach you to-night. I shall fend in the morning; and if I find her not worse, will ride to Edgware, and return in the afternoon.

LET-

LETTER LXXXVI.

Miss Howe, To Miss CLARISSA HARLOWE. Tuesday, Aug. 29. My dearest Friend,

W E are at length returned to our own home. I had intended to wait on you in London: But my Mother is very ill --- Alas! my dear, she is very ill indeed --- And you are likewise very ill --- I see that by yours of the 25th---What shall I do, if I lofe two fuch near, and dear, and tender friends? She was taken ill yesterday at our last stage in our return home --- And has a violent furfeit and fever, and the Doctors are doubtful about her.

If the should die, how will all my pertnesses to her fly in my face !--- Why, why, did I ever vex her? She fays I have been all duty and obedience! -- She kindly forgets all my faults, and remembers everything I have been fo happy as to oblige her in. And

this cuts me to the heart.

h

ne

all

T.

I fee, I fee, my dear, you are very bad---And I cannot bear it. Do, my beloved Miss Harlowe, if you can be better, do, for my fake, be better; and fend me word of it. Let the bearer bring me a line. Be fure you fend me a line. If I lose you, my more than Sifter, and lose my Mother, I shall distrust my own conduct, and will not marry. And why should 1?--- Creeping, cringing in courtship !--- O my dear, these men are a vile race of Reptiles in our day, and mere Bears in their own. See in Lovelace all that is defirable in figure, in birth, and in fortune: But in his heart a devil!---See in Hickman---Indeed, my dear, I cannot tell what any-body can fee in Hickman, to be always preaching in his favour. And is it to be expected, that I, who could hardly bear controul from a Mother, should take it from a Husband?---From one too, who has neither more wit, nor more understanding, than myself? Yet he to

be my instructor! --- So he will, I suppose; but more by the insolence of his will, than by the merit of his counsel. It is in vain to think of it. I cannot be a Wise to any man breathing whom I at present know. This I the rather mention now, because, on my Mother's danger, I know you will be for pressing me the sooner to throw myself into another sort of protection, should I be deprived of her. But no more of this subject, or indeed of any other; for I am obliged to attend my Mamma, who cannot bear me out of her sight.

Wednesday, Aug. 30.

My Mother, Heaven be praised! has had a finenight, and is much better. Her sever has yielded to medicine! And now I can write once more with freedom and ease to you, in hopes that you also are better. If this be granted to my prayers, I shall again be happy. I write with still the more alacrity, as I have an opportunity given me to touch upon a subject in which you are nearly concerned.

You must know then, my dear, that your Cousin Morden has been here with me. He told me of an Interview he had on Monday at Lord M's with Lovelace; and asked me abundance of questions about you,

and about that villainous man.

I could have raised a fine slame between them if I would: But, observing that he is a man of very lively passions, and believing you would be miserable if any thing should happen to him from a quarrel with a man who is known to have so many advantages at his sword, I made not the worst of the subjects we talked of. But, as I could not tell untruths in his favour, you must think I said enough to make him curse the wretch.

I don't find, well as they all used to respect Colonel Morden, that he has influence enough upon them to bring them to any terms of Reconciliation.

What.

What can they mean by it !—But your Brother is come home, it feems: So, The Honour of the house,

The Reputation of the family, is all the cry!

The Colonel is exceedingly out of humour with them all. Yet has he not hitherto, it feems, feen your brutal Brother. I told him how ill you were, and communicated to him fome of the contents of your Letter. He admired you, curfed Lovelace, and raved against all your family.—He declared, that they were all unworthy of you.

At his earnest request, I permitted him to take some brief notes of such of the contents of your Letter to me, as I thought I could read to him; and, particularly, of your melancholy conclusion (a).

He fays, That none of your friends think you foull as you are; nor will believe it. He is fure they

all love you, and that dearly too.

If they do, their present hardness of heart will be the subject of everlasting remorse to them should you be taken from us---But now it seems [Barbarous wretches!] you are to suffer within an inch of your life.

He asked me questions about Mr. Belford: And when he had heard what I had to say of that gentleman, and his disinterested services to you, he raved at some villainous surmises thrown out against you by that officious pedant, Brand: Who, but for his gown, I find, would come off poorly enough between your Cousin and Lovelace.

He was so uneasy about you himself, that on Thursday the 24th he sent up an honest serious man (b), one Alston, a gentleman farmer, to enquire of your condition, your visitors, and the like; who brought him word, that you was very ill, and was put to great streights to support yourself: But as this was told him by the gentlewoman of the house where you lodge, who it seems mingled it with some tart, tho' deserved, reslections upon your relations cruelty.

it was not credited by them: And I myself hope it cannot be true; for surely you could not be so unjust, I will say, to my friendship, as to suffer any inconveniencies for want of money. I think I could not

forgive you, if it were fo.

The Colonel (as one of your Trustees) is resolved to see you put into possession of your Estate: And, in the mean time, he has actually engaged them to remit to him for you the produce of it accrued since your Grandsather's death (a very considerable sum); and proposes himself to attend you with it. But, by a hint he dropt, I find you had disappointed some people's littleness, by not writing to them for money and supplies; since they were determined to distress you, and to put you at desiance.

Like all the rest !--- I hope I may fay that without

offence.

Your Cousin imagines, that, before a Reconciliation takes place, they will insist, that you shall make such a Will, as to that Estate, as they shall approve of: But he declares, he will not go out of England till he has seen justice done you by every-body; and that you shall not be imposed on either by Friend or Foe—

By Relation or Foe, should he not have faid?---For a Friend will not impose upon a friend.

So, my dear, you are to buy your peace, if some

people are to have their wills!

Your Cousin [Not I, my dear, tho' it was always my opinion (a)] says, that the whole family is too rich to be either humble, considerate, or consented. And as for himself, he has an ample fortune, he says, and thinks of leaving it wholly to you.

Had this villain Lovelace confulted his worldly interest only, what a fortune would he have had in you, even altho' your marrying him had deprived you of a

paternal share!

am

01

yo

of

fel

laft

I am obliged to leave off here. But having a good deal still to write, and my Mother better, I will purfue the subject in another Letter, altho' I send both together. I need not say how much I am, and will ever be,

Your affectionate, &c.

ANNA Howe.

LETTER LXXXVII.

Miss Howe, To Miss CLARISSA HARLOWE.
Thursday, Aug. 31.

THE Colonel thought fit once, in praise of Lovelace's generosity, to say, That (as a man of bonour ought) he took to himself all the blame, and acquitted you of the consequences of the precipitate step you had taken; since, he said, as you loved him, and was in his power, he must have had advantages, which he would not have had, if you had continued at your Father's, or at any Friend's.

Mighty generous, I faid (were it as he supposed) in such insolent reflectors, the best of them; who pretend to clear reputations which never had been suitied but by falling into their dirty acquaintance! But in this case, I averred, that there was no need of anything but the strictest truth, to demonstrate Lovelace to be the blackest of villains, You the brightest of innocents.

This he catched at; and fwore, that if any-thing uncommon or barbarous in the seduction were to come out, as indeed one of the Letters you had written to your friends, and which had been shewn him, very strongly implied; that is to say, my dear, If anything worse than perjury, breach of saith, and abuse of a generous considence, were to appear !---[Sorry sellows!] he would avenge his Cousin to the utmost.

15

00

d

d

n•

u,

m

I urged your apprehensions on this head from your last Letter to me: But he seemed capable of taking

what I know to be real Greatness of Soul, in an unworthy sense: For he mentioned directly upon it, the expectation your friends had, that you should (previous to any Reconciliation with them) appear in a Court of Justice against the villain---IF you could do it with the advantage to yourself that I hinted might be done.

And truly, if I would have heard him, he had indelicacy enough to have gone into the nature of the proof of the crime upon which they wanted to have Lovelace arraigned. Yet this is a Man improved by Travel and Learning!- -Upon my word, my dear, I, who have been accustomed to the most delicate conversation ever since I had the honour to know you, despise this Sex from the gentleman down to the peafant.

Upon the whole, I find that Mr. Morden has a very flender notion of women's virtue, in particular cases: For which reason I put him down, tho' your favourite, as one who is not entitled to cast the first

frone ..

I never knew a man who deserved to be well thought of himself for his morals, who had a slight opinion of the virtue of our Sex in general. For if, from the difference of Temperament and Education, Modesty, Chastity, and Piety too, are not to be found in our Sex preserably to the other, I should think it a sign of a much worse nature in ours.

He even hinted (as from your relations indeed) that it is impossible but there must be some Will where

to

de

yo

hea

ing

mai

rela

(0

ning

there is much Love.

These fort of reflections are enough to make a woman, who has at heart her own honour and the honour-of her Sex, to look about her, and consider what she is doing when she enters into an intimacy with these wretches; since it is plain, that whenever she throws herself into the power of a man, and leaves for him her Parents or Guardians, every-body will believe

believe it to be owing more to her good luck than to her discretion, if there be not an end of her virtue: And let the man be ever such a villain to her, she must take into her own bosom a share of his guilty baseness.

I am writing to general cases. You, my dear, are out of the question. Your Story, as I have heretofore said, will afford a Warning as well as an Example (a): For who is it that will not inser, That if a
person of your fortune, character, and merit, could
not escape ruin, after she had put herself into the
power of her byena, what can a thoughtless, fond,
giddy creature expect?

Every man, they will fay, is not a LOVELACE.— True: But then, neither is every woman a CLA-RISSA. And allow for the one and for the other,

the Example must be of general use.

I prepared Mr. Morden to expect your appointment of Mr. Belford for an office that we both hope he will have no occasion to act in (nor any-body else) for many, very many years to come. He was at first startled at it: But, upon hearing such of your reasons as had satisfied me, he only said, That such an appointment, were it to take place, would exceedingly affect his other Cousins.

He told me, He had a copy of Lovelace's Letter to you, imploring your pardon, and offering to undergo any penance to procure it (b); and also of

your Answer to it (c).

d)

18

2

he

der

acy

ver

ves

eve

I find he is willing to hope, that a Marriage between you may still take place; which, he says, will

heal up all breaches.

I would have written much more---On the following particulars especially; to wit, Of the wretched man's hunting you out of your lodgings: Of your relations strange implacableness [I am in haste, and]

⁽a) See Vol. IV. p. 61. (b) See Letter xxviii, of this Vas-

cannot think of a word you would like better, just now]: Of your last Letter to Lovelace, to divert him from pursuing you: Of your Aunt Hervey's penitential conversation with Mrs. Norton: Of Mr. Wyerley's renewed address: Of your lessons to me in Hickman's behalf, so approveable, were the man more fo than he is: But indeed I am offended with him at this instant, and have been for these two days: --- Of your Sifter's transportation-project :--- And of twenty and twenty other things: --- But am obliged to leave off, to attend my two Cousins Spilsworth, and my Cousin Herbert, who are come to visit us on account of my Mother's illness--- I will therefore difpatch these by Rogers; and if my Mother gets well foon (as I hope she will) I am resolved to see you in town, and tell you every-thing that now is upon my mind; and particularly, mingling my Soul with yours, how much I am, and will ever be, my dearest, dear friend,

Your affectionate
ANNA Howe.

Let Rogers bring one line, I pray you. I thought to have fent him this afternoon; but he cannot fet out till to-morrow morning early.

I cannot express how much your staggering lines,

and your conclusion, affect me!

LETTER LXXXVIII.

Mr. Belford, To Robert Lovelace, Efg; Sunday Evening, Sept. 3.

I Wonder not at the impatience your fervant tells me you express to hear from me. I was designing to write you a long Letter, and was just returned from Smith's for that purpose; but, since you are so urgent, you must be contented with a short one.

I attended the Lady this morning, just before I set

ih

out for Edgware. She was fo ill over-night, that she was obliged to leave unfinished her Letter to Miss Howe. But early this morning she made an end of it, and had just sealed it up as I came. She was so fatigued with writing, that she told me she would lie down after I was gone, and endeavour to recruit her

fpirits.

Ils

ng

ed

fet

out

They had fent for Mr. Goddard, when she was so ill last night; and not being able to see him out of her own chamber, he, for the first time, faw her House, as she calls it. He was extremely shocked and concerned at it; and chid Mrs. Smith and Mrs. Lovick for not perfuading her to have fuch an object removed from her bedchamber: And when they excused themfelves on the little authority it was reasonable to suppose they must have with a Lady so much their superior, he reflected warmly on those who had more authority, and who left her to proceed with fuch a shocking and solemn whimsy, as he called it.

It is placed near the window, like a harpfichord, tho' covered over to the ground: And when she is so ill, that she cannot well go to her closet, she writes and reads upon it, as others would upon a desk or table. But (only as fhe was fo ill last night) she chuses

not to fee any-body in that apartment.

I went to Edgware; and, returning in the evening, attended her again. She had a Letter brought her from Mrs. Norton (a long one, as it feems by its bulk) just before I came. But she had not opened it; and faid, That as she was pretty calm and composed, the was afraid to look into the contents, left the should be ruffled; expecting, now, to hear of nothing that could do her good or give her pleasure from that good woman's dear hard-hearted neighbours, as the called her own relations.

Seeing her so weak and ill, I withdrew; nor did the defire me to tarry, as fometimes the does, when

I make a motion to depart.

I had some hints, as I went away, from Mrs. Smith, that she had appropriated that evening to some offices, that were to save trouble, as she called it, after her departure; and had been giving orders to her Nurse, and to Mrs. Lovick, and Mrs. Smith, about what she would have done when she was gone; and I believe they were of a very delicate and affecting nature; but Mrs. Smith descended not to particulars.

The Doctor had been with her, as well as Mr. Goddard; and they both joined with great earnest-ness to persuade her to have her House removed out of her sight: But she assured them, that it gave her pleasure and spirits; and, being a necessary preparation, she wondered they should be surprised at it, when she had not any of her samily about her, or any old acquaintance, on whose care and exactness in these punctilio's, as she called them, she could rely.

The Doctor told Mrs. Smith, That he believed the would hold out long enough for any of her friends to have notice of her state, and to see her; and hardly longer; and since he could not find, that she had any certainty of seeing her Cousin Morden (which made it plain that her relations continued inslexible) he would go home, and write a Letter to her Father,

tu

n

n

de

en

28

to

and

it is

ung

affic

You

Sobr

take it as she would.

She had spent great part of the day in intense devotions; and to-morrow morning she is to have with her the same clergyman who has often attended her; from whose hands she will again receive the Sacrament.

Thou feeft, Lovelace, that all is preparing, that all will be ready; and I am to attend her to-morrow afternoon, to take some instructions from her in relation to my part in the office to be performed for her. And thus, omitting the particulars of a fine converation between her and Mrs. Lovick, which the latter acquainted me with, as well as another between her

and the Doctor and Apothecary, which I had a defign this evening to give you, they being of a very affecting nature, I have yielded to your impatience.

I shall dispatch Harry to-morrow morning early with her Letter to Miss Howe: An offer she took very kindly; as she is extremely solicitous to lessen that young Lady's apprehensions for her on not hearing from her by Saturday's post: And yet, if she write truth, as no doubt but she will, how can her apprehensions be lessened?

LETTER LXXXIX.

Miss CLARISSA HARLOWE, To Miss Howe.

Saturday Sept. 2.

Write, my beloved Miss Howe, the very ill still a But I could not by the return of your messenger;

for I was then unable to hold a pen.

e

r,

0-

th:

r;

20

nat:

WO

re-

er.

ra-

tter

her

and

Your Mother's illness (as mentioned in the first part of your Letter) gave me great distress for you, till I re'd farther. You bewailed it as became a Daughter so sensible. May you be blessed in each other for many, very many, happy years to come! I doubt not, that even this sudden and grievous indisposition, by the frame it has put you in, and the apprehension, it has given you of losing so dear a Mother, will contribute to the happiness I wish you: For, alas! my dear, we seldom know how to value the blessings we enjoy, till we are in danger of losing them, or have actually lost them: And then, what would we give to have them restored to us!

What, I wonder, has again happened between You and Mr. Hickman? Altho' I know it not, I dare fay it is owing to some pretty petulance, to some half-ungenerous advantage taken of his obligingness and assiduity. Will you never, my dear, give the weight You and all our Sex ought to give to the qualities of sobriety and Regularity of Life and Manners in that

Sex ?

Sex? Must bold creatures, and forward spirits, for ever, and by the best and wisest of us, as well as by the indiscreetest, be the most kindly treated?

My dear friends know not, that I bave actually

fuffered within lefs than an inch of my life.

Poor Mr. Brand! He meant well, I believe. I am afraid all will turn heavily upon him, when he probably imagined; that he was taking the best method to oblige. But were he not to have been so light of belief, and so weakly officious; and had given a more favourable, and, it would be strange if I could not say, a juster report; things would have been, nevertheless, exactly as they are.

I must lay down my pen. I am very ill. I believe I shall be better by-and-by. The bad writing would betray me, altho' I had a mind to keep from

you, what the event must soon-

Now I refume my trembling pen. Excuse the

unsteady writing. It will be fo-

I have wanted no money: So don't be angry about fuch a trifle as money. Yet am I glad of what you inclined me to hope, that my friends will give up the produce of my Grandfather's Estate since it has been in their hands: Because, knowing it to be my right, and that they could not want it, I had already disposed of a good part of it; and could only hope they would be willing to give it up at my last request. And now how rich shall I think myself in this my last stage!—And yet I did not want before—Indeed I did not—For who, that has many Superfluities, can be said to want!

Do not, my dear friend, be concerned that I call it my last stage; for what is even the long life which in high health we wish for? What, but, as we go along, a life of apprehension, sometimes for our friends, oftener for ourselves? And at last, when arrived at the Old Age we covet, one heavy loss or

deprivation

W

in

in

fay

gra

deprivation having succeeded another, we see ourselves stript, as I may say, of every one we loved; and find ourselves exposed, as uncompanionable poor creatures, to the slights, to the contempts, of jostling youth, who want to push us off the stage, in hopes to possess what we have:---And, superadded to all, our own infirmities every day encreasing: Of themselves enough to make the life we wished-for the greatest disease of all! Don't you remember the lines of Howard, which once you re'd to me in my Ivy-bower (a)?

In the disposition of what belongs to me, I have endeavoured to do every-thing in the justest and best manner I could think of; putting myself in my relations places, and, in the greater points, ordering my matters, as if no misunderstanding had happened.

I hope they will not think much of some bequests where wanted, and where due from my gratitude: But if they should, what is done, is done; and I cannot now help it. Yet I must repeat, that I hope, I hope, I have pleased every one of them. For I would not, on any account, have it thought, that, in my last disposition, any-thing undaughterly, unsisterly, or unlike a kinswoman, should have had place in a mind that is so truly free (as I will presume to say) from all resentment, that it now overslows with gratitude and blessings for the good I have received,

(a) These are the Lines the Lady refers to:

t

u

as

ly

pe

ſt.

aft

lid

be

call

ich

our

hen

or

tion

From Death we rose to Life: 'Tis but the same, Thro' Life to pass again from whence we came. With shame we see our Passions can prevail, Where Reason, Certainty, and Virtue sail. Honour, that empty name! can Death despise: Scorn'd Love, to Death, as to a refuge, sies; And Sorrow waits for Death with longing eyes. Hore triumphs o'er the thoughts of Death; and Fate Cheats sools, and slatters the unfortunate. We fear to lose, what a small time must waste, Till Life itself grows the disease at last. Begging for Life, we beg for more decay, And to be long a dying only pray.

altho'

altho' it be not all that my heart wished to receive. Were it even an hardship that I was not favoured with more, what is it but an hardship of half a year, against the most indulgent goodness of Eighteen years and an

half, that ever was shewn to a Daughter?

My Coulin, you tell me, thinks I was off my guard, and that I was taken at some advantage. Indeed, my dear, I was not. Indeed I gave no room for advantage to be taken of me. I hope, one day, that will be feen, if I have the justice done me which Mr. Belford affures me of.

I should hope, that my Cousin has not taken the liberties, which you (by an observation not, in general, unjust) feem to charge him with. For it is fed to think, that the generality of that Sex should make fo light of crimes, which they justly hold so unpardonable in their own most intimate relations of ours-Yet cannot commit them without doing fuch injuries to other families as they think themselves obliged to refent unto death, when offered to their

But we women are too often to blame on this head; fince the most virtuous among us seldom make Virtue the test of their approbation of the other Sex: Infomuch that a man may glory in his wickedness of this fort without being rejected on that account, even to the faces of women of unquestionable virtue. Hence it is, that a Libertine feldom thinks himself concerned fo much as to fave appearances: And what is it not that our Sex fuffers in their opinion on this very score? And what have I, more than many others, to answer for on this account, in the world's eye?

May my story be a warning to all, how they prefer a Libertine to a man of True Honour; and how they permit themselves to be missed (where they mean the best) by the specious, yet foolish hope of subduing riveted habits, and, as I may fay, of altering natures!--- The more foolish, as constant experience

might

and

my

me

luit

S

0

1-

it

ry

to

re-

WC

an

lu-

12-

nce

ght

might convince us, that there is hardly one in ten, of even tolerably happy Marriages, in which the Wife keeps the hold in the Husband's affections, which she had in the Lover's. What influence then can she hope to have over the morals of an avowed Libertine, who marries perhaps for conveniency, who despises the tie, and whom, it is too probable, nothing but Old Age, or Sickness, or Disease (the consequence of ruinous riot) can reclaim?

I am very glad you gave my Couf-

Sunday Morning (Sept. 3.) Six o'Clock.

HITHER I had written, and was forced to quit my pen. And so much weaker and worse I grew, that had I resumed it, to have closed here, it must have been with such trembling unsteadiness, that it would have given you more concern for me, than the delay of sending it away by last night's post can do. I deferred it therefore, to see how it would please God to deal with me. And I find myself, after a better night than I expected, lively and clear; and hope to give you a proof that I do, in the continuation of my Letter, which I will pursue as currently as if I had not left off.

Iam glad you so considerately gave my Cousin Morden savourable impressions of Mr. Belsord; since, otherwise, some misunderstanding might have happened between them: For altho' I hope this Mr. Belsord is an altered man, and in time will be a resormed one, yet is he one of those high spirits that has been accustomed to resent imaginary indignities to himself, when, I believe, he has not been studious to avoid giving real offences to others; men of this cast acting as if they thought all the world was made to bear with them,

and they with nobody in it.

Mr. Lovelace, you tell me, thought fit to intrust my Cousin with the copy of his Letter of penitence to me, and with my Answer to it, rejecting him and his suit: And Mr. Belford moreover acquaints me, how Vol. VII. much concerned Mr. Lovelace is for his baseness, and how freely he accused himself to my Cousin. This shews, that the true bravery of spirit is to be above doing a vileaction; and that nothing subjects the human mind to so much meanness, as the consciousness of having done wilful wrong to our fellow-creatures. How low, how sordid, are the submissions which elaborate baseness compels! That that wretch could treat me as he did, and then could so poorly creep to me for forgiveness of crimes so wilful, so black, and so premeditated! How my Soul despised him for his meanness on a certain occasion, of which you will one day be informed (a)! And him whose actions one's heart despises, it is far from being difficult to reject, had one ever so partially savoured him once.

Yet am I glad this violent spirit can thus creep; that, like a poisonous serpent, he can thus coil himself, and hide his head in his own narrow circlets; because this stooping, this abasement, gives me hope that no

further mischief will ensue.

All my apprehension is, what may happen when I am gone; lest then my Cousin, or any other of my family, should endeavour to avenge me, and risk their

own more precious lives on that account.

If that part of Cain's curse were Mr. Lovelace's To be a fugitive and vagabond in the earth; that is to say, if it meant no more harm to him, than that he should be obliged to travel, as it seems he intends (tho' I wish him no ill in his travels); and I could know it; then should I be easy in the hoped-for safety of my friends from his skilful violence—O that I could hear he was a thousand miles off!

When I began this Letter, I did not think I could have run to such a length. But 'tis to You, my dearest friend, and you have a title to the spirits you raise and

⁽a) Meaning his meditated fecond violence (See Vol. VI. Letter ziii.) and his fucceeding Letters to her supplicating for her pardon.

support; for they are no longer mine, and will sub-

fide the moment I cease writing to you.

But what do you bid me hope for, when you tell me, that if your Mother's health will permit, you will fee me in town? I hope your Mother's health will be perfected as you wish; but I dare not promise myself so great a favour; so great a blessing, I will call it—And indeed I know not if I should be able to bear it now!—

Yet one comfort it is in your power to give me; and that is, Let me know, and very speedily it must be, if you wish to oblige me, that all matters are made up between You and Mr. Hickman; to whom, I see, you are resolved, with all your bravery of spirit, to owe a multitude of obligations for his patience with your slightiness. Think of this, my dear proud friend! and think, likewise, of what I have often told you, That PRIDE, in man or woman, is an Extreme that hardly ever fails, sooner or later, to bring forth its mortifying CONTRARY.

May You, my dear Miss Howe, have no discomforts but what you make to yourself! As it will be in your own power to lessen such as these, they ought to be your punishment if you do not. There is no such thing as perfect happines here, since the busy mind will make to itself evils, were it to find none. You will therefore pardon this limited wish, strange as it may appear, till you consider it: For to wish you no insedicities, either within or without you, were to wish you what can never happen in this world; and what perhaps ought not to be wished-for, if by a wish one could give one's friend such an exemption; since we are not to live here always.

d

n

25

ıld

eft

and

etter

on.

up-

We must not, in short, expect, that our Roses will grow without Thorns: But then they are useful and instructive Thorns; which, by pricking the singers of the too hasty plucker, teach suture caution. And who knows not that difficulty gives poignancy to our en-

2 joyments;

joyments; which are apt to lose their relish with us when they are over-eafily obtained?

I must conclude-

God for ever bless you, and all you love and honour, and reward you here and hereafter for your kindness to Your ever obliged and affectionate

CLARISSA HARLOWE.

LETTER XC.

Mrs. NORTON, To Miss CLARISSA HARLOWE.

[In Answer to hers of Thursday, August 24. See p. 226.]

Thursday, Aug. 31. HAD written fooner, my dearest young Lady, but that I have been endeavouring ever fince the receipt of your last Letter, to obtain a private audience of your Mother, in hopes of leave to communicate it to her. But last night I was surprised by an invitation to breakfast at Harlowe-Place this morning: And the chariot came early to fetch me: An honour I did not expect.

When I came, I found there was to be a meeting of all your family with Colonel Morden at Harlowe-Place; and it was proposed by your Mother, and consented to, that I should be present. Your Cousin, I understand, had with difficulty brought this meeting to bear; for your Brother had before industriously avoided all conversation with him on the affecting subject; urging, That it was not necessary to talk to Mr. Morden upon it, who, being a remoter relation than themselves, had no business to make himself a judge of their conduct to their Daughter, their Niece, and their Sister; efpecially as he had declared himself in her favour; adding, That he should hardly have patience to be queltioned by Mr. Morden on that head.

I was in hopes that your Mother would have given me an opportunity of talking with her alone before the company met; but she seemed studiously to avoid it:

I dare fay, however, not with her inclination.

(d)

I was ordered in just before Mr. Morden came; and was bid to sit down---Which I did in the window.

The Colonel, when he came, began the discourse, by renewing, as he called it, his solicitations in your favour. He set before them your penitence; your ill health; your virtue, tho' once betrayed, and basely used: He then re'd to them Mr. Lovelace's Letter, a most contrite one indeed (a); and your high-souled answer (b); for that was what he justly called it; and he treated as it deserved Mr. Brand's officious information (of which I had before heard he had made them asham'd) by representations sounded upon enquiries made by Mr. Alston (c), whom he had procured to go up on purpose to acquaint himself with your manner of life, and what was meant by the visits of that Mr. Belford.

He then told them, That he had the day before waited upon Miss Howe, and had been shewn a Letter from you to her (d), and permitted to take some memorandums from it, in which you appeared, both by hand-writing, and the contents, to be so very ill, that it seemed doubtful to him, if it were possible for you to get over it. And when he re'd to them that passage, where you ask Miss Howe, 'What can be done for you now, were your friends to be ever so savourable? and wish, for their sakes, more than for your own, that they would still relent;' and then say, 'You are very ill-You must drop your pen-And ask excuse for your crooked writing; and take, as it were, a last farewel of Miss Howe: Adieu, my dear, adieu,' are your words; O my child! my child! said your Mamma, weep-

ing, and clasping her hands.

Dear Madam, said your Brother, be so good as to think you have more children than this ungrateful one.

Yet your Sister seemed affected.

Your Uncle Harlowe wiping his eyes, O Coufin faid he, if one thought the poor girl was really fo ill---

n

12:

15

(b) See p. 98.

(c) See p. 199

⁽a) See p. 85. (d) See p. 234.

She must, said your Uncle Antony. This is written to her private friend. God forbid she should be quite lost!

Your Uncle Harlowe wished they did not carry their

refentments too far.

I begged for God's fake, wringing my hands, and with a bended knee, that they would permit me to go up to you; engaging to give them a faithful account of the way you were in. But I was chidden by your Brother; and this occasioned some angry words between him and Mr. Morden.

I believe, Sir, I believe, Madam, faid your Sifter to her Father and Mother, we need not trouble my Cousin to read any more. It does but grieve and disturb you. My Sister Clary seems to be ill: I think, if Mrs. Norton were permitted to go up to her, it would be right. Wickedly as she has acted, if she be truly penitent.---

Here she stopt; and every one being silent, I stood up once more, and besought them to let me go: And then I offered to read a passage or two in your Letter to me of the 24th. But I was taken up again by your Brother; and this occasioned still higher words between the Colonel and him.

Your Mother, hoping to gain upon your inflexible Brother, and to divert the anger of the two gentlemen from each other, proposed that the Colonel should proceed in reading the minutes he had taken from your Letter.

He accordingly re'd, 'Of your refuming your pen: That you thought you had taken your last farewel;

and the rest of that very affecting passage, in which

you are obliged to break off more than once, and afterwards to take an airing in a chair.' Your Brother and Sister were affected at this; and he had recourse to his snuff-box. And where you comfort Miss Howe, and say, 'You shall be happy;' It is more, said he, than she will let any-body else be.

Your Sifter called you Sweet foul; but with a low voice:

voice: Then grew hard-hearted again; yet faid, Nobody could help being affected by your pathetic grief

--- but that it was your talent.

The Colonel then went on to the good effect your Airing had upon you; to your good wishes to Miss Howe and Mr. Hickman; and to your concluding fentence, That when the happy life you wish to her comes to be wound up, the may be as calm and as eafy at quitting it, as you hope in God you shall be. Your Mother could not stand this; but retired to a corner of the room, and fobbed, and wept. Your father for a few minutes could not speak, tho' he seemed inclined to fay fomething.

Your Uncles were also both affected :--- But your Brother went round to each; and again reminded your Mother, that she had other children: What was there, he faid, in what was re'd, but the refult of the talent you had of moving the passions? And he blamed them for chusing to hear re'd what they knew their

abused indulgence could not be proof against.

This fet Mr. Morden up again: Fie upon you, Cousin Harlowe! faid he --- I fee plainly to whom it is owing that all relationship and ties of blood with regard to this fweet fufferer are laid afide. Such rigours as these make it difficult for a sliding virtue ever to recover itself.

Your Brother pretended the honour of the family; and declared, that no child ought to be forgiven who abandoned the most indulgent of parents against warning, against the light of knowlege, as you had done.

But, Sir and Ladies, faid I, rifing from my feat in the window, and humbly turning round to each, If I may be permitted to fpeak, my dear Miss asks only for a Bleffing. She does not beg to be received to favour :: She is very ill, and asks only for a Last Bleffing.

Come, come, goody Norton [I need not tell you who faid this] you are up again with your Lamentables! --- A good woman, as you are, to forgive fo readily a

crime .

crime that has been as difgraceful to your part in her education, as to her family, is a weakness that would induce one to suspect your virtue, if you were to be encountered by a temptation properly adapted.

By some such charitable Logic, said Mr. Morden, as this, is my Cousin Arabella captivated, I doubt not. If to be uncharitable and unforgiving, is to give a proof of virtue, You, Mr. James Harlowe, are the most

virtuous young man in the world.

I knew how it would be, replied your Brother in a passion, if I met Mr. Morden upon this business. I would have declined it: But you, Sir, to his Father, would not permit me so to do.

But, Sir, turning to the Colonel, in no other pre-

fence---

Then, Cousin James, interrupted the other gentleman, that which is your protection, it seems, is mine. I am not used to bear defiances thus---You are my Cousin, Sir---and the Son and Nephew of persons as dear as near to me---There he paused---

Are we, faid your Father, to be made still more unhappy among ourselves, when the villain lives that ought to be the object of every one's resentment who has either a value for the family or for this ungrateful girl?

That's the man, faid your Cousin, whom last Monday, as you know, I went purposely to make the object of mine. But what could I say, when I sound him so willing to repair his crime?---And I give it as my opinion, and have written accordingly to my poor Cousin, that it is best for all round, that his offer should be accepted; and let me tell you---

Tell me nothing, faid your Father, quite enraged, of that very vile fellow! I have a riveted hatred to him. I would rather see the rebel die an hundred deaths, were it possible, than that she should give such a vil-

lain as him a relation to my family.

Well, but, there is no room to think, faid your Mother, that she will give us such a relation, my dear. The The poor girl will leffen, I fear, the number of our relations; not encrease it. If she be so ill as we are told she is, let us send Mrs. Norton up to her-That's the least we can do---Let us take her, however, out of the hands of that Belford.

Both your Uncles supported this motion; the latter

part of it especially.

Your Brother observed, in his ill-natured way, what a fine piece of consistency it was, in you, to resule the vile injurer, and the amends he offered; yet to throw yourself upon the protection of his fast friend.

Miss Harlowe was apprehensive, she said, that you would leave all you could leave to that pert creature. Miss Howe [So she called her] if you should die.

O do not, do not suppose that, my Bella, said your poor Mother. I cannot think of parting with my Clary---With all her faults, she is my child--Her reasons for her conduct are not heard. It would break my heart to lose her.---I think, my dear, to your Father, none so fit as I to go up, if you will give me leave:

And Mrs. Norton shall accompany me.

This was a sweet motion; and your Father paused upon it. Mr. Morden offered his service to escort her. Your Uncles seemed to approve of it. But your Brother dashed all. I hope, Sir, said he, to his Father; I hope, Madam, to his Mother; that you will not endeavour to recover a saulty Daughter, by losing an unculpable Son. I do declare, that if ever my Sister Clary darkens these doors again, I never will. I will set out, Madam, the same hour you go to London (on such an errand) to Edinburgh; and there I will reside; and try to forget that I have relations in England so near and so dear as you are now all to me.

Good Good! faid the Colonel, What a declaration is this!---And suppose, Sir, and suppose, Madam [turning to your Father and Mother] this should be the case,. Whether is it better, think you, that you should lose for ever such a Daughter as my Cousin Clary, or that

Q5,

your Son should go to Edinburgh, and reside there upon an Estate which will be the better for his resi-

dence upon it ?-

Your Brother's paffionate behaviour hereupon is hardly to be described. He refented it, as promoting an alienation of the affection of the family to him. And to fuch a height were refentments carried, every one fiding with him, that the Colonel, with hands and eyes lifted up, cried out, What hearts of flint am I re-Jated to !--- O Cousin Harlowe, to your Father, Are you refolved to have but one Daughter? Are you, Madam, to be taught by a Son who has no bowels to forget that you are a Mother?

The Colonel turned from them to draw out his handkerchief, and could not for a minute speak. The eyes of every one, but the hard hearted Brother,

caught tears from his.

But then turning to them (with the more indignation, as it feemed, as he had been obliged to fhew a humanity, which, however, no brave heart should be ashamed of) I leave ye all, faid he, fit company for one another. will never open my lips to any of you more upon this. subject. I will instantly make my Will, and in me shall the dear creature have the Father, Uncle, Brother, she has loft. I will prevail upon her to take the Tour of France and Italy with me; nor shall she return till ye know the value of fuch a Daughter.

And faying this, he hurried out of the room, went

into the Court- yard, and ordered his Horse.

Mr. Antony Harlowe went to him there, just as he was mounting; and faid, He hoped he should find him cooler in the evening (for he till then had lodged at his 'house); and that then they would converse calmly; and every one, mean time, would weigh all matters well---But the angry gentleman faid, Coufin Harlowe, I shall endeavour to discharge the obligations I owe to your civility, fince I have been in England: But I have been to treated by that hot-headed young man (who, as far

is I know, has done more to ruin his Sister than Love-lace himself, and this with the approbation of you all) that I will not again enter into your doors, or theirs. My servants shall have orders whither to bring what belongs to me from your house. I will see my dear Cousin Clary as soon as I can. And so God bless you all together!--Only this one word to your Nephew, if you please, That he wants to be taught the difference between Courage and Bluster; and it is happy for him, perhaps, that I am his kinsman; tho' I am sorry he is mine.

I wondered to hear your Uncle, on his return tothem all, repeat this; because of the consequences it may be attended with, tho' I hope it will not have badones: Yet it was considered as a fort of challenge, and so it confirmed every-body in your Brother's favour; and Miss Harlowe forgot not to inveigh against that

error which had brought on all these evils,

I took the liberty again, but with fear and tremb-

ling, to defire leave to attend you.

Before any other person could answer, your Brother said, I suppose you look upon yourself, Mrs. Norton, to be your own Mistress. Pray do you want our confents and courtship to go up?---If I may speak my mind, you and my Sister Clary are the fittest to be together.--Yet I wish you would not trouble your head about our family matters, till you are desired to do so.

But don't you know, Brother, faid Miss Harlowe, that the error of any branch of a family splits that family into two parties, and makes not only every common friend and acquaintance, but even fervants, judges over both?---This is one of the blessed effects.

of my Sifter Clary's fault!

There never was a creature fo criminal, faid your Father, looking with displeasure at me, who had not

some weak heads to pity and side with her.

I wept. Your Mother was fo good as to take me by the hand: Come, good woman, faid she, come along

with me. You have too much reason to be afflicted with what afflicts Us, to want additions to your grief.

But, my dearest young Lady, I was more touched for your sake than for my own: For I have been low in the world for a great number of years; and, of confequence, must have been accustomed to snubs and rebuffs from the affluent. But I hope, that patience is written as legibly on my forehead, as haughtiness on that of any of my obligers.

Your Mother led me to her chamber; and there we fat and wept together for several minutes, without being able to speak either of us one word to the other. At last she broke silence; asking me, If you were really

and indeed fo ill, as it was faid you were?

I answered in the affirmative; and would have shewn

her your last Letter; but she declined seeing it.

I would fain have procured from her the favour of a line to you, with her Blessing. I asked, What was intended by your Brother and Sister? Would nothing satisfy them but your final reprobation?---I infinuated, how easy it would be, did not your duty and humility govern you, to make yourself independent as to circumstances; but that nothing but a Blessing, a lask Blessing, was requested by you. And many other things I urged in your behalf. The following bries repetition of what she was pleased to say in answer to my pleas, will give you a notion of it all; and of the present situation of things.

She faid, 'She was very unhappy !--- She had loft the little authority she once had over her other children,

thro' one child's failing; and all influence over Mr.

· Harlowe and his Brothers. Your Father, she said,

had befought her to leave it to him to take his own.

methods with you; and (as she valued him) to take

ono step in your favour unknown to him and your

Uncles: Yet she owned, that they were too much governed by your Brother. They would, however,

give way in time, the knew, to a Reconciliation:
They

"They designed no other; for they all still lovedi

e you.

Your Brother and Sister, she owned, were very jealous of your coming into savour again: Yet could but Mr. Morden have kept his temper, and stood her Son's first sallies, who (having always had the samily grandeur in view) had carried his resentment so high, that he knew not how to descend, the conferences, so abruptly broken off just now, would have ended more happily; for that she had reason to think, that a few concessions on your part, with regard to your Grandsather's Estate, and your Cousin's engaging for your submission as from proper motives, would have softened them all.

'Mr. Brand's account of your intimacy with the friend of the obnoxious man, the faid, had, for the time, very unhappy effects; for before that the had gained fome ground: But afterwards dared not, nor indeed had inclination, to open her lips in your behalf. Your continued intimacy with that Mr. Belford was wholly unaccountable, and as wholly in-

excuseable.

What made the wished-for reconciliation, she said, more difficult, was, first, that you yourself acknowleged yourself dishonour'd (and it was too well known, that it was your own sault that you ever were in the power of so great a prossigate); of consequence, that their and your disgrace could not be greater than it was: Yet, that you refused to prosecute the wretch. Next, that the pardon and blessing hoped for must probably be attended with your Marriage to the man they hate, and who hates them as much: Very disagreeable circumstances, she said, I must allow, to found a reconciliation upon.

As to her own part, she must needs say, That is there were any hope that Mr. Lovelace would become a reformed man, the Letter her Cousin Morden had re'd to them from him to you, and the justice (as she

hoped

hoped it was) he did your character, tho' to his own

condemnation (his family and fortunes being unex-

ceptionable) and all his relations earnest to be related to you, were arguments that would have weight

with her, could they have any with your Father

and Uncles.'

To my plea of your illness, She could not but flatter herself, she answered, that it was from lowness of

fpirits, and temporary dejection. A young creature, fhe faid, so very considerate as you naturally were, and

fallen so low, must have enough of that. Should

they lose you, which God forbid! the scene would then indeed be fadly changed; for then those who

now most resented, would be most grieved; all your

fine qualities would rife to their remembrance, and your unhappy error would be quite forgotten.

She wished you would put yourself into your Cousin's protection entirely, and have nothing

more to fay to Mr. Belford.'

And I would recommend it to your most serious confideration, my dear Miss Clary, whether now, as your Cousin (who is your Trustee for your Grandfather's Estate) is come, you should not give over all thoughts of Mr. Lovelace's intimate friend for your Executor; more especially, as that gentleman's interfering in the concerns of your family, should the sad event take place (which my heart akes but to think of) might be attended with those consequences which you are so destrous, in other cases, to obviate and prevent. And suppose, my dear young Lady, you were to write one Letter more to each of your Uncles, to let them know how ill you are?—And to ask their advice, and offer to be governed by it, in relation to the disposition of your Estate and Essects?—Methinks I wish you would.

I find they will fend you up a large part of what has been received from that Estate, since it was yours; together with your current cash, which you lest behind you: And this by your Cousin Morden, for fear you

thould

should have contracted debts which may make you

uneafy.

They feem to expect that you will with

They feem to expect, that you will wish to live at your Grandfather's house, in a private manner, if your Cousin prevail not upon you to go abroad for a year or two.

Friday Morning.

BETTY was with me just now. She tells me, that your Cousin Morden is so much displeased with them all, that he has resused to lodge any more at your Uncle Antony's; and has even taken up with inconvenient lodgings, till he is provided with others to his mind. This very much concerns them; and they repent their violent treatment of him: And the more, as he is resolved, he says, to make you his sole Executrix, and Heir to all his fortune.

What noble fortunes still, my dearest young Lady, await you! I am thoroughly convinced, if it please. God to preserve your life and your health, that everybody will soon be reconciled to you, and that you will

fee many happy days.

Your Mother wished me not to attend you as yet, because she hopes that I may give myself that pleasure soon with every-body's good liking, and even at their desire. Your Cousin Morden's reconciliation with them, which they are very desirous of, I am ready to hope, will include theirs with you.

But if that should happen which I so much dread, and I not with you, I should never forgive myself. Let me, therefore, my dearest young Lady, desire you to command my attendance, if you find any danger, and if you wish me peace of mind; and no consi-

deration shall with-hold me.

I hear, that Miss Howe has obtained leave from her Mother to see you; and intends next week to go to town for that purpose; and (as it is believed) to buy cloaths for her approaching Nuptials.

Mr. Hickman's Mother-in-law is lately dead. Her jointure

jointure of 600/. a year is fallen to him; and she has, moreover, as an acknowlegement of his good behaviour to her, left him all she was worth, which was very confiderable, a few legacies excepted to her own relations.

These good men are uniformly good: Indeed could not else be good; and never fare the worse for being so. All the world agrees, he will make that fine young Lady an excellent Husband: And I am forry they are not as much agreed in her making him an excellent Wise. But I hope a woman of her principles would not encourage his address, if, whether she at present love him or not, she thought she could not love him; or if she preserved any other man to him.

Mr. Pocock undertakes to deliver This; but fears it will be Saturday night first, if not Sunday morning.

May the Almighty protect and bless you !— I long to fee you—My dearest young Lady, I long to see you; and to fold you once more to my fond heart. I dare to say, happy days are coming. Be but chearful. Give

way to hope.

Whether for this world, or the Other, you must be happy. Wish to live, however, were it only because you are so well fitted in mind to make every one happy who has the honour to know you. What signifies this transitory eclipse? You are as near perfection, by all I have heard, as any creature in this world can be: For here is your glory-You are brightened and purished, as I may say, by your sufferings!--How I long to hear your whole sad, yet instructive Story, from your own lips!

For Miss Howe's sake, who, in her new engagements, will so much want you; for your Cousin Morden's sake, for your Mother's sake, if I must go no farther in your family; and yet I can say, for all their sakes; and for my sake, my dearest Miss Clary; let your resumed and accustomed magnanimity bear you up. You have many things to do, which I know not

the person who will do, if you leave us.

Join your prayers then to mine, that God will spare you

you to a world that wants You and your Example; and, altho' your days may feem to have been numbered, who knows, but that, with the good King Hezekiah, you may have them prolonged? Which God grant, if it be his bleffed will, to the prayers of

Your JUDITH NORTON.

LETTER XCI.

Mr. Belford, To Robert Lovelace, Efq;
Monday, Sept. 4.

THE Lady would not read the Letter she had from Mrs. Norton, till she had received the Communion, for fear it should contain any-thing that might disturb that happy calm, which she had been endeavouring to obtain for it. And when that solemn office was over, she was so composed, she said, that she thought she could receive any news, however affecting, with tranquillity.

Nevertheless, in reading it, she was forced to leave off several times thro' weakness and a dimness in her sight, of which she complained; if I may say complained; for so easy and soft were her complaints, that

they could hardly be called fuch.

She was very much affected at divers parts of this Letter. She wept several times, and sighed often. Mrs. Lovick told me, that these were the gentle exclamations she broke out into, as she read:—Her unkind, ber cruel Brother!—How unsisterly!—Poor dear woman! seeming to speak of Mrs. Norton. Her kind Cousin!—O these flaming spirits!—And then reslecting upon herself more than once—What a deep error is mine!—What evils have I been the occasion of!—

When I was admitted to her presence, I have received, said she, a long and not very pleasing Letter from my dear Mrs. Norton. It will soon be in your hands. I am advised against appointing you to the office you have so kindly accepted of: But you must resent nothing of these

things.

things. My choice will have an odd appearance to them: But it is now too late to alter it, if I would.

I would fain write an answer to it, continued she :
But I have no distinct light, Mr. Belford, no steadiness of singers.—This mistiness, however, will perhaps be gone by-and-by.—Then turning to Mrs. Lovick, I don't think I am dying yet---not actually dying, Mrs. Lovick—For I have no bodily pain—No-numbnesses; no signs of immediate death, I think—And my breath, which used of late to be so short, is now tolerable—My head clear, my intellects free—I think I cannot be dying yet—I shall have agonies, I doubt—Life will not give up so blessedly easy, I fear—Yet how merciful is the Almighty, to give his poor creature such a sweet serenity!—"Tis what I have prayed for !—What encouragement, Mrs. Lovick, so near one's dissolution, to have it to hope, that one's prayers are answered!

Mrs. Smith, as well as Mrs. Lovick, was with her. They were both in tears; nor had I, any more than they, power to fay a word in answer: Yet she spoke all this, as well as what follows, with a surprising com-

posure of mind and countenance.

But, Mr. Belford, faid she, assuming a still sprightlier air and accent, let me talk a little to you, while I

am thus able to fay what I have to fay.

Mrs. Lovick, don't leave us [for the women were rising to go]---Pray sit down; and do you, Mrs. Smith, sit down too.---Dame Shelbourne, take this key, and open that upper drawer. I will move to it.

She did, with trembling knees. Here, Mr. Belford, is my Will. It is witnessed by three persons of Mr.

Smith's acquaintance.

I dare to hope, that my Cousin Morden will give you affistance, if you request it of him. My Cousin Morden continues his affection for me: But as I have not seen him, I leave all the trouble upon you, Mr. Belford. This Deed may want forms; and it does, no doubt: But the less, as I have my Grandfather's Will almost by heart.

heart, and have often enough heard that canvaffed. I will lay it by Itself in this corner; putting it at the farther end of the drawer.

She then took up a parcel of Letters, inclosed in one cover, fealed with three feals of black wax: This, faid the, I fealed up last night. The cover, Sir, will let you know what is to be done with what it incloses. This is the fuperscription [holding it close to her eyes, and rubbing them]; As foon as I am certainly dead, this to be broke open by Mr. Belford .- Here, Sir, I put it [placing it by the Will].—These folded papers are Letters and Copies of Letters, disposed according to their dates. Miss Howe will do with those as you and the shall think fit. If I receive any more, or more come when I cannot receive them, they may be put into this. drawer [pulling out and pushing in the Looking-grass drawer] to be given to Mr. Belford, be they from whom they will. You'll be fo kind as to observe That, Mrs. Lovick, and dame Shelbourne.

Here, Sir, proceeded she, I put the keys of my apparel [putting them into the drawers with her papers]. All is in order, and the Inventory upon them, and an account of what I have disposed of: So that nobody

need to ask Mrs. Smith any questions.

There will be no immediate need to open or inspect the trunks which contain my wearing apparel. Mrs. Norton will open them, or order somebody to do it for her, in your presence, Mrs. Lovick; for so I have di-

fhall never more have occasion to open them.

She then, tho' I expostulated with her to the con-

trary, caused me to seal them up with my seal.

n

e |--

t::

y

te.

After this, she locked the drawer where were her papers; first taking out her book of Meditations, as she called it; saying, She should, perhaps, have use for that; and then desired me to take the key of that drawer; for she should have no surther occasion for that neither.

All

All this in so composed and chearful a manner, that

we were equally furprifed and affected with it.

You can witness for me, Mrs. Smith, and so can you, Mrs. Lovick, proceeded she, if any one ask after my life and conversation, since you have known me, that I have been very orderly; have kept good hours; and never have lain out of your house, but when I was in prison; and then, you know I could not help it.

O Lovelace! that thou hadft heard her, or feen her, unknown to herfelf, on this occasion!—Not one of us

could fpeak a word.

I shall leave the world in perfect charity, proceededshe. And turning towards the women, Don't be so much concerned for me, my good friends. This is all but needful preparation; and I shall be very happy.

Then again rubbing her eyes, which she said were misty, and looking more intently round upon each, particularly on me---God bless you all! said she; how kindly are you concerned for me!--Who says, I am friendless? Who says, I am abandoned, and among strangers?---Good Mr. Belford, don't be so generously humane!---Indeed putting [her handkerchief to her charming eyes] you will make me less happy, than I am sure you wish me to be.

While we were thus folemnly engaged, a fervant came with a Letter from her Coufin Morden:--

Then, faid she, he is not come himself!

She broke it open; but every line, she said, appeared two to her: So that, being unable to read it herself, she desired I would read it to her. I did so; and wished it were more consolatory to her: But she was all patient attention; tears, however, often trickling down her cheeks. By the date, it was written yesterday; and this is the substance of it.

He tells her, 'That the Thursday before he had procured a general meeting of her principal relations, at

her Father's; tho' not without difficulty, her haughty

Brother opposing it, and, when met, rendering all his

endeavours to reconcile them to her ineffectual. He censures him, as the most ungovernable young man he ever knew: Some great sickness, he says, some heavy missortune, is wanted to bring him to a knowlege of himself, and of what is due from him to others;

and he wishes, that he were not her Brother, and his Cousin. Nor does he spare her Father and

'Uncles for being so implicitly led by him.'

He tells her, 'That he parted with them all in high displeasure, and thought never more to darken any of their doors: That he declared as much to her two Uncles, who came to him on Saturday, to try to accommodate with him; and who found him preparing to go to London to attend her; and that, notwithstanding their pressing entreaties, he determined so to do, and not to go with them to Harlowe-Place, or to either of their own houses; and accordingly dismissed them with such an answer.

But that her noble Letter, as he calls it, of Aug. 31. (a) being brought him about an hour after their departure, he thought it might affect them as much as it did him; and give them the exalted opinion of her virtue which was so well deserved; he therefore turned his horse's head back to her Uncle Antony's,

' instead of forwards towards London.

t

t

d

at

'That accordingly arriving there, and finding her two Uncles together, he re'd to them the affecting Letter; which left none of the three a dry eye: That the absent, as is usual in such cases, bearing all the load, they accused her Brother and Sister; and besought him to put off his journey to town, till he could carry with him the Blessings which she had formerly in vain solicited for; and (as they hoped) the happy tidings of a general Reconciliation.

'That not doubting but his visit would be the more welcome to her, if these good ends could be obtained, he the more readily complied with their desires. But

not being willing to subject himself to the possibility of receiving fresh insults from her Brother, he had

given her Uncles a copy of her Letter, for the fa-

mily to affemble upon; and defired to know, as foon as possible, the result of their deliberations.

He tells her, that he shall bring her up the accounts relating to the produce of her Grandfather's Estate,

and adjust them with her; having actually in his

* hands the arrears due to her from it.

358

'He highly applauds the noble manner in which she resents your usage of her. It is impossible, he owns,

that you can either deserve her, or to be forgiven.

But as you do justice to her virtue, and offer to make

her all the reparation now in your power; and as she is so very earnest with him not to resent that usage;

and declares, that you could not have been the author

of her calamities but thro' a strange concurrence of

unhappy causes; and as he is not at a loss to know

how to place to a proper account that strange con-

currence; he desires her not to be apprehensive of

any vindictive measures from him.

Nevertheless (as may be expected) 'he inveighs' against you; as he finds, that she gave you no ad-

· vantage over her. But he forbears to enter further

into this subject, he says, till he has the honour to

· fee her; and the rather, as she feems so much de-

termined against you. However, he cannot but

fay, that he thinks you a gallant man; and a man of

fense; and that you have the reputation of being

thought a generous man in every instance but where

the Sex is concerned. In fuch, he owns, that you

have taken inexcusable liberties. And he is forry

to fay, that there are very few young men of for-

tune but who allow themselves in the same. Both

Sexes, he observes, too much love to have each

each other in their power: Yet he hardly ever

knew man or woman who was very fond of power,

make a right ufe of it.

' If the be to absolutely determined against marrying you, as the declares the is, he hopes, he fays, to pre-

vail upon her to take (as foon as her health will per-

mit) a little Tour abroad with him, as what will probably establish it; fince travelling is certainly the best

physic for all those disorders which owe their rise to grief or disappointment. An absence of two or three

' years will endear her to every one, on her return,

and every one to her.

'He expresses his impatience to see her. He will fet out, he says, the moment he knows the result of her family's determination; which he doubts not will be favourable. Nor will he wait long for that.'

When I had re'd the Letter thro' to the languishing Lady, And so, my friends, said she, have I heard of a patient who actually died, while five or six principal physicians were in a consultation, and not agreed upon what name to give his distemper. The patient was an Emperor, the Emperor Joseph, I think.

I asked, If I should write to her Cousin, as he knew

not how ill she was, to hasten up?

By no means, she said; since, if he were not already set out, she was persuaded that she should be so low by the time he could receive my Letter, and come, that his presence would but discompose and

hurry ber, and afflict bim.

t

f

u

1-

th

ch

er

er,

H

I hope, however, she is not so very near her end. And without saying any more to her, when I retired, I wrote to Colonel Morden, that if he expects to see his beloved Cousin alive, he must lose no time in setting out. I sent this Letter by his own servant.

Dr. H. fent away his Letter to her Father by a par-

ticular hand this morning.

Mrs. Walton the Milaner has also just now acquainted Mrs. Smith, that her husband had a Letter brought by a special messenger from parson Brand, within this half hour, inclosing the copy of one he had written to Mr. John Harlowe, recanting his officious one.

And

And as all these, and the Copy of the Lady's Letter to Col. Morden, will be with them pretty much at a time, the devil's in the family if they are not struck with a remorse that shall burst open the double-barred doors of their hearts.

Will. engages to reach you with this (late as it will be) before you go to rest. He begs that I will testify for him the hour and the minute I shall give it him.

It is just half an hour after Ten.

I pretend to be (now by use) the swiftest short-hand writer in England, next to yourself. But were matter to arise every hour to write upon, and I had nothing else to do, I cannot write so fast as you expect. And let it be remembered, that your servants cannot bring Letters or Messages before they are written or sent.

J. BELFORD.

to

LETTER XCII.

Dr. H. To JAMES HARLOWE Senior, Esq;

If I may judge of the hearts of other parents by my own, I cannot doubt but you will take it well to be informed, that you have yet an opportunity to fave yourfelf and family great future regret, by dispatching hither some one of it, with your last Blessing, and your Lady's, to the most excellent of her Sex.

I have some reason to believe, Sir, that she has been represented to you in a very different light from the true one. And this it is that induces me to acquaint you, that I think her, on the best grounds, absolutely irreproachable in all her conduct which has passed under my eye, or come to my ear; and that her very missortunes are made glorious to her, and honourable to all that are related to her, by the use she has made of them; and by the patience and resignation with which she supports herself in a painful, lingering, and dispiriting decay! and by the greatness of mind with which she views

her approaching diffolution. And all this from proper motives; from motives in which a dying Saint

might glory.

She knows not that I write. I must indeed acknowlege, that I offered to do so some days ago, and that very pressingly: Nor did she resuse me from obstinacy—She seems not to know what that is—But desired me to forbear for two days only, in hopes that her newly-arrived Cousin, who, as she heard, was soliciting for her, would be able to succeed in her favour.

I hope I shall not be thought an officious man on this occasion: But if I am, I cannot help it; being driven to write, by a kind of parental and irresistible

impulse.

nt

ly

er

1-

all

n;

ip-

WS

her

But, Sir, whatever you think fit to do, or permit to be done, must be speedily done; for she cannot, I verily think, live a week: And how long of that short space she may enjoy her admirable intellects to take comfort in the savours you may think proper to confer upon her, cannot be said. I am, SIR,

Your most bumble Servant,

R. H.

261

LETTER XCIII.

Mr. BELFORD, To WILLIAM MORDEN, Efq;

SIR, London, Sept. 4.

THE urgency of the case, and the opportunity by your servant, will sufficiently apologize for this trouble from a stranger to your person; who, how-

ever, is not a stranger to your merit.

I understand you are employing your good offices with the Parents of Miss Clarissa Harlowe, and other relations, to reconcile them to the most meritorious Daughter and Kinswoman, that ever family had to boast of.

Generously as this is intended by you, we here have too much reason to think all your solicitudes on this Vol. VII.

head will be unnecessary: For it is the opinion of every one who has the honour of being admitted to her prefence, that she cannot live over three days: So that if you wish to see her alive, you must lose no time to come up.

She knows not that I write. I had done it sooner, if I had had the least doubt that before now she would not have received from you some news of the happy effects of your kind mediation in her behalf. I am, SIR,

Your most bumble Servant,

J. BELFORD.

LETTER XCIV.

Mr. LOVELACE, To JOHN BELFORD, Efq;

[In Answer to Letter xci.]

Uxbridge, Tuefday Morn. between 4 and 5.

AND can it be, that this admirable creature will fo foon leave this curfed world: For curfed I shall think it, and more curfed myself, when she is gone. O Jack! thou, who canst sit so cool, and, like Addison's Angel, direct, and even enjoy, the Storm, that tears up my happiness by the roots, blame me not for my impatience, however unreasonable! If thou knewest, that already I feel the torments of the damned, in the remorse that wrings my heart, on looking back upon my past actions by her, thou wouldst not be the devil thou art, to halloo on a worrying conscience, which, without thy merciless aggravations, is altogether intolerable.

I know not what I write, nor what I would write. When the company that used to delight me is as uneasy to me as my reslections are painful, and I can neither help nor divert myself, must not every servant about me partake in a perturbation so fincere?

Shall I give thee a faint picture of the horrible uneasiness with which my mind struggles? And faint in-

deed

deed it must be; for nothing but outrageous madness can exceed it; and that only in the apprehension of others; since, as to the sufferer, it is certain, that actual distraction (take it out of its lucid intervals) must be an infinitely more happy state than the state of suspense and anxiety, which often brings it on.

Forbidden to attend the dear creature, yet longing to see her, I would give the world to be admitted once more to her beloved presence. I ride towards London three or sour times a day, resolving pro and con. twenty times in two or three miles; and at last ride back; and, in view of Uxbridge, loathing even the kind friend, and hospitable house, turn my horse's head again towards the town, and resolve to gratify my humour, let her take it as she will; but, at the very entrance of it, after infinite canvassings, once more alter my mind, dreading to offend and shock her, lest, by that means, I should curtail a life so precious.

Yesterday, in particular, to give you an idea of the strength of that impatience, which I cannot avoid suffering to break out upon my servants, I had no sooner dispatched Will. than I took horse to meet him

on his return.

n

1.

e.

n-

an

nt

m-

in-

eed

In order to give him time, I loitered about on the road, riding up this Lane to the one highway, down that to the other, just as my horse pointed; all the way cursing my very being; and tho' so lately looking down upon all the world, wishing to change conditions with the poorest beggar that cried to me for charity as I rode by him---and throwing him money, in hopes to obtain by his prayers the blessing my heart pants after.

After I had fauntered about an hour or two (which feemed three or four tedious ones) fearing I had flipt the fellow, I enquired at every turnpike, whether a fervant in fuch a livery had not passed thro' in his return from London, on a full gallop; for woe had been to the dog, had I met him on a sluggish trot! And lest

R 2

I should miss him at one end of Kensington, as he might take either the Acton or Hammersmith road; or at the other, as he might come thro' the Park, or not; how many score times did I ride backwards and forwards from the Palace to the Gore, making myself the subject of observation to all passengers, whether on horseback or on foot; who, no doubt, wondered to see a well-dressed and well-mounted man, sometimes ambling, sometimes prancing (as the beast had more fire than his master) backwards and forwards in so short a compass!

Yet all this time, tho' longing to espy the fellow, did I dread to meet him, lest he should be charged with

fatal tidings.

When at distance I saw any man galloping towards me, my resemblance-forming fancy immediately made it to be him; and then my heart bounded to my mouth, as if it would have choaked me. But when the person's nearer approach undeceived me, how did I curse the variet's delay, and thee by turns! And how ready was I to draw my pistol at the stranger, for having the impudence to gallop; which none but my messenger, I thought, had either right or reason to do! For all the business of the world I am ready to imagine should stand still on an occasion so melancholy and so interesting to me. Nay, for this week past, I could cut the throat of any man or woman I see laugh, while I am in such dejection of mind.

I am now convinced that the wretches who fly from a heavy scene, labour under ten times more distress in the intermediate suspense and apprehension, than they could have, were they present at it, and to see and know the worst: So capable is fancy or imagination, the more immediate offspring of the soul, to outgo sact, let the subject be either joyous or grievous.

And hence, as I conceive, it is, that all pleasures are greater in the expectation, or in the reflection, than in fruition; as all pains, which press heavy upon both parts of that unequal union by which frail mortality

0

es

an

th

ty

ds

holds its precarious tenure, are ever most acute in the time of suffering: For how easy sit upon the reflection the heaviest missfortunes, when surmounted!—But most easy, I confess, those in which Body has more concern than Soul. This, however, is a point of philosophy I have neither time nor head just now to weigh: So take it as it falls from a madman's pen.

Woe be to either of the wretches who shall bring me the fatal news that she is no more! For it is but too likely that a shriek-owl so hated will never whoot or scream again; unless the shock, that will probably disorder my whole frame on so sad an occasion (by un-fleadying my hand) shall divert my aim from his head, heart, or bowels, if it turn not against my own.

But, furely, the will not, the cannot yet die!

Such a matchless excellence,

----whose mind

Contains a world, and seems for all things fram'd,

But may it not be, that thou, Belford, art in a plot with the dear creature (who will not let me attend her to convince myself) in order to work up my foul to the deepest remorse; and that, when she is convinced of the sincerity of my penitence, and when my mind is made such wax, as to be fit to take what impression she pleases to give it, she will then raise me up with the joyful tidings of her returning health and acceptance of me!

What would I give to have it so! And when the happiness of bundreds, as well as the peace and reconciliation of several eminent families, depend upon ber restoration and happiness, why should it not be so?

But let me presume it will. Let me indulge my former hope, however improbable.-- I will; and enjoy it too. And let me tell thee how ecstatic my delight would be on the unravelling of such a plot as this!

Do, dear Belford, let it be fo!—And, O my
R 3 dearest,

dearest, and ever-dear Clarissa, keep me no longer in this cruel suspense; in which I suffer a thousand times more than ever I made thee suffer. Nor fear thou that I will resent, or recede, on an eclaircissement so desirable: For I will adore thee for ever, and, without reproaching thee for the pangs thou hast tortured me with, confess thee as much my superior in noble and generous contrivances, as thou art in virtue and honour!

But, once more---Should the worst happen---fay not what that worst is---and I am gone from this hated Island---Gone for ever---And may eternal---But I am crazed already---and will therefore conclude myself,

Thine more than my own,

(And no great compliment neither)

R. L.

LETTER XCV.

Mr. BELFORD, To ROBERT LOVELACE, Efq:

WHEN I re'd yours of this morning, I could not help pitying you for the account you give of the dreadful anxiety and suspense you labour under. I wish from my heart all were to end as you are so willing to hope: But it will not be; and your suspense, if the worst part of your torment, as you say it is, will soon be over; but, alas! in a way you wish not.

I attended the Lady just now. She is extremely ill: Yet is she aiming at an Answer to her Norton's Letter, which she began yesterday in her own chamber, and has written a good deal; but in a hand not like her own fine one, as Mrs. Lovick tells me, but much larger, and the lines crooked.

I have accepted of the offer of a room adjoining to the widow Lovick's, till I fee how matters go; but unknown to the Lady; and I shall go home every night, for a few hours. I would not lose a sentence

that

that I could gain from lips to instructive, nor the opportunity of receiving any command from her, for an Estate.

In this my new apartment, I now write, and shall continue to write, as occasions offer, that I may be the more circumstantial: But I depend upon the return of my Letters, or copies of them, on demand, that I may have together all that relates to this affecting Story; which I shall reperuse with melancholy pleasure to the end of my life.

I think I will fend thee Brand's Letter to Mr. John Harlowe, recanting his base surmizes. It is a match-less piece of pedantry; and may perhaps a little divert thy deep chagrin: Some time hence at least it may,

if not now.

What wretched creatures are there in the world! What strangely mixed characters!—So sensible and so silly at the same time! What a various, what a foolish creature is man!---

Three o'clock.

THE Lady has just finished her Letter, and has entertained Mrs. Lovick, Mrs. Smith, and me, with a noble discourse on the vanity and brevity of life, to which I cannot do justice in the repetition: And indeed I am so grieved for her, that, ill as she is, my intellects are not half so clear as hers.

A few things which made the strongest impression upon me, as well from the sentiments themselves, as from her manner of uttering them, I remember. She

introduced them thus:

I am thinking, faid she, what a gradual and happy death God Almighty (Blessed be his name!) affords me! Who would have thought, that, suffering what I have suffered, and abandoned as I have been, with such a tender education as I have had, I should be so long a dying!—But see how by little and little it has come to this. I was first taken off from the power of walking: Then I took a coach—A coach grew too R 4 violent

violent an exercise: Then I took a chair --- The prison was a large DEATH-STRIDE upon me--- I should have suffered longer else! --- Next, I was unable to go to Church; then to go up or down stairs: Now hardly can move from one room to another: and a less room will foon hold me .--- My eyes begin to fail me, fo that at times I cannot fee to read diffinctly; and now I can hardly write, or hold a pen .-- Next, I prefume, I shall know nobody, nor be able to thank any of you; I therefore now once more thank you, Mrs. Lovick, and you, Mrs. Smith, and you, Mr. Belford, while I can thank you, for all your kindness to me. And thus by little and little, in fuch a gradual fenfible death as I am bleffed with, God dies away in us, as I may fay, all human fatisfaction, in order to fubdue his poor creatures to Himfelf.

Thou mayst guess how affected we all were at this moving account of her progressive weakness. We heard it with wet eyes; for what with the womens example, and what with her moving eloquence, I could no more help it than they. But we were silent nevertheless; and she went on applying herself to

me.

O Mr. Belford! This is a poor transitory life in its best enjoyments. We flutter about here and there, with all our vanities about us, like painted butterslies, for a gay, but a very short season, till at last we lay ourselves down in a quiescent state, and turn into vile worms: And who knows in what form, or to what

condition, we shall rife again?

I wish you would permit me, a young creature, just turned of Nineteen years of age, blooming and healthy as I was a few months ago, now nipt by the cold hand of death, to influence you, in these my lest hours, to a life of regularity and repentance for any past evils you may have been guilty of. For, believe me, Sir, that now, in this last stage, very few things will bear the test, or be passed as laudable, if pardonable,

one, in all we have done, or delighted in, even in a life not very offensive neither, as we may think!—Ought we not then to study in our full day, before the dark hours approach, so to live, as may afford reflections that will soften the agony of the last moments when they come, and let in upon the departing soul a ray of Divine Mercy to illuminate its pass-

age into an awful eternity?

She was ready to faint, and chufing to lie down, I withdrew; I need not fay, with a melancholy heart: And when I was got to my new-taken apartment, my heart was still more affected by the fight of the solemn Letter the admirable Lady had so lately finished. It was communicated to me by Mrs. Lovick; who had it to copy for me; but it was not to be delivered to me till after her departure. However, I trespassed so far, as to prevail upon the widow to let me take a copy of it; which I did directly in character.

I fend it inclosed. If thou canst read it, and thy heart not bleed at thy eyes, thy remorse can hardly be so deep as thou hast inclined me to think it is.

LETTER XCVI.

Miss CLARISSA HARLOWE, To Mrs. NORTON...
In Answer to Letter xc. (a).

My dearest Mrs. NORTON,

Am afraid I shall not be able to write all that is upon my mind to say to you upon the subject of

your last. Yet I will try.

As to my friends, and as to the fad breakfasting, I cannot help being afflicted for them. What, alas! has not my Mother, in particular, suffered by my rashness!---Yet to allow so much for a Son!---so little

R 5

⁽a) Begun on Monday Sept. 4- and by piecemeal finished on Tues-day; but not sent till the Thursday following.

for a Daughter! -- But all now will foon be over, as to me. I hope they will bury all their resentments in

my grave.

As to your Advice in relation to Mr. Belford, let me only fay, that the unhappy reprobation I have met with, and my short time, must be my apology now ---I wish I could have written to my Mother and my Uncles, as you advise. And yet, favours come so

flowly from them !---

The granting of one request only now remains as a defirable from them. Which nevertheless, when granted, I shall not be sensible of. It is, that they will be pleased to permit my remains to be laid with those of my ancestors --- Placed at the feet of my dear Grandfather, as I have mentioned in my Will. This, however, as they please. For, after all, this vile body ought not fo much to engage my cares. It is a weakness -- But let it be called a natural weakness. and I shall be excused; especially when a reverential gratitude shall be known to be the foundation of it. You know, my dear woman, how my Grandfather loved me. And you know how much I honoured him, and that from my very infancy to the hour of his death. How often fince have I wished, that he had not loved me fo well!

I wish not now, at the writing of this, to see even my Cousin Morden. O my blessed woman! My dear maternal friend! I am entering upon a better Tour, than to France or Italy either!--Or even than to settle at my once beloved dairy-house!---All these prospects and pleasures, which used to be so agreeable to me in health, how poor seem they to me now!---

Indeed, indeed, my dear Mamma Norton, I shall be happy! I know I shall!---I have charming fore-bodings of happiness already!---Tell all my dear friends, for their comfort, that I shall!---Who would not bear the punishments I have borne, to have the prospects and assurances I rejoice in!---Assurances I might

might not have had, were my own wishes to have

been granted to me!

Neither do I want to fee even you, my dear Mrs. Nevertheless, I must, in justice to my own gratitude, declare, that there was a time, could you have been permitted to come, without incurring difpleasure from those whose esteem it is necessary for you to cultivate and preserve, that your presence and comfortings would have been balm to my wounded mind. But were you now, even by consent, and with reconciliatory tidings, to come, it would but add to your grief; and the fight of one I so dearly love, so happily fraught with good news, might but draw me back to wishes I have had great struggles to get above. And let me tell you for your comfort, that I have not left undone any thing that ought to be done, either respecting mind or person; no, no to the minutest preparation: So that nothing is left for you to do for me. Every one has her direction as to the last offices.—And my desk, that I now write upon -O my dearest Mrs. Norton, All is provided !---All is ready! And all will be as decent as it should be!

And pray let my Miss Howe know, that by the time you will receive This, and she your signification of the contents of it, it will, in all probability, be too late for her to do me the inestimable favour, as I should once have thought it, to see me. God will have no rivals in the hearts of those he sanctifies. By various methods he deadens all other sensations, or rather absorbs them all in the love of Him.

I shall nevertheless love you, my Mamma Norton, and my Miss Howe, whose love to me has passed the Love of women, to my latest hour!—But yet, I am now above the quick sense of those pleasures, which once most delighted me: And once more I say, that I do not wish to see objects so dear to me,

R 6

Twice have I been forced to leave off. I wished, that my last writing might be to You, or to Miss Howe, if it might not be to my dearest Ma—

Mamma, I would have wrote---Is the word diffinct?---My eyes are so misty!---If, when I apply to you, I break off in half-words, do you supply them---The kindest are your due.---Be sure take the kindest, to fill up chasms with, if any chasms there be---

ANOTHER breaking off!---But the new day feems to rife upon me with healing in its wings. I have gotten, I think, a recruit of strength: Spirits, I bless God, I have not of late wanted.

Let my dearest Miss Howe purchase her wedding garments---And may all temporal blessings attend the charming preparation!---Blessings will, I make no question, notwithstanding the little cloudinesses that Mr. Hickman encounters with now-and-then, which are but prognostics of a future golden day to him: For her heart is good, and her head not wrong.--But great merit is coy, and that coyness has not always its foundation in pride: But, if it should seem to be pride, take off the skin-deep covering, and, in her, it is noble dissidence, and a love that wants-but to be assured?

Tell Mr. Hickman I write this, and write it, as I believe, with my last pen; and bid him bear a little at first, and forbear; and all the future will be crowning gratitude, and rewarding love: For Miss Howe has great sense, fine judgment, and exalted generotity; and can such a one be ungrateful or easy under those obligations which his assiduity and obligingness (when he shall be so happy as to call her his) will lay her under to him?

As for me, never Bride was fo ready as I am. My wedding garments are bought-And tho' not fine or gawdy to the fight, tho' not adorned with jewels, and fet off with gold and filver (for I have no beholders eyes to wish to glitter in); yet will they be the easiest, the happiest suit, that ever bridal maiden wore--for they are fuch as carry with them a fecurity against all those anxieties, pains, and perturbations, which fometimes fucceed to the most promifing outlettings.

And now, my dear Mrs. Norton, do I wish for

O hasten, good God, if it be thy blessed will, the happy moment that I am to be decked out in his allquieting garb! And fustain, comfort, bless, and protect with the all-fhadowing wing of thy mercy, my dear Parents, my Uncles, my Brother, my Sifter, my Cousin Morden, my ever-dear and ever-kind Miss Howe, my good Mrs. Norton, and every deferving person to whom they wish well! is the ardent prayer, first and last, of every beginning hour, as the clock tells it me (Hours now are days, nay years) of

Your now not forrowing or afflicted, but bappy, CLARISSA HARLOWE

LETTER XCVII.

Mr. LOVELACE, To JOHN BELFORD, Efg; Wedn. Morn. Sept. 6. half an hour after Three.

Am not the Savage which you and my worst enemies think me. My foul is too much penetrated bythe contents of the Letter which you inclosed in your last, to fay one word more to it, than that my heart has bled over it from every vein !- I will fly from the fubject-But what other can I chuse, that will not. be as grievous, and lead into the same?

I could quarrel with all the world; with thee, aswell as the rest; obliging as thou supposest thyself for,

writing.

writing to me hourly. How darest thou (tho' unknown to her) to presume to take an apartment under the same roof with her?—I cannot bear to think, that thou shouldst be seen at all hours passing to and repassing from her apartments, while I, who have so much reason to call her mine, and once was preserred by her to all the world, am forced to keep aloof, and hardly dare to enter the city where she is!

If there be any-thing in Brand's Letter that will divert me, hasten it to me. But nothing now will ever divert me, will ever again give me joy or pleafure! I can neither eat, drink, nor sleep. I am sick

of all the world.

Surely it will be better when all is over—when I know the worst the fates can do against me—Yet how shall I bear that worst?--- O Belford, Belford! write it not to me! But, if it must happen, get some-body else to write; for I shall curse the pen, the hand, the head, and the heart, employed in communicating to me the fatal tidings. But what is this saying, when already I curse the whole world except

her-Myfelf most?

In fine, I am a most miserable being. Life is a burden to me. I would not bear it upon these terms for one week more, let what would be my lot; for already is there a hell begun in my own mind. Never more mention to me, let her or who will fay it, the prison --- I cannot bear it --- May damnation feize quick the accurfed woman, who could fet death upon taking that large stride, as the dear creature calls it! --- I had no hand in it !--- But her relations, her implacable relations, have done the business. All else would have been got over. Never perfuade me but it would. The fire of youth, and the violence of paffion, would have pleaded for me to good purpose, with an individual of a Sex, which loves to be addreffed with paffionate ardor, even to tumult, had it not been for that cruelty and unforgivingness, which (the

(the object and the penitence confidered) have no example, and have aggravated the heinousness of my faults.

Unable to rest, the I went not to bed till Two, I dispatch this ere the day-dawn—Who knows what this night, this dismal night, may have produced!

I must after my messenger. I have told the variet. I will meet him, perhaps at Knightsbridge, perhaps in Piccadilly; and I trust not myself with pistols, not only on his account, but my own: For pistols are too ready a mischief.

I hope thou hast a Letter ready for him. He goes to thy lodgings first: For surely thou wilt not prefume to take thy rest in an apartment near hers. If he miss thee there, he slies to Smith's, and brings me

word whether in being, or not.

I shall look for him thro' the air as I ride, as well as on horseback; for if the prince of it serve me, as well as I have served bim, he will bring the dog by his ears, like another Habakkuk, to my saddle-bow,

with the tidings that my heart pants after.

Nothing but the excruciating pangs the condemned foul feels, at its entrance into the eternity of the torments we are taught to fear, can exceed what I now feel, and have felt for almost this week past; and mayest thou have a spice of those, if thou hast not a Letter ready written for

Thy LOVELACE.

LETTER XCVIII.

Mr. BELFORD, To ROBERT LOVELACE, Efq; Tuesday, Sept. 5. Six o'clock.

THE Lady remains exceedingly weak and ill. Her intellects, nevertheless, continue clear and strong, and her piety and patience are without example. Every one thinks this night will be her last. What a shocking thing is that to say of such an excellence strong

lence! She will not however fend away her Letter to her Norton, as yet. She endeavoured in vain to fuperscribe it: So defired me to do it. Her fingers will not hold her pen with the requifite fleadiness. She has, I fear, written and re'd her last!

Eight o'clock.

SHE is somewhat better than she was. The Doctor has been here, and thinks the will hold out yet a day or two. He has ordered her, as for some time past, only some little cordials to take when ready to faint. She feemed disappointed, when he told her the might yet live two or three days; and faid, She longed for dismission 1--- Life was not so easily extinguished, the faw, as some imagined .-- Death from grief, was, the believed, the flowest of deaths. But God's will must be done!---Her only prayer was now for submission to it: For she doubted not but by the Divine goodness the should be an happy creature, as soon as the could be divested of these rags of mortality.

Of her own accord she mentioned you; which, till then, she had avoided to do. She asked, with

great ferenity, where you were?

I told her where; and your motives of being for near; and read to her a few lines of yours of this morning, in which you mention your wishes to see her, your fincere affliction, and your resolution not to approach her without her confent.

I would have re'd more; but she faid, Enough, Mr. Belford, Enough !--- Poor Man, does his confcience begin to find him !--- Then need not any-body to wish him a greater punishment !- - May it work

upon him to an happy purpose!

I took the liberty to fay, that as she was in such a frame, that nothing now feemed capable of discompoling her, I could wish that you might have the benefit of her exhortations, which, I dared to fay, while you were fo ferioufly affected, would have a greater.

greater force upon you than a thousand sermons; and how happy you would think yourself, if you could but receive her forgiveness on your knees.

How can you think of fuch a thing, Mr. Belford? faid she, with some emotion: My composure is owing, next to the Divine goodness blessing my earnest supplications for it, to the not seeing him. Yet let him know, that I now again repeat, that I forgive him.—And may God Almighty, clasping her singers; and listing up her eyes, forgive him too; and perfect his repentance, and sanctify it to him!—Tell him I say so! And tell him, that if I could not say so with my whole heart, I should be very uneasy, and think that my hopes of mercy to myself were but weakly founded; and that I had still, in any harboured refentments, some hankerings after a life which he has been the cause of shortening.

The divine creature then turning afide her head—Poor man, faid she! I once could have loved him. This is faying more than ever I could say of any other man out of my own family! Would he have permitted me to have been an humble instrument to have made him good, I think I could have made him happy!—But tell him not this, if he be really penitent—It may too much affect him !--- There she

paused.

Admirable creature !--- Heavenly forgiver !--- Then refuming--- But pray tell him, that if I could know, that my death might be a means to reclaim and fave him, it would be an inexpressible satisfaction to me!

But let me not, however, be made uneasy with the apprehension of seeing him. I cannot bear to see him!

Just as she had done speaking, the minister, who had so often attended her, sent up his name; and was admitted.

Being apprehensive, that it would be with difficulty that you could prevail upon that impetuous spirit of yours, not to invade her in her dying hours, and of the agonies into which a furprize of this nature would throw her; I thought this gentleman's visit afforded a proper opportunity to renew the subject; and (having asked her leave) acquainted him with the

topic we had been upon.

The good man urged, That some condescensions were usually expected, on these solemn occasions, from pious souls like hers, however satisfied with themselves, for the sake of shewing the world, and for example-sake, that all resentments against those who had most injured them were subdued: And if she would vouchsafe to a heart so truly penitent, as I had represented Mr. Lovelace's to be, that personal pardon, which I had been pleading for, there would be no room to suppose the least lurking resentment remained; and it might have very happy effects upon

the gentleman.

I have no lurking resentment, Sir, said she---This is not a time for refentment: And you will be the readier to believe me, when I can affure you (looking at me) that even what I have most rejoiced in, the truly friendly Love that has fo long fubfifted between my Miss Howe and her Clarissa, altho' to my last gasp it will be the dearest to me of all that is dear in this life, has already abated of its fervor; has already given place to fupremer fervors: And shall the remembrance of Mr. Lovelace's personal infults, which, I bless God, never corrupted that mind which her friendship so much delighted, be stronger in these hours with me, than the remembrance of a Love as pure as the human heart ever boafted? Tell therefore the world, if you please, and (if, Mr. Belford, you think what I faid to you before, not strong enough) tell the poor man, that I not only forgive him, but have such earnest wishes for the good of his foul, and that from confiderations of its immortality, that could my penitence avail for more fins than my own, my last tear should fall for him by whom I die!

Our eyes and hands expressed to us both, what

our lips could not utter.

Say not then, proceeded she, nor let it be said, that my resentments are unsubdued!---And yet these eyes, listed up to Heaven as witness to the truth of what I have said, shall never, it I can help it, behold him more!---For do you not consider, Sirs, how short my time is; what much more important subjects I have to employ it upon; and how unable I should be (so weak as I am) to contend even with the avowed penitence of a person in strong health, governed by passions unabated, and always violent?---And now I hope you will never urge me more on this subject.

The minister said, it were pity ever to urge this

plea again.

You see, Lovelace, that I did not forget the office of a friend, in endeavouring to prevail upon her to give you her last forgiveness personally. And I hope, as she is so near her end, you will not invade her in her last hours; since she must be extremely discomposed at such an interview; and it might make her leave the world the sooner for it.

This reminds me of an expression which she used on your barbarous hunting her at Smith's, on her return to her lodgings; and that with a serenity unexampled (as Mrs. Lovick told me, considering the occasion, and the trouble given her by it, and her indisposition at the time): He will not let me die decently, said the angelic sufferer!---He will not let me enter into my Maker's presence, with the composure that is required in entering into the drawing-room of an earthly prince!

I cannot, however, forbear to wish, that the heavenly creature could have prevailed upon herself, in these her last hours, to see you; and that for my sake, as well as yours: For altho' I am determined never to be guilty of the crimes, which till within these sew

past

past weeks have blackened my former life; and for which, at present, I most heartily hate myself; yet should I be less apprehensive of a relapse, if (wrought upon by the solemnity which such an interview must have been attended with) you had become a reformed man: For no devil do I fear, but one in your shape.

It is now Eleven o'clock at night. The Lady, who retired to rest an hour ago, is, as Mrs. Lovick

tells me, in a fweet flumber.

I will close here. I hope I shall find her the better for it in the morning. Yet, alas! how frail is hope! How frail is life; when we are apt to build so much on every shadowy relief; altho' in such a desperate case as this, sitting down to reslect, we must know, that it is but shadowy!

I will inclose Brand's horrid pedantry. And for once am aforehand with thy ravenous impatience.

LETTER XCIX.

Mr. BRAND, To Mr. JOHN WALTON.

Dear Mr. WALTON. Sat. Night, Sept. 2. TAM obliged to you for the very handsomely penned (and elegantly written) Letter which you have fent me on purpose to do justice to the character of the. younger Miss Harlowe: And yet I must tell you, that I had reason, before that came, to think (and to know indeed) that we were all wrong: And fo I had employed the greatest part of this week, in drawing up an apologetical Letter to my worthy Patron Mr. John Harlowe, in order to fet all matters right between me and them, and (as far as I could) between them and Miss. So it required little more than connexion and transcribing, when I received yours; and it will be with Mr. Harlowe aforefaid, to-morrow morning; and this, and the copy of that, will be with you on Monday morning. You

You cannot imagine how forry I am, that you, and Mrs. Walton, and Mrs. Barker, and I myfelf, should have taken matters up so lightly (judging, alas a-day! by appearance and conjecture) where character and reputation are concerned. Horace says truly,

Et semel emissum volat irrevocabile verbum.

That is, Words once spoken cannot be recalled: But (Mr. Walton) they may be contradicted by other Words: and we may confess ourselves guilty of a mistake; and express our concern for being mistaken; and resolve to make our mistake a warning to us for the future: And this is all that can be done; and what every worthy mind will do; and what nobody can be readier to do, than we four undesigning offenders (as I see by your Letter, on your part; and as you will see by the inclosed copy, on mine); which, if it be received as I think it ought (and as I believe it will) must give me a speedy opportunity to see you, when I visit the Lady; to whom (as you will see in it) I expect to be sent up with the olive-branch.

The matter in which we all erred, must be owned to be very nice; and (Mr. Belford's character considered) appearances ran very strong against the Lady: But all that this serveth to shew, is, That in doubtful matters the wifest people may be mistaken; for so saith

the Poet,

1)

e

d,

ou

Fallitur in dubiis hominum folertia rebus.

If you have an opportunity, you may (as if from yourself, and unknown to me) shew the inclosed to Mr. Belford, who (you tell me) resenteth the matter very heinously; but not to let him see, or hear read, those words that relate to him, in the paragraph at the bottom of the second page, beginning [But yet I do insist upon it] to the End of that paragraph; for one would not make one's self enemies,

you

yo

eve

you know: And I have reason to think, that this Mr. Belford is as paffionate and fierce a man as Mr. Lovelace. What pity it is the Lady could find no worthier a Protector ! You may paste those lines over with blue or black paper, before he feeth it; and if he infifteth upon taking a copy of my Letter (for he, or any-body, that feeth it, or heareth it read, will, no doubt, be glad to have by them the copy of a Letter fo full of the fentiments of the noblest writers of antiquity, and so well adapted, as I will be bold to fay they are, to the point in hand; I fay, if he infifteth upon taking a copy) let him give you the strongest assurances not to suffer it to be printed, on any account; and I make the fame request to you, that you will not: For if any-thing be to be made of a man's works, who, but the author, should have the advantage? And if the Spectators, the Tatlers, the Examiners, the Guardians, and other of our polite papers, make fuch a strutting with a single verse, or fo, by way of motto, in the front of each day's paper; and if other authors pride themselves in finding out and embellishing the title-pages of their books with a verse or adage from the classical writers; what a figure would fuch a Letter as the inclosed make, fo full fraught with admirable precepts, and à propos quotations, from the best authority?

I have been told, that a certain noble Lord, who once fat himself down to write a pamphlet in behalf of a great minister, after taking infinite pains to no purpose to find a Latin motto, gave commission to a friend of his to offer to any one, who could help him to a suitable one, but of one or two lines, a hamper of claret. Accordingly, his Lordship had a motto found him from Juvenal; which he unhappily miftaking (not knowing Juvenal was a poet) printed as

a prose sentence in his title page.

If then one or two lines were of so much worth (A hamper of claret! No less!) of what inestimable value

the

walue would fuch a Letter as mine be deemed?---And who knoweth but that this noble P---r (who is now (a) living) if he should happen to see this Letter shining with such a glorious string of jewels, might give the writer a scarf, in order to have him always at hand, or be a means (some way or other) to bring him into notice? And I will be bold to say (bad as the world is) a man of sound learning wanteth nothing but an initiation, to make his fortune.

I hope (my good friend) that the Lady will not die: I shall be much grieved, if she doth; and the more, because of mine unhappy misrepresentation: So will you, for the same cause: So will her parents and friends. They are very rich and very worthy

Gentlefolks.

0

as

th

le

ue

But let me tell you, by-the-by, that they had carried the matter against her so far, that I believe in my heart they were glad to justify themselves by my report; and would have been less pleased, had I made a more favourable one: And yet in their hearts they dote upon her. But now they are all (as I hear) inclined to be friends with her, and forgive her; her

Brother, as well as the reft.

But their Cousin, Col. Morden, a very fine Gentleman, had had such high words with them, and they with him; that they know not how to stoop, lest it should look like being frighted into an Accommodation. Hence it is, that I have taken the greater liberty to press the Reconciliation; and I hope in such good season, that they will all be pleased with it: For can they have a better handle to save their pride all around, than by my Mediation? And let me tell you. (inter nos, betwixt ourselves) very proud they all are.

By this honest means (for by dishonest ones I would not be Archbishop of Canterbury) I hope to please every-body; to be forgiven, in the first place, by

(a) i. e. At the time this Letter was written.

the Lady (whom, being a lover of learning and learned men, I shall have great opportunities of obliging.—
For, when she departed from her Father's house, I had but just the honour of her notice, and she seemed highly pleased with my conversation); and, next, to be thanked and respected by her parents, and all her samily; as I am (I bless God for it) by my dear friend Mr. John Harlowe: Who indeed is a man that professeth a great esteem for men of erudition; and who (with singular delight, I know) will run over with me the Authorities I have quoted, and wonder at my memory, and the happy knack I have of recommending mine own sense of things in the words of the greatest sages of antiquity.

Excuse me, my good friend, for this feeming vanity. The great Cicero (you must have heard, I suppose) had a much greater spice of it, and wrote a long Letter begging and praying to be flattered: But if I say less of myself, than other people (who know me) say of me, I think I keep a medium between vanity and false modesty; the latter of which oftentimes gives itself the lye, when it is declaring off the compliments, that every-body gives it as its due: An hypocrify, as well as folly, that (I hope) I shall for

ever fcorn to be guilty of.

I have another reason (as I may tell to you, my old schoolfellow) to make me wish for this sine Lady's recovery and bealth; and that is (by some distant intimations) I have heard from Mr. John Harlowe, that it is very likely (because of the Slur she hath received) that she will chuse to live privately and penitently---and will probably (when she cometh into her Estate) keep a Chaplain to direct her in her devotions and penitence---If she doth, who can stand a better chance than myself?---And as I find (by your account, as well as by every-body's) that she is innocent as to intention, and is resolved never to think of Mr. Lovelace more, Who knoweth what (in time)

may bappen?—And yet it must be after Mr. Lovelace's death (which may possibly sooner happen than he thinketh of, by means of his detestable courses): For after all, a man who is of public utility, ought not (for the finest woman in the world) to lay his throat at the mercy of a man who boggleth at nothing.

I befeech you, let not this hint go farther than to yourself, your Spouse, and Mrs. Barker. I know I may trust my life in your hands and theirs. There have been (let me tell ye) unlikelier things come to pass, and that with rich widows (some of quality truly!) whose choice, in their first marriages hath (perhaps) been guided by motives of convenience, or mere corporalities, as I may say; but who by their second have had for their view the corporal and spiritual mingled; which is the most eligible (no doubt) to substance composed of both, as men and women are.

Nor think (Sir) that should such a thing come to pass, either would be disgraced; since the Lady, in me, would marry a Gentleman, and a Scholar: And as to mine own honour, as the Slur would bring her high fortunes down to an equivalence with my mean ones (if fortune only, and not merit, be considered) so hath not the life of this Lady been so tainted (either by length of time, or naughtiness of practice) as to put her on a foot with the cast Abigails, that too-too often (God knoweth) are thought good enough for a young Clergyman, who, perhaps, is drawn in by a poor benefice; and (if the wicked one be not quite worn out) groweth poorer and poorer upon it, by an encrease of family he knoweth not whether is most his, or his noble (ignoble I should say) patron's.

But, all this apart, and in confidence.

1-

e,

e-

be-

to

ner

nd

our in-

ink

me)

may

I know you made at school but a small progress in languages. So I have restrained myself from many illustrations from the classics, that I could have filled this Letter with (as I have done the inclosed one):

Vol. VII. S And

And, being at a distance, I cannot explain them to you, as I do to my friend Mr. John Harlowe; and who (after all) is obliged to me for pointing out to him many beauties of the authors I quote, which otherwise would lie concealed from him, as they must from every common observer.—But this (too) inter nos---For he would not take it well to have it known—fays (you know, old Schoolfellow, fays, you know) will strut in peacocks feathers.

But whither am I running? I never know where to end, when I get upon learned topics. And albeit I cannot compliment you with the name of a learned man; yet are you a sensible man; and (as such) must have pleasure in learned men, and in their writings.

In this confidence (Mr. Walton) with my kind respects to the good Ladies (your Spouse and Sister) and in hopes, for the young Lady's sake, soon to follow this long, long epistle, in person, I conclude myself

Your loving and faithful friend,

ELIAS BRAND.

di

hi

faid

eng

moj

Lac

23 (

You will perhaps, Mr. Walton, wonder at the meaning of the lines drawn under many of the words and fentences (UNDERSCORING we call it); and were my letters to be printed, those would be put in a different character. Now, you must know, Sir, that we learned men do this to point out to the readers, who are not for learned, where the jet of our arguments lieth, and the emphasis they are to lay upon those words; whereby they will take in readily our sense and cogency. Some pragmatical people have faid, that an author who doth a great deal of this, either calleth his readers fools, or tacitly condemneth his own flyle, as supposing his meaning would be dark without it, or that all his force lay in words. But all of those with whom

real is like

whom I have conversed in the learned way, think as I think. And to give a very pretty, tho' familiar illustration, I have considered a page distinguished by different characters, as a verdant field overspread with butter-flowers and daisies, and other summer-flowers. These the poets liken to enamelling---Have you not read in the poets of enamelled meads, and so forth?

LETTER C.

Mr. Brand, To John Harlows, Efq;

Worthy Sir, Sat. Night, Sept. 2.

I AM under no small concern, that I should (unhappily) be the occasion (I am sure I intended nothing like it) of widening differences by light misreport, when it is the duty of one of my function (and no less consisting with my inclination) to heal and reconcile.

I have received two Letters to fet me right: One from a particular acquaintance (whom I fet to enquire of Mr. Belford's character); and that came on Tuesday last, informing me, that your unhappy Niece was greatly injured in the account I had had of her (for I had told him of it, and that with very great concern, I am fure, apprehending it to be true.) So I then fet about writing to you, to acknowledge the error: And had gone a good way in it; when the fecond Letter came (a very handsome one it is, both in style and penmanship) from my friend Mr. Walton (though I am fure it cannot be bis inditing) expressing his forrow, and his Wife's, and his Sifter-in-law's likewife, for having been the cause of misleading me, in the account I gave of the faid young Lady; whom they now fay (upon further enquiry) they find to be the most unblameable, and most prudent, and (it feems) the most pious young Lady, that ever (once) committed a great error; as (to be fure) hers was, in leaving fuch worthy Pa-S 2 rents

rents and Relations for so vile a man as Mr. Lovelace: But what shall we say?—Why, the divine Virgil tells us,

Improbe Amor, quid non mortalia pectora cogis?

For my part, I was but too much afraid (for we have great opportunities, you are fensible, Sir, at the University, of knowing buman nature from books, the calm result of the wise men's wisdom, as I may say,

(Haurit aquam cribro, qui discere vult sine libro)

uninterrupted by the noise and vanities, that will mingle with personal conversation, which (in the turbulent world) is not to be enjoyed but over a hottle, where you have an hundred foolish things pass to one that deserveth to be remembered; I was but too much afraid, I say) that so great a slip might be attended with still greater and worse: For your Horace, and my Horace, the most charming writer that ever lived among the Pagans (for the lyric kind of poetry, I mean; for, to be sure, Homer and Virgil would otherwise be first named in their way) well observeth (and who understood human nature better than he?)

Nec vera viruts, cum semel excidit, Curat reponi deterioribus.

And Ovid no less wifely observeth:

Et mala sunt vicina bonis. Errore sub illo Pro vitio virtus crimina sape tulit.

Who, that can draw knowlege from its fountainhead, the works of the fages of antiquity (improved by the comments of the moderns) but would prefer to all others the filent quiet life, which contemplative men lead in the feats of learning, were they not called out (according to their dedication) to the fervice and instruction of the world? Now, Sir, another favourite poet of mine (and not the less a favourite for being a Christian) telleth us, that it is the custom of some, when in a fault, to throw the blame upon the backs of others,

-Hominum quoque mos eft, Qua nos cunque premunt, alieno imponere tergo. MANT.

But I, though (in this case) misted (well intendedly, nevertheless, both in the misleaders and mislead, and therefore entitled to lay hold of that plea, if anybody is so entitled) will not, however, be classed among fuch extenuators; but (contrarily) will always keep in mind that verse, which comforteth in mistake, as well as instructeth; and which I quoted in my last Letter;

Errare est hominis, sed non persistere -

And will own, that I was very rash to take up with conjectures and consequences drawn from probabilities, where (especially) the character of so fine a Lady was concerned.

Credere fallaci gravis est dementia famæ. MANT.

Notwithstanding, Miss Clarissa Harlowe (I must be bold to fay) is the only young Lady, that ever I heard of (or indeed read of) that, having made such a false step, so soon (of her own accord, as I may fay) recovered herself, and conquered her Love of the deceiver (A great conquest indeed!); and who flieth him, and resolveth to die, rather than to be his; which now to her never-dying bonour (I am well affured) is the case-And, in justice to her, I am now ready to take to myfelf (with no fmall vexation) that of Ovid,

Heu! patior telis vulnera facta meis.

d

to

ve

ot

W,

But yet I do infift upon it, that all that part of my information, which I took upon mine own per-

fonal

fonal enquiry, which is what relates to Mr. Belford, and his character, is literally true; for there is not any-where to be met with a man of a more libertine character as to women, Mr. Lovelace excepted, than he beareth.

And so, Sir, I must defire of you, that you will not let any blame lie upon my intention; since you see how ready I am to accuse myself of too lightly giving ear to a rash information (not knowing it so to be, however): For I depended the more upon it, as the people I had it from are very sober, and live in the fear of God: And indeed when I wait upon you, you will see by their Letter, that they must be conscientious good people: Wherefore, Sir, let me be entitled, from all your good family, to that of my last-named poet,

Aspera confesso verba remitte reo.

And now, Sir (what is much more becoming of my function), let me, instead of appearing with the face of an accuser, and a rash censurer (which in my heart I have not deserved to be thought), assume the character of a reconciler; and propose (by way of penance to myself for my fault) to be sent up as a messenger of peace to the pious young Lady; for they write me word absolutely (and, I believe in my heart, truly) that the Doctors have given her over, and that she cannot live. Alas! alas! what a sad thing would that be, if the poor bough, that was only designed (as I very well know, and am fully assured) to be bent, should be broken!

Let it not, dear Sir, seem to the world, that there was any-thing in your resentments (which, while meant for reclaiming, were just and sit) that hath the appearance of violence, and sierce wrath, and inexorability (as it would look to some, if carried to extremity, after repentance, and contrition, and humiliation, on the fair offender's side): For all this while (it seemeth) she hath been a second Magdalen in her penitence,

nitence, and yet not so bad as a Magdalen in her faults (faulty, nevertheless, as she hath been once, the Lord knoweth!

Nam vitiis nemo sine nascitur: optimus ille est, Qui minimis urgetur—faith Horace).

Now, Sir, if I may be named for this bleffed employment (For, Bleffed is the peacemaker!) I will hasten to London; and (as I know Miss had always a great regard to the function I have the honour to be of) I have no doubt of making myself acceptable to her, and to bring her, by found arguments, and good advice, into a liking of life, which must be the first step to her recovery: For, when the mind is made easy, the body will not long suffer; and the love of life is a natural passion, that is soon revived, when fortune turneth about, and smileth:

Vivere quisque diu, quamvis & egemus & æger, Optat ———OVID.

And the fweet Lucan truly observeth,

Mors invita subit-

And now, Sir, let me tell you what shall be the tenor of my pleadings with her, and comfortings of her, as she is, as I may say, a learned Lady; and as I can explain to her those sentences, which she cannot so readily construe herself: And this in order to convince you (did you not already know my qualifications) how well qualified I am for the Christian Office to which I commend myself.

I will, IN THE FIRST PLACE, put her in mind of the common course of things in this sublunary world, in which joy and sorrow, sorrow and joy, succeed one another by turns; in order to convince her, that her griess have been but according to that common

course of things:

Gaudia post luctus veniunt, post gaudia luctus.

S 4 SECONDLY,

SECONDLY, I will remind her of her own notable description of Sorrow, whence she was once called upon to distinguish wherein Sorrow, Grief, and Melancholy, differed from each other; which she did impromptu, by their effects, in a truly admirable manner, to the high satisfaction of every one: I myself could not, by study, have distinguished better, nor more concisely—Sorrow, said she, wears; Grief tears; but Melancholy sooths.

My inference to her shall be, that since a happy Reconciliation will take place, Grief will be banished; Sorrow dismissed; and only sweet Melancholy remain to footh and indulge her contrite heart, and shew to all the world the penitent sense she hath of her great

error.

THIRDLY, That her Joys (a), when restored to health and savour, will be the greater, the deeper her griefs were.

Gaudia, quæ multo parta labore, placent.

FOURTHLY, That having really been guilty of a great error, she should not take impatiently the corsection and anger with which she hath been treated.

Leniter, ex merito quicquid patiare ferundum eft.

FIFTHLY, That Virtues must be established by Patience; as saith Prudentius:

Hæc virtus vidua eft, quam non patientia firmat.

SIXTHLY That, in the words of Horace, she may expect better times, than (of late) she had reason to look for.

Grata superveniet, quæ non sperabitur, hora.

(a) Joy, let me here observe, my dear Sir, by way of Note, is not absolutely inconsistent with Melancholy; a soft gentle Joy, not a rapid, not a rampant Joy, however; but such a Joy, as shall list her temporarily out of her soothing Melancholy, and then let ber down gently into it again; for Melancholy, to be sure, her restection will generally make to be her state.

SE-

SEVENTHLY, That she is really now in a way to be happy, since, according to Ovid, she can count up all her wee:

Felix, qui patitur quæ numerare poteft.

And those comforting lines,

Estque serena dies past longos gratior imbres, ... Et post triste malum gratior ipsa salus.

EIGHTHLY, That, in the words of Mantuan, her Parents and Uncles could not help loving her all the time they were angry at her:

Equa tamen semper mens est, & amica voluntas, . Sit licet in natos facies austera parentum.

NINTHLY, That the ills she hath met with may be turned (by the good use to be made of them) to her everlasting benefit; for that,

Cum furit atque ferit, Deus olim parcere quærit. .

TENTHLY, That she will be able to give a fine lesson (a very fine lesson) to all the young Ladies of her acquaintance, of the vanity of being listed up in prosperity, and the weakness of being cost down in adversity; fince no one is so high, as to be above being humbled; so low, as to need to despair: For which purpose the advice of Ausonius,

Dum fortuna juvat, caveto tolli: Dum fortuna tonat, caveto mergi.

I shall tell her, that Lucan saith well, when he calleth adversity the element of patience:

-Gaudet patientia duris,

That

Fortunam superat virtus, prudentia famam.

That while weak fouls are crushed by fortune, the brave mind maketh the fickle deity afraid of it:

Fortuna fortes metuit, ignavos premit.

L 5

ELE-

ELEVENTHLY, That if she take the advice of Horace.

Fortiaque adversis opponite pectora rebus, it will delight her bereafter (as Virgil saith) to revolve ber past troubles:

For san & boec olim meminisse juvabit.

And, to the same purpose, Juvenal speaking of the prating joy of mariners, after all their dangers are over:

Gaudent securi narrare pericula nauta.

Which fuiting the case so well, you'll forgive me, Sir, for popping down in English metre, as the translative impulse (pardon a new word, and yet we scholars are not fond of authenticating new words) came upon me uncalled for:

The Seaman, safe on shore, with joy doth tell. What cruel dangers bim at sea befell.

With these, Sir, and an hundred more, wise adages, which I have always at my fingers end, will I (when reduced to form and method) entertain Miss; and as she is a well-read, and (I might say, but for this one great error) a wise young Lady, I make no doubt but I shall prevail upon her, if not by mine own arguments, by those of wits and capacities that have a congeniality (as I may say) to her own, to take heart,

Since, the it has been cloudy, now't clears up again.

Oh! what wisdom is there in these noble classical authors! A wise man will (upon searching into them) always find that they speak his sense of men and things. Hence it is, that they so readily occur to my memory on every occasion—Tho' this may look like vanity, it is too true to be omitted: And I see not why a man may not know those things of himself, which

which every-body feeth and faith of him; who, nevertheless, perhaps know not half so much as he, in other matters.

I know but of one objection, Sir, that can lie against my going; and that will arise from your kind care and concern for the safety of my person, in case that sierce and terrible man, the wicked Mr. Lovelace (of whom every one standeth in fear) should come cross me, as he may be resolved to try once more to gain a footing in Miss's affections: But I will trust in providence for my safety, while I shall be engaged in a cause so worthy of my function; and the more trust in it, as he is a learned man, as I am told.

Strange too, that so vile a Rake (I hope he will never see this!) should be a learned man; that is to say, that a learned man should find leisure to be a Rake. Although, possibly, a learned man may be a sly sinner, and take opportunities, as they come in his way---Which, however, I do affure you, I never did.

I repeat, That as he is a learned man, I shall west myself, as I may say, in classical armour; beginning meekly with him (for, Sir, bravery and meekness are qualities very consistent with each other, and in no perfons so shiningly exert themselves, as in the Christian priesshood; beginning meekly with him, I say) from Ovid,

Corpora magnanimo satis est prostrasse leoni :

So that, if I should not be safe behind the shield of mine own prudence, I certainly should behind the shelds of the ever-admirable classics: Of Horace particularly; who, being a Rake (and a jovial Rake too) himself, must have great weight with all learned Rakes.

And who knoweth but I may be able to bring even this Goliath in wickedness, altho' in person but a little David myself (armed with the slings and stones of the ancient sages), to a due sense of his errors? And what a victory would that be!

S 6

I could here, Sir, purfuing the allegory of David and Goliath, give you some of the stones (Hard arguments may be called stones, fince they knock down a pertinacious opponent) which I could pelt him with, were he to be wroth with me; and this in order to take from you, Sir, all apprehensions for my life, or my bones; but I forbear them till you demand them of me, when I have the honour to attend you in

person.

And now (my dear Sir) what remaineth, but that, having shewn you (what yet, I believe, you did not doubt) how well qualified I am to attend the Lady with the olive branch, I beg of you to dispatch me with it out of band? For if she be so very ill, and if she should not live to receive the grace, which (to my knowlege) all the worthy family design her, how much will that grieve you all! And then, Sir, of what avail will be the eulogies you shall all, peradventure, join to give to her memory? For, as Martial wisely observeth,

-Post cincres gloria sera venit.

Then, as Ausonius layeth it down with equal propriety, that those favours, which are speedily conferred, are the most graceful and obliging—

And to the same purpose Ovid:

Gratia ab officio, quod mora tardat, abest.

And, Sir, whatever you do, let the Lady's pardon be as ample, and as chearfully given, as she can wish for it; that I may be able to tell her, that it hath your hands, your countenances, and your whole hearts, with it—For, as the Latin verse hath it (and I presume to think I have not weakened its sense by my humble advice)

Dat bene, dat multum, qui dat cum munere vultum.

Con-

And now, Sir, when I furvey this long Letter (a), (albeit I fee it enamelled, as a beautiful meadow is enamelled by the fpring or fummer flowers, very glorious to behold!) I begin to be afraid, that I may have tired you; and the more likely, as I have written without that method or order, which I think constituteth the beauty of good writing: Which method or order, nevertheless, may be the better excused in a familiar epistle (as this may be called), you pardoning, Sir, the familiarity of the word: But vet not altogether bere, I must needs own; because this is a Letter, and not a Letter, as I may fay; but a kind of fort and pithy Discourse, touching upon various and fundry topics, every one of which might be a fit theme to enlarge upon, even to volumes: If this Epistolary Discourse (then let me call it) should be pleasing to you (as I am inclined to think it will, becau e of the fentiments and aphorisms of the eft of the antients, which glitter through it like fo many dazzling fun-beams), I will (at my leifure) work it up into a methodical Discourse; and perhaps may one: day print it, with a dedication to my bonoured patron (if, Sir, I have your leave), fingly at first (but not till. I have thrown out anonymously two or three smaller things, by the fuccess of which I shall have made myself of some account in the Commonwealth of Letters), and afterwards in my Works-Not for the vanity of the thing (however) I will fay, but for the use it may be of to the public; for (as one well obferveth) Though glory always followeth virtue, yet it should be considered only as its shadow.

⁽a) And here, by way of Note, permit me to fay, that no fermon I ever composed, cost me half the pains that this Letter hath done—but I know your great appetite after, as well as admiration of, the antient wisdom, which you so justly prefer to the modern—And indeed I join with you to think, that the modern is only borrowed (as the moon doth its light from the sun), at least, that we excel them in nothing; and that our best cogitations may be found, generally speaking, more elegantly dressed and expressed by them,

Contemnit laudem virtus, licet usque sequatur Gloria virtutem, corpus ut umbra suum.

A very pretty faying, and worthy of all men's admiration!

And now (most worthy, Sir, my very good friend and patron) referring the whole to yours, and to your two Brothers, and to young Mr. Harlowe's confideration, and to the wise consideration of good Madam Harlowe, and her excellent Daughter Miss Arabella Harlowe; I take the liberty to subscribe myself, what I truly am, and ever shall delight to be, in all cases, and at all times,

Your and their most ready and obedient as well as faithful Servant,

ELIAS BRAND.

LETTER CI.

Mr. Lovelace, To John Belford, Esq: [In Answer to Letter xcviii.]

Wedn. Morn. Sept. 6.

AND is she somewhat better?---Blessings upon thee without number or measure! Let her still be better and better! Tell me so at least, if she be not so: For thou knowest not what a joy that poor temporary reprieve, that she will hold out yet a day or two, gave me.

But who told this hard-hearted and death-pro nouncing Doctor, that she will hold it no longer? By what warrant says he this? What presumption in these parading solemn sellows of a college, which will be my contempt to the latest hour of my life, if this brother of it (eminent as he is deemed to be) cannot work an ordinary miracle in ber sayour, or rather in mine!

Let me tell thee, Belford, that already he deserves the utmost contempt, for suffering this charming clock to run down so low. What must be his art, if it could could not wind it up in a quarter of the time he has attended her, when, at his first visits, the springs and wheels of life and motion were so good, that they seemed only to want common care and oiling!

I am obliged to you for endeavouring to engage her to see me. Twas acting like a friend. If she had vouchsafed me that favour, she should have seen at her feet the most abject adorer that ever kneeled to

justly-offended beauty.

What she bid you, and what she forbid you, to tell me (the latter for tender considerations); That she forgives me; and that, could she have made me a good man, she could have made me a bappy one! That she even loved me! At such a moment to own that she once loved me! Never before loved any man! That she prays for me! That her last tear should be shed for me, could she by it save a foul, doomed, without ber, to perdition!---O Belford, Belford! I cannot bear it! ---What a dog, what a devil, have I been to a goodness so superlative!---Why does she not inveigh against me?---Why does she not execrate me?---O the triumphant subduer! Ever above me!---And now to leave me so infinitely below her!

Marry and repair, at any time; This, wretch that I was! was my plea to myself. To give her a lowering sensibility; to bring her down from among the stars which her beamy head was surrounded by, that my Wife, so greatly above me, might not despise me; this was one of my reptile motives, owing to my more reptile envy, and to my consciousness of inferiority to her!---Yet she, from step to step, from distress to distress, to maintain her superiority; and, like the Sun, to break out upon me with the greater resulgence for the clouds that I had contrived to cast about her-- And now to escape me thus!---No power lest me to repair her wrongs! --No alleviation to myself-reproach!---No dividing of blame with her!---

Tell her, O tell her, Belford, that her prayers and wishes, her superlatively generous prayers and wishes, shall not be vain: That I can, and do repent---and long have repented:---Tell her of my frequent deep remorfes---It was impossible that such remorfes should not at last produce effectual remorfe---Yet she must not leave me---She must live, if she would wish to have my contrition perfect---For what can despair produce?—

I WILL do every-thing you would have me do, in the return of your Letters. You have infinitely obliged me by this last, and by pressing for an admission:

for me, tho' it succeeded not.

Once more, how could I be such a villain to so divine a creature! Yet love her all the time, as never man loved woman!---Curse upon my contriving genius! Curse upon my intriguing head, and upon my seconding heart!---To sport with the same, with the honour, with the life, of such an angel of a woman! --O my damn'd incredulity! That, believing her to be a woman, I must hope to find her a woman! On my incredulity, that there could be such virtue (virtue for virtue's sake) in the Sex, sounded I my hope of succeeding with her.

But fay not, Jack, that she must leave us yet. If she recover, and if I can but re-obtain her favour, then indeed will life be life to me. The world never saw such an husband as I will make. I will have no will but hers. She shall conduct me in all my steps. She shall open and direct my prospects, and turn

every motion of my heart as she pleases.

You tell me in your Letter, that at Eleven o'clock the had fweet rest; and my servant acquaints me from Mrs. Smith, that she has had a good night. What hopes does this fill me with! I have given the fellow five guineas for his good news, to be divided between him and his fellow-servant.

Dear,

Dear, dear Jack! confirm this to me in thy next--For Heaven's fake do!---Tell the Doctor I will make
him a present of a thousand guineas if he recover her.
Ask if a consultation be necessary.

Adieu, dear Belford! Confirm, I beseech thee, the hopes that now with sovereign gladness have taken

possession of a heart, that, next to Hers, is

Thine.

LETTER CIL

Mr. BELFORD, To ROBERT LOVELACE, Efq: Wedn. Morn. Eight o'clock (6 Sept.)

YOUR fervant arrived here before I was stirring. I sent him to Smith's to enquire how the Lady was; and ordered him to call upon me when he came back. I was pleased to hear she had tolerable rest. As soon as I had dispatched him with the Letter I had written over-night, I went to attend her.

I found her up, and dreffed; in a white fatten nightgown. Ever elegant; but now more so, than I had seen her for a week past: Her aspect serenely chearful.

She mentioned the encreased dimness of her eyes, and the tremor which had invaded her limbs. If this be dying, said she, there is nothing at all shocking in it. My body hardly sensible of pain, my mind at ease, my intellects clear and perfect as ever. What a good and gracious God have I!---For this is what I always prayed for.

I told her, It was not fo ferene with you.

There is not the same reason for it, replied she. Tis a choice comfort, Mr. Belford, at the winding up of our short story, to be able to say, I have rather suffered injuries myself, than offered them to others. I bless God, tho' I have been unhappy, as the world deems it, and once I thought more so, than at present I think I ought to have done; since my calamities were to work out for me my everlasting happiness.

yet have I not wilfully made any one creature fo. I have no reason to grieve for any-thing but for the for-

row I have given my friends.

But pray, Mr. Belford, remember me in the best manner to my Cousin Morden; and desire him to comfort them, and to tell them, that all would have been the same, had they accepted of my true penitence, as I wish and as I trust the Almighty has done.

I was called down: It was to Harry, who was just returned from Miss Howe's, to whom he carried the Lady's Letter. The stupid fellow, being bid to make haste with it, and return as soon as possible, staid not till Miss Howe had it, she being at the distance of sive miles, altho' Mrs. Howe would have had him stay, and sent a man and horse purposely with it to her Daughter.

Wednesday Norning, 10 o'clock.

THE poor Lady is just recovered from a fainting fit, which has left her at death's door. Her late tranquillity and freedom from pain seemed but a Lighten-

ing, as Mrs. Lovick and Mrs. Smith call it.

By my faith, Lovelace, I had rather part with all the friends I have in the world, than with this Lady. I never knew what a virtuous, a holy friendship, as I may call mine to her, was before. But to be so new to it, and to be obliged to forego it so soon, what an affliction! Yet, thank heaven, I lose her not by my own fault!---But 'twould be barbarous not to spare thee now.

She has fent for the Divine who visited her before, to pray with her.

LETTER CIII.

Mr. Lovelace, To John Belford, E/q;

Kensington, Wednesday Noan.

IKE Æsop's Traveller, thou blowest hot and cold, life and death, in the same breath, with a view, no doubt, to distract me. How familiarly dost thou

thou use the words, dying, dimness, tremor? Never did any mortal ring so many changes on so sew bells. Thy true Father, I dare swear, was a Butcher, or an Undertaker, by the delight thou seemest to take in scenes of death and horror. Thy barbarous reflection, that thou losest her not by thy own fault, is never to be forgiven. Thou hast but one way to attone for the torments thou givest me, and that is, by sending me word that she is better, and will recover. Whether it be true or not, let me be told so, and I will go abroad rejoicing and believing it, and my wishes and imagination shall make out all the rest.

If she live but one year, that I may acquit myself to myself (no matter for the world!) that her death is not owing to me, I will compound for the rest.

Will neither vows nor prayers fave her! I never prayed in my life, put all the years of it together, as I have done for this fortnight past: And I have most fincerely repented of all my baseness to her---And will nothing do?

But after all, if she recover not, this reslection must be my comfort: and it is truth; That her departure will be owing rather to wilfulness to downright female

wilfulness, than to any other cause.

It is difficult for people who pursue the dictates of a violent resentment, to stop where first they designed

to stop.

I have the charity to believe, that even James and Arabella Harlowe, at first, intended no more by the confederacy they formed against this their angel Sister, than to disgrace and keep her down, lest (sordid wretches!) their Uncles should follow the example her Grandfather had set, to their detriment.

So this Lady, as I suppose, intended only at first to tex and plague me; and, finding she could do it to purpose, her desire of revenge insensibly became stronger in her than the desire of life: And now she is willing to die, as an event which she thinks will cut

my heart-strings afunder. And still the more to be re-

But I'll have none of her forgiveness! My own heart tells me, I do not deserve it; and I cannot bear it!---And what is it, but a mere verbal forgiveness, as oftentatiously as cruelly given with a view to magnify herself, and wound me deeper? A little, dear, specious—But let me stop—lest I blaspheme!

READING over the above, I am ashamed of my ramblings: But what wouldest have me do?---Seest thou not that I am but seeking to run out of myself, in hope to lose myself; yet, that I am unable to do either?

If ever thou lovedft but half fo fervently as I love ---

But of that thy heavy foul is not capable.

Send me word by the next, I conjure thee, in the names of all her kindred faints and angels, that she is living, and likely to live!---If thou sendest ill news, thou wilt be answerable for the consequence, whether it be fatal to the messenger, or to

Thy LOVELACE.

LETTER CIV.

Mr. Belford, To Robert Lovelace, Efq; Wednesday, 11 o'clock.

DR. H. has just been here. He tarried with me till the minister had done praying by the Lady; and then we were both admitted. Mr. Goddard, who came while the Doctor and the Clergyman were with her, went away with them when they went. They took a solemn and everlasting leave of her, as I have no scruple to say; blessing her, and being blessed by her; and wishing (when it came to be their lot) for an Exit, as happy as hers is likely to be.

She had again earnestly requested of the Doctor his opinion how long it was now probable that she could continue: And he told her, that he apprehended she

would

would hardly see to-morrow night. She said, She should number the hours with greater pleasure than ever she numbered any in her life, on the most joy-ful occasion.

How unlike poor Belton's last hours, hers! See the infinite difference in the effects, on the same awful and affecting occasion, between a good and a bad conscience!

This moment a man is come from Miss Howe with a Letter. Perhaps I shall be able to fend you the contents.

386

SHE endeavoured several times with earnestness, but in vain, to read the Letter of her dear friend. The writing, she said, was too fine for her grosser sight, and the lines staggered under her eye. And indeed she trembled so, she could not hold the paper: And at last, desired Mrs. Lovick to read it to her, the messenger waiting for an Answer.

Thou wilt see, in Miss Howe's Letter, how different the expression of the same impatiency, and passionate love, is, when dictated by the gentler mind of a woman, from that which results from a mind so boisterous and knotty, as thine. For Mrs. Lovick will transcribe it; and I shall send it—To be re'd in

this place, if thou wilt.

C

0

h

y

e

y

or

is.

he

Miss Howe, To Miss CLARISSA HARLOWE.

What will become of your poor Anna Howe! I fee by your writing as well as read by your own account (which, were you not very, very ill, you would have touched more tenderly) how it is with you! Why have I thus long delayed to attend you! Could I think, that the comfortings of a faithful friend were as nothing to a gentle mind in diffres, that I could be prevailed upon to forbear vifiting you so much as once in all this time! I, as well as every-body

body else, to desert and abandon my dear creature to strangers! What will become of me, if you be as bad as my apprehensions make you!

I will set out this moment, little as the encouragement is that you give me to do so! My Mother is willing I should! Why, O why, was she not before

willing!

Yet she persuades me too (lest I should be fatally affected were I to find my fears too well justified) to wait the return of this messenger, who rides our swiftest horse.--God speed him with good news to me---Else---But, Oh! my dearest, dearest friend, what else!---One line from your hand by him!---Send me but one line to bid me attend you! I will set out the moment, the very moment, I receive it. I am now actually ready to do so! And if you love me, as I love you, the sight of me will revive you to my hopes.—But why, why, when I can think this, did I not go up sooner.

Bleffed Heaven! deny not to my prayers, my Friend, my Admonisher, my Adviser, at a time so

critical to myself.

But methinks, your style and sentiments are too well connected, too sull of life and vigour, to give cause for so much despair as the staggering pen seems to forbode.

I am forry I was not at home [I must add thus much, tho' the servant is ready mounted at the door] when Mr. Belford's servant came with your affecting Letter. I was at Miss Lloyd's. My Mamma sent it to me; and I came home that instant. But he was gone. He would not stay, it seems. Yet I wanted to ask him an hundred thousand questions. But why delay I thus my messenger? I have a multitude of things to say to you---To advise with you about!—You shall direct me in every thing. I will obey the holding up of your finger. But, if you leave me—what is the world, or any-thing in it, to

The effect this Letter had on the Lady, who is so near the end which the fair writer so much apprehends and deplores, obliged Mrs. Lovick to make many breaks in reading it, and many changes of voice.

This is a friend, faid the divine Lady (taking the Letter in her hand, and kissing it) worth wishing to live for.—O my dear Anna Howe! How uninterruptedly sweet and noble, has been our friendship!---But we shall one day meet (and this hope must comfort us both) never to part again! Then, divested of the shades of body, shall we be all light and all mind!—Then how unalloyed, how perfect, will be our friendship! Our Love then will have one and the same adorable object, and we shall enjoy it and each other to all Eternity!

She faid, her dear friend was so earnest for a line or two, that she fain would write, if she could: And she tried; but to no purpose. She could dictate, however, she believed; and desired Mrs. Lovick would take pen and paper. Which she did, and then she dictated to ber. I would have withdrawn;

but at her defire staid.

She wandered a good deal, at first. She took notice that she did. And when she got into a little train, not pleasing herself, she apologized to Mrs. Lovick for making her begin again and again; and said, That the third time should go, let it be as it would.

She dictated the Farewel part, without hesitation; and when she came to the blessing and subscription, she took the pen, and dropping on her knees, supported by Mrs. Lovick, wrote the Conclusion; but

Mrs. Lovick was forced to guide her hand.

You will find the fense surprisingly entire, her

weakness considered.

I

u

ill

ve

E?

I made the messenger wait, while I transcribed it. I have endeavoured to imitate the subscriptive part; and in the Letter made pauses, where, to the best of my remembrance, she paused. In nothing that relates to this admirable Lady, can I be too minute.

My dearest Miss Howe, Wedn. near 3 o'clock.

YOU must not be surprised—nor grieved—that Mrs. Lovick writes for me. Altho' I cannot obey you, and write with my pen, yet my heart writes by hers—Accept it so—It is the nearest to obedience I can!

And now, what ought I to fay? What can I fay?--- But why should you not know the truth? Since soon

you must---Very foon.

Know then, and let your tears be those, if of pity, of joyful pity! for I permit you to shed a few, to embalm, as I may fay, a fallen blossom---Know then, that the good Doctor, and the pious Clergyman, and the worthy Apothecary, have just now---with joint benedictions---taken their last leave of me: And the former bids me hope---Do, my dearest, let me say hope---hope for my enlargement before to-morrow fun-set.

Adieu, therefore, my dearest friend!---Be this your consolation, as it is mine, that in God's good time we shall meet in a blessed Eternity, never more to part?---Once more, then, adieu---and be happy!---Which a generous nature cannot be, unless---to its power—it makes others so too.

God for ever bless you! prays, dropt on my bend-

ed knees, altho' fupported upon them,

Your obliged, grateful, affectionate, CL. HARLOWE.

When I had transcribed and sealed this Letter, by her direction, I gave it to the messenger myself; who told me that Miss Howe waited for nothing but his

return, to fet out for London.

Thy fervant is just come; so I will close here. Thou art a merciles master. The two fellows are battered to death by thee, to use a semale word; and all semale words, tho we are not sure of their derivation,

derivation, having very fignificant meanings. I believe, in their hearts, they wish the angel in the heaven that is ready to receive her, and thee at the proper place, that there might be an end of their flurries; another word of the same gender.

What a Letter haft thou fent me !--- Poor Lovelace!

--- is all the answer I will return.

Five o'clock.] Colonel Morden is this moment ar-

LETTER CV.

Mr. BELFORD. In Continuation.

Eight in the Evening.

I Had but just time in my former, to tell you, that Colonel Morden was arrived. He was on horse-back, attended by two servants, and alighted at the door, just as the clock struck Five. Mrs. Smith was then below in her back-shop, weeping, her husband with her, who was as much affected as she; Mrs. Lovick having left them a little before, in tears likewise; for they had been bemoaning one another; joining in opinion, that the admirable Lady would not live the night over. She had told them, it was her opinion too, from some numbnesses, which she called the forerunners of death, and from an encreased inclination to doze.

The Colonel, as Mrs. Smith told me afterwards, asked with great impatience, the moment he alighted, How Miss Harlowe was? She answered, alive; but, she feared, drawing on apace. Good God! said he, with his hands and eyes listed up. Can I see her? My name is Morden. I have the honour to be nearly related to her. Step up, pray; and let her know [She is sensible, I hope] that I am here. Who is with her?

Nobody but her Nurse, and Mrs. Lovick, a widow gentlewoman, who is as careful of her, as if she were her Mother.

Vol. VII.

d-

.

by

ho

his,

ere.

are

rd;

heir

ion,

And

And more careful too, interrupted he, or she is not careful at all—

Except a gentleman be with her, one Mr. Belford, continued Mrs. Smith, who has been the best friend she has had.

If Mr. Belford be with her, furely I may---But, pray, step up, and let Mr. Belford know, that I shall take it for a favour to speak with him first.

Mrs. Smith came up to me in my new apartment. I had but just dispatched your servant, and was asking her Nurse, If I might be again admitted? Who answered, that she was dozing in the elbow-chair, having refused to lie down, saying, She should soon, she

hoped, lie down for good.

The Colonel, who is really a fine gentleman, received me with great politeness. After the first compliments, My kinswoman, Sir, said he, is more obliged to you than to any of her own family. For my part, I have been endeavouring to move so many rocks in her favour; and, little thinking the dear creature so very bad, have neglected to attend her, as I ought to have done the moment I arrived; and would, had I known how ill she was, and what a task I should have had with the family. But, Sir, your friend has been excessively to blame; and you being so intimately his friend, has made her fare the worse for your civilities to her. But are there no hopes of her recovery?

The Doctors have left her, with the melancholy

declaration, that there are none.

Has she had good attendance, Sir? A skilful phyfician? I hear these good folks have been very civil and obliging to her.

Who could be otherwise? faid Mrs. Smith, weep-

ing: She is the fweetest Lady in the world!

The character, said the Colonel, listing up his eyes and one hand, that she has from every living creature!---Good God! How could your accursed friend--- And

And how could her cruel parents? interrupted I---We may as easily account for bim, as for them.

Too true! returned he, the vileness of the profligates of our sex considered, whenever they can get any

of the other into their power.

I satisfied him about the care that had been taken of her; and told him of the friendly and even paternal attendance she had had from Dr. H. and Mr. Goddard.

He was impatient to attend her, having not feen her, as he faid, fince she was twelve years old; and that then she gave promises of being one of the finest

women in England.

u

ly

yvil

p.

his

fed

She was so, replied I, a very few months ago: And, tho' emaciated, she will appear to you to have confirmed those promises: For her features are so regular and exact, her proportion so fine, and her manner so inimitably graceful, that were she only skine

and bone, she must be a beauty.

Mrs. Smith, at his request, stept up, and brought us down word, that Mrs. Lovick and her Nurse were with her; and that she was in so sound a sleep, leaning upon the former in her elbow-chair, that she neither heard her enter the room, nor go out. The Colonel begged, if not improper, that he might see her, though sleeping. He said, That his impatience would not let him stay till she awaked. Yet he would not have her disturbed; and should be glad to contemplate her sweet features, when she saw not him; and asked, If she thought he could not go in, and come out, without disturbing her?

She believed he might, the answered; for her chair's

back was towards the door .

He faid, He would take care to withdraw, if she awoke, that his sudden appearance might not surprise her.

Mrs. Smith, stepping up before us, bid Mrs. Lo-

wick and Nurse not stir, when we entered: And then we went up softly together.

412

We beheld the Lady, in a charming attitude. Dressed, as I told you before, in her virgin white, she was sitting in her elbow chair, Mrs. Lovick close by her, in another chair, with her lest arm round her neck, supporting it, as it were; for, it seems, the Lady had bid her do so, saying, She had been a Mother to her, and she would delight herself in thinking she was in her Mamma's arms; for she found herself drowsy; perhaps, she said, for the last time she should be so.

One faded cheek refted upon the good woman's bosom, the kindly warmth of which had overspread it with a faint, but charming flush; the other paler, and hollow, as if already iced over by death. Her hands white as the lilly, with her meandring veins more transparently blue, than ever I had feen even hers (veins fo foon, alas! to be choaked up by the congealment of that purple stream, which already so languidly creeps rather than flows thro' them!); her hands hanging lifelefly, one before her, the other grasped by the right-hand of the kind widow, whose tears bedew'd the fweet face which her motherly bofom supported, though unfelt by the fair sleeper; and either infenfibly to the good woman, or what she would not disturb her to wipe off, or to change her posture: Her aspect was sweetly calm and serene: And though she started now-and-then, yet her sleep feemed eafy; her breath indeed short and quick; but tolerably free, and not like that of a dying person.

In this heart-moving attitude she appeared to us when we approached her, and came to have her love-

ly face before us.

The Colonel, fighing often, gazed upon her with his arms folded, and with the most profound and affectionate attention; till at last, on her starting, and setching her breath with greater difficulty than before,

he retired to a Screen, that was drawn before her house, as she calls it, which, as I have heretofore observed, stands under one of the windows. This Screen was placed there, at the time she found herself obliged to take to her chamber; and in the depth of our concern, and the sulness of other discourse at our first interview, I had forgotten to apprise the Colonel of what he would probably see.

Retiring thither, he drew out his handkerchief, and, overwhelmned with grief, seemed unable to speak: But, on casting his eye behind, the Screen, he soon broke silence; for, struck with the shape of the cossin, he listed up a purplish-coloured cloth that was spread over it, and, starting back, Good God! said he,

what's here!

d

Mrs. Smith standing next him, Why, faid he, with great emotion, is my Cousin suffered to indulge her

fad reflections with fuch an object before her?

Alas! Sir, replied the good woman, who should controul her? We are all strangers about her, in a manner: And yet we have expostulated with her upon this sad occasion.

again falling into a doze) to have apprifed you of this. I was here when it was brought in, and never was so shocked in my life. But the had none of her friends about her, and no reason to hope for any of them to come near her; and, assured the should not recover, she was resolved to leave as little as possible, especially as to what related to her person, to her Executor. But it is not a shocking object to her, though it be to every-body else.

Curse upon the hard-heartedness of those, said he, who occasioned her to make so sad a provision for herself! What must her reslections have been, all the time she was thinking of it, and giving orders about it? And what must they be, every time she turns her head towards it? These uncommon genius's

T 3

---But

--- But indeed she should have been controuled in it, had I been here.

The Lady fetched a profound figh, and, starting, it broke off our talk; and the Colonel then withdrew farther behind the screen, that his sudden appearance might not surprise her.

Where am I! faid she. How drowsy I am! How long have I dozed? Don't go, Sir (for I was retiring). I am very stupid, and shall be more and more so, I

suppose.

She then offered to raise herself; but being ready to faint thro' weakness, was forced to fit down again, reclining her head on her chair-back; and, after a sew moments, I believe now, my good friends, said she, all your kind trouble will soon be over. I have slept, but am not refreshed, and my singers ends seem numbed---have no feeling! (holding them up) --- "Tis time to send the Letter to my good Norton."

Shall I, Madam, fend my fervant post with it?

O no, Sir, I thank you. It will reach the dear woman too soon (as she will think) by the post.

I told her, this was not post-day.

Is it Wednesday still, said she: Bless me! I know not how the time goes: But very tediously, 'tis plain. And now I think I must soon take to my bed. All will be most conveniently and with least trouble, over there---Will it not, Mrs. Lovick?---I think, Sir, turning to me, I have lest nothing to these last incapacitating hours. Nothing either to say, or to do. I bless God, I have not. If I had, how unhappy should I be! Can you, Sir, remind me of any-thing necessary to be done or said to make your office easy?

If, Madam, your Cousin Morden should come, you

would be glad to fee him, I prefume?

I am too weak to wish to see my Cousin now. It would but discompose me, and him too. Yet, if he come while I can see, I will see him, were it but to thank

Let. 105. Clariffa Harlowe.

thank him for former favours, and for his present kind intentions to me. Has any-body been here from him?

He has called, and will be here, Madam, in half

an hour; but he feared to furprise you.

Nothing can furprise me now, except my Mamma were to favour me with her last blesling in person. That would be a welcome furprise to me even yet. But did my Cousin come purposely to town to see me?

Yes, Madam. I took the liberty to let him know

by a line last Monday, how ill you were.

You are very kind, Sir. I am and have been greatly obliged to you. But I think I shall be pained to fee him now, because he will be concerned to fee me. And yet, as I am not fo ill as I shall presently be---the fooner he comes, the better. But if he come, what shall I do about the Screen? He will chide me very probably; and I cannot bear chiding now. Perhaps [leaning upon Mrs. Lovick and Mrs. Smith] I can walk into the next apartment to receive him.

She motioned to rife; but was ready to faint again, and forced to fit ffili.

The Colonel was in a perfect agitation behind the Screen, to hear this discourse; and twice, unseen by his Consin, was coming from it towards her; but

retreated, for fear of furprising her too much.

Æ

0

1-

of

BO

It

to

nk

I stept to him, and favoured his retreat; she only faying, Are you going, Mr. Belford? Are you fent for down? Is my Coufin come? For the heard fomebody step softly cross the room, and thought it to be me; her hearing being more perfect than her fight.

I told her, I believed he was; and she said, We must make the best of it, Mrs. Lovick, and Mrs. Smith. I shall otherwise most grievously shock my poor Cousin: For he loved me dearly once. Pray give me a few of the Doctor's last drops in water, to

TA

keep up my spirits for this one interview; and that

is all, I believe, that can concern me now.

The Colonel (who heard all this) fent in his name; and I, pretending to go down to him, introduced the afflicted gentleman; she having first ordered the Screen to be put as close to the window as possible, that he might not see what was behind it; while he, having heard what she had said about it, was determined to take no notice of it.

He folded the angel in his arms as she sat, dropping down on one knee; for, supporting herself upon the two elbows of the chair, she attempted to rise, but could not. Excuse, my dear Cousin, said she, excuse me, that I cannot stand up—I did not expect this savour now. But I am glad of this opportunity to thank you for all your generous goodness to me.

I never, my best-beloved and dearest Cousin, said he (with eyes running over) shall forgive myself, that I did not attend you sooner. Little did I think you were so ill; nor do any of your friends believe

it. If they did-

fhould have had more compassion from them. I am fure I should but pray. Sin, now did you leave them? Are you reconciled to them? If you are not, I beg, if you love your poor Clarissa, that you will: For every widen'd difference augments but my fault; since that is the foundation of all.

Ah! Sir, interrupted the, with frequent breaks and pauses, I wish, I wish, this does not rather shew. that were I to live, they would have nothing more to fay to me. I never had any pride in being independent of them: All my actions, when I might: have made myself more independent, shew this-But what avail these reflections now ?- I only beg, Sir, that You, and this Gentleman-to whom I am exceedingly obliged-will adjust those matters-according to the Will I have written. Mr. Belford willexcuse me; but it was in truth more necessity than : choice, that made me think of giving him the trouble he fo kindly accepts. Had I had the happiness to fee you, my Coufin, fooner-or to know, that you still honoured me with your regard—I should not have had the affurance to ask this favour of him .-- But--though the friend of Mr. Lovelace, he is a man of honour, and he will make peace rather than break it. And, my dear Coufin, let me beg of you---to contribute your part to it-and remember, that, while I have nearer relations than my Coulin Morden, dear as you are, and always were to me, you have no title : to avenge my wrongs upon Him who has been the occasion of them. But I wrote to you my mind on this subject, and my reasons; and I hope I need not: further urge them.

I must do Mr. Lovelace so much justice, answered he, wiping his eyes, as to witness, how fincerely he repents him of his ungrateful baseness to you, and how ready he is to make you all the amends in his power. He owns his wickedness, and your merit. If he did not, I could not pass it over, tho you have nearer relations: For, my dear Cousin, did not your Grandfather leave me in truft for you? And should I think myself concerned for your Fortune, and not for your Honour? But, fince he is so desirous to do you justice, I have the less to say; and you may

make yourfelf entirely eafy on that account.

I thank

I thank you, thank you, Sir, said she: All is now as I wished: But I am very faint, very weak. I am forry I cannot hold up; that I cannot better deserve the honour of this visit: But it will not be--- And saying this, she sunk down in her chair, and was silent.

Hereupon we both withdrew, leaving word, that we would be at the Bedford Head, if any-thing ex-

traordinary happened.

We bespoke a little repast, having neither of us dined; and, while it was getting ready, you may guess at the subject of your discourse. Both joined in lamentation for the Lady's desperate state: Admired her manifold excellencies: Severely condemned you, and her friends. Yet, to bring him into better opinion of you, I re'd to him some passages from your last Letters, which shewed your concern for the wrongs you had done her, and your deep remorse: And he said, It was a dreadful thing to labour under the sense of a guilt so irremediable.

We procured Mr. Goddard (Dr. H. not being at home) once more to visit her, and to call upon us in his return. He was so good as to do so; but he tarried with her not five minutes; and told us, That the was drawing on apace; that he feared she would not live till morning; and that she wished to see Co-

lonel Morden directly.

The Colonel made excuses where none were needed; and tho' our little resection was just brought in,

he went away immediately.

I could not touch a morfel; and took pen and ink to amuse myself, and oblige you: knowing how impatient you would be for a few lines: For, from what I have recited, you will see it was impossible I could withdraw to write, when your servant came at half an hour after Five, or have an opportunity for it till now; and This is accidental: And yet your poor fellow was afraid to go away with the verbal message.

I fent; importing, as no doubt he told you, that the Colonel was with us, the Lady excessively ill, and that I could not stir to write a line.

Ten o'clock.

THE Colonel sent to me afterwards, to tell me, that the Lady having been in convulsions, he was so much disordered, that he could not possibly attend me.

I have fent every half-hour to know how she does: And just now I have the pleasure to hear, that her convulsions have left her; and that she is gone to rest in a much quieter way than could be expected.

Her poor Coufin is very much indisposed; yet will not stir out of the house while she is in such a way; but intends to lie down on a couch, having resused any other accommodation.

LETTER CVI.

Mr. BELFORD. In Continuation.

Soho, Six o'clock, Sept. 7.

THE Lady is still alive. The Colonel having just fent his servant to let me know that she enquired after me about an hour ago, I am dressing to attend her. Joel begs of me to dispatch him back, the but with one line to gratify your present impatience. He expects, he says, to find you at Knightsbridge, let him make what haste he can back; and if he has not a line or two to pacify you, he is asraid you will pistot him; for he apprehends that you are hardly yourself. I therefore dispatch this; and will have another ready as soon as I can, with particulars. But you must have a little patience; for how can I withdraw every half-hour to write, if I am admitted to the Lady's presence, or if I am with the Colonel?

Smith's Eight in the Morning.

THE Lady is in a flumber. Mrs. Lovick, who fat up with her, fays, she had a better night than was expected; for altho' she slept little, she seemed easy;

T 6

and the easier for the pious frame the was in; all her: waking moments being taken up in devotion, or in an ejaculatory filence; her hands and eyes often lifted up, and her lips moving with a fervor worthy of these her last hours.

Ten o'clock.

THE Colonel being earnest to see his Cousin as foon as she awoke, we were both admitted. We obferved in her, as foon as we entered, ftrong fymptoms. of her approaching diffolution, notwithstanding what: the women had flattered us with from 'her last night's tranquillity. The Colonel and I, each loth to fay what: we thought, looked upon one another with melancholy countenances.

The Colonel told her, He should fend a servant to her Uncle Antony's, for some papers he had left there;

and asked, If she had any commands that way?

She thought not, she said, speaking more inwardly than she did the day before. She had indeed a Letter ready to be fent to her good Norton; and there was a request intimated in it: But it was time enough, if the request were fignified to those whom it concerned when all was over. However, it might be fent them by the servant who was going that way. And she caused it to be given to the Colonel for that purpose.

Her breath being very short, she desired another pillow. Having two before, this made her in a manner fit up in her bed; and she spoke then with more distinctness; and, seeing us greatly concerned, forgot her own fufferings to comfort us; and a charming lecture she gave us, tho' a brief one, upon the happiness of a timely Preparation, and upon the hazards of a late Repentance, when the mind, as she observed, was so much weakened, as well as the body, as to render a poor foul hardly able to contend with its natural infirmities.

I beseech ye, my good friends, proceeded she, mourn not for one who mourns not, nor has cause to mourn,

mourn, for herself. On the contrary, rejoice with, me, that all my worldly troubles are so near their end. Believe me, Sirs, that I would not, if I might, chuse to live, altho' the pleasantest part of my life were to come over again: And yet Eighteen years of it, out of Nineteen, have been very pleasant. To be so, much exposed to temptation, and to be so liable to fail in the trial, who would not rejoice, that all her dangers are over!—All I wished was pardon and blessing from my dear Parents. Easy as my departure seems to promise to be, it would have been still easier, had! I had that pleasure. But God Almighty would not let me depend for comfort upon any but Himself.

She then repeated her request, in the most earnest manner, to her Cousin, that he would not heighten her fault, by seeking to avenge her death; to me, that I would endeavour to make up all breaches, and use the power I had with my friend, to prevent all stuture mischiess from him, as well as that which this trust might give me, to prevent any to him.

She made some excuses to her Cousin, for having not been able to alter her Will, to join him in the Executorship with me; and to me, for the trouble she

had given, and yet should give me. .

She had fatigued herfelf so much (growing sensibly weaker) that she sunk her head upon her pillows, ready to faint; and we withdrew to the window, looking upon one another; but could not tell what to say; and yet both seemed inclinable to speak: But the motion passed over in silence. Our eyes only spoke; and that in a manner neither's were used to; mine, at least, not till I knew this admirable creature.

The Colonel withdrew to difmiss his messenger, and send away the Letter to Mrs. Norton. I took the opportunity to retire likewise; and to write thus far. And Joel returning to take it; I now close here.

Eleven o'clock.

LETTER CVII.

Mr. BELFORD. In Continuation.

THE Colonel tells me, That he has written to Mr. John Harlowe, by his fervant, 'That they · might spare themselves the trouble of debating about a Reconciliation; for that his dear Coufin would · probably be no more, before they could refolve.

He asked me after his Cousin's means of subsisting; and whether she had accepted of any favour from me: He was fure, he faid, the would not from you.

I acquainted him with the truth of her parting with

fome of her apparel.

elser and little broather one

This wrung his heart; and bitterly did he exclaim as well against you, as against her implacable relations.

He wished he had not come to England at all, or had come fooner; and hoped I would apprife him of the whole mournful Story, at a proper feafon. He added, that he had thoughts when he came over, of fixing here for the remainder of his days: But now, as it was impossible his Cousin could recover, he would go abroad again, and refettle himself at Florence or Leghorn.

THE Lady has been giving orders, with great pre-

fence of mind, about her body; directing her nurse and the maid of the house to put her into her coffin as foon as the is cold. Mr. Belford, the faid, would

know the rest by her Will.

* * *

SHE has just now given from her bosom, where the always wore it, a miniature picture fet in gold of Miss Howe: She gave it to Mrs. Lovick, defiring her to fold it up in white paper, and direct it, To Charles Hickman, E/q; and to give it to me, when the was departed, for that gentleman.

She looked upon the picture, before the gave it her —Sweet and ever-amiable Friend---Companion---Sister ----Lover! said she---And kissed it four several times, once at each tender appellation.

Your other fervant is come.---Well may you be impatient!---Well may you!---But do you think I can leave off in the middle of a conversation, to run and fet down what offers, and send it away piecemeal as I write?---If I could, must I not lose one half, while I put down the other?

This event is nearly as interesting to me as it is to you. If you are more grieved than I, there can be but one reason for it; and that's at your heart!--I had rather lose all the friends I have in the world (your-felf in the number) than this divine Lady; and shall be unhappy whenever I think of her sufferings, and of her merit; tho' I have nothing to reproach myself by reason of the former.

I say not this, just now, so much to reslect upon you, as to express my own grief; the your conscience, I suppose, will make you think otherwise.

Your poor fellow, who says, that he begs for his life in desiring to be dispatched back with a Letter, tears this from me---Else perhaps (for I am just sent for down) a quarter of an hour would make you---not easy indeed---but certain---And that, in a state like yours, to a mind like yours, is a relief.

Thursday Afternoon, 4 o'clock.

fe

n

d

re

of

les

728

he

LETTER CVIII.

Mr. Belford, To Richard Mowbray, Efq:

Dear Mowbray, Thursday Afternoon.

A M glad to hear you are in town. Throw yourfelf the moment this comes to your hand (if possible with Tourville) in the way of the man who least of

all men deserves the Love of the worthy heart; but most That of Thine and Tourville: Else, the news I shall most probably send him within an hour or two. will make Annihilation the greatest bleffing he has to wish for.

You will find him between Piccadilly and Kenfington, most probably on horseback, riding backwards and forwards in a crazy way; or put up, perhaps, at fome Inn or Tavern in the way; a waiter possibly, if fo, watching for his fervant's return to him from me.

. His man Will. is just come to me. He will carry! this to you in his way back, and be your director. Hie away in a coach, or any how. Your being with him may fave either his or a fervant's life. See the bleffed effects of triumphant libertinism! Sooner or later it comes home to us, and all concludes in gall! and bitterness! Adieu.

I. BELFORD. .

LETTER CIX.

Mr. LOVELACE, To JOHN BELFORD, Efq;

CURSE upon the Colonel, and curse upon the writer of the last Letter I received, and upon all the world! Thou to pretend to be as much interested in my Clariffa's fate as myself! 'Tis well for one of us, that this was not faid to me, instead of written-Living or dying, the is mine—and only mine. Have: I not earned her dearly?—Is not Damnation likely to be the purchase to me, tho' a happy Eternity will be hers?

An eternal feparation! O God! O God!---How can I bear that thought !--- But yet there is Life!-Yet, therefore, Hope---Enlarge my Hope, and thou shalt be my good genius, and I will forgive thee everything.

For this last time --- But it must not, shall not, be the Let. 111. Clariffa Harlowe:

425

the last-Let me hear, the moment thou receivest this---what I am to be---For, at present, I am

The most miserable of Men.

Rose at Knightsbridge, 5 o'Clock.

My fellow tells me, that thou art fending Mowbray and Tourville to me. I want them not. My foul's fick of them, and of all the world; but most of myself. Yet, as they send me word they will come to me immediately, I will wait for them, and for thy next. O Belford! let it not be—But hasten it, hasten it, be what it may!

LETTER CX.

Mr. BELFORD, To ROBERT LOVELACE, Efq;

Seven o'Clock, Thursday Evening, Sept. 7.

HAVE only to fay at present---Thou wilt do well to take a Tour to Paris; or where-ever else thy destiny shall lead thee!!!---

TOHN BELFORD

LETTER CXI.

Mr. Mowbray, To John Belford, Efq. Uxbridge, Sept. 7. between 11 and 12 at Night.

Dear Fack,

I SEND by poor Lovelace's desire, for particulars of the fatal breviate thou sentest him this night. He cannot bear to set pen to paper; yet wants to know every minute passage of Miss Harlowe's departure. Yet, why he should, I cannot see; for if she is gone, she is gone; and who can help it?

I never heard of such a woman in my life. What great matters has she suffered, that grief should kill!

her thus?

f

e:

0

e:

#

u

30

he

I with

I wish the poor fellow had never known her. From first to last, what trouble she has cost him! The charming Fellow has been half lost to us ever since he pursued her. And what is there in one woman more than another, for matter of that?

It was well we were with him when your Note came. You shewed your true friendship in your fore-fight. Why, Jack, the poor fellow was quite beside himself---Mad as any man ever was in Bedlam.

Will. brought him the Letter just after we had joined him at the Bohemia Head; where he had left word at the Rose at Knightsbridge he should be; for he had been fauntering up and down, backwards and forwards, expecting us, and his fellow. Will. as foon as he delivered it, got out of his way; and when he opened it, never was fuch a piece of fcenery. He trembled like a devil at receiving it: Fumbled at the feal, his fingers in a palfy, like Tom Doleman's; his hand shake, shake, that he tore the Letter in two, before he could come at the contents : And, when he had re'd them, off went his hat to one corner of the room, his wig to the other-Damnation feize the world I and a whole volley of fuch-like execrations wishes; running up and down the room, and throwing up the fash, and pulling it down, and smiting his forehead with his double fift, with fuch force as would have felled an ox, and flamping and tearing, that the landlord ran in, and faster out again. And this was the distraction seene for some time.

In vain was all Jemmy or I could fay to him. I offered once to take hold of his hands, because he was going to do himself a mischief, as I believed, looking about for his pistols, which he had laid upon the table, but which Will. unseen, had taken out with him [A faithful honest dog that Will.! I shall for ever love the fellow for it] and he hit me a damn'd dowse of the chops, as made my nose bleed. 'Twas well

twas he; for I hardly knew how to take it.

Jemmy

Jemmy raved at him, and told him, How wicked it was in him, to be so brutish to abuse a friend, and run mad for a woman. And then he faid, he was forry for it; and then Will. ventured in with water and a towel; and the dog rejoiced, as I could fee by his look, that I had it rather than he.

And fo, by degrees, we brought him a little to his reason, and he promised to behave more like a man. And fo I forgave him: And we rode on in the dark to here at Doleman's. And we all tried to shame him out of his mad ungovernable foolishness: For we told him, as how she was but a woman, and an obstinate perverse woman too; and how could he help it?

And you know, Jack (As we told him, moreover) that it was a shame to manhood, for a man, who had ferved twenty and twenty women as bad or worfe, let him have ferved Miss Harlowe never so bad, should give himself such obstropulous airs, because she would die: And we advised him never to attempt a woman proud of her character and virtue, as they call it, any more: For why? The conquest did not pay trouble; and what was there in one woman more than another? Hay you know, Jack !- And thus we comforted him, and advised him.

But yet his damn'd addled pate runs upon this Lady as much now she's dead, as it did when she was living. For, I suppose, Jack, it is no joke: She is certainly and bona fide dead: I'n't she? If not, thou deservest to be doubly damn'd for thy fooling, I tell thee that. So he will have me write for particulars of her departure.

He won't bear the word dead on any account. A fqueamish puppy! How Love unmans and foftens! And fuch a noble fellow as this too! Rot him for an idiot, and an oaf! I have no patience with the foolish duncical dog-Upon my foul, I have not!

So fend the account, and let him how over it, as I

suppose he will.

But he must and shall go abroad: And in a month or two Jemmy, and you, and I, will join him, and he'll soon get the better of this chicken-hearted folly, never fear; and will then be ashamed of himself: And then we'll not spare him; tho' now, poor fellow, it were pity to lay him on so thick as he deserves. And do thou, till then, spare all reslections upon him; for, it seems, thou hast worked him unmercifully.

I was willing to give thee some account of the hand we have had with the tearing sellow, who had certainly been a lost man, had we not been with him; or he would have killed somebody or other. I have no doubt of it. And now he is but very middling; sits grinning like a man in straw; curses and swears, and is consounded gloomy; and creeps into holes and corners, like an old hedge-hog hunted for his grease.

And so adieu, Jack. Tourville and all of us wish for thee; for no one has the influence upon him that

thou haft.

R. MOWBRAY.

As I promised him that I would write for the particulars abovefaid; I write this after all are gone to bed; and the fellow is to set out with it by day-break.

at the doct two

deciral day - Upda yay look The



CONTENTS of Vol. VII.

Tet.

- I. II. Lovelace, To Belford. Two Letters entirely characteristic, yet intermingled with lessons and observations not unworthy of a better character. He has great hopes from Miss Howe's mediation in his favour. Picture of two Rakes turned Hermits, in their penitentials.
- III. Miss Howe, To Clarissa. She now greatly approves of her rejection of Lovelace. Admires the noble example she has given her Sem of a passion conquered. Is forry she wrote to Arabella: But cannot imitate her in her self-accusations, and acquittals of others who are all in fault. Her notions of a Husband's prerogative. Hopes she is employing herself in penning down the particulars of her tragical story. Uses to be made of it to the advantage of her Sex. Her Mosther earnest about it.
- IV. Mils Howe, To Misses Montague. With Clarissa's Letter, No. ci. of Vol. VI. Her own fentiments of the villainous treatment her beloved friend has met with from their kinsman. Prays for vengeance upon him, if she do not recover.
- V. Mrs. Norton, To Clarissa. Acquaints her with some of their movements at Harlowe-Place. Almost wishes she would marry the wicked man. And why. Useful restections on what has befallen a young Lady so universally beloved. Must try to move her Mother in her favour. But by what means, will not tell her, unless she succeed.

VI. Mrs. Norton, To Mrs. Harlowe.

VII. Mrs. Harlowe's affecting Answer.

VIII. Clariss, To Mrs. Norton. Earnestly begs, for reasons equally generous and dutiful, that she may be left to her own way of working with her relations. Has received her Sister's Answer to her Letter, No. xcv. of Vol. VI. She tries to find an excuse for the severity of it, tho' greatly affected by it. Other affecting and dutiful resections.

IX. Her Sifter's cruel Letter, mentioned in the preceding.

X. Clarissa, To Miss Howe. Is pleased that she now at last approves of her rejecting Lovelace. Desires her to be comforted as to her. Promises, that she will not run away from life. Hopes she has already got above the shock given her by the ill-treasment she has met with from Lovelace. Has had an Escape, rather than a Loss. Impossible, were it not for the outrage, that she could have been happy with him. And why. Sets in the most affecting, the most dutiful and generous lights, the grief of her Father, Mother, and other Relations, on her account. Has begun the particulars of her tragical story; but would fain avoid proceeding with it. And why. Opens her design to make Mr. Belford her Executor, and gives her reasons for it. Her Father having withdrawn his Malediction, she has now only a Last Blessing to supplicate for.

430 CONTENTS of VOL. VII.

XI. Clariffa, To ber Sifter. Beseeching her, in the most humble and

carnest manner, to procure her a Last Blessing.

XII. Mrs. Norton, To Clariffa. Mr. Brand to be fent up to enquire after her way of life and health. His pedantic character. Believes they will with-hold any favour, till they hear his report. Doubts not that matters will foon take a happy turn.

- KIII. Clarissa, In Answer. The grace she asks for is only a blessing to die with, not to live with. Their favour, if they design her any, may come too late. Doubts her Mother can do nothing for her of herself. A strong confederacy against a poor girl, their Daughter, Sister, Niece. Her Brother perhaps got it renewed before be went to Edinburgh. He needed not, says the; his work is done, and more than done.
- XIV. Lovelace, To Belford. Is mortified at receiving the Letters of rejection. Charlotte writes to the Lady in his favour, in the name of all the family. Every-body approves of what she has written; and he has great hopes from it.
- XV. Copy of Miss Montague's Letter to Clarissa; beseeching her, in the names of all their noble family, to receive Lovelace to favour.
- XVI. Belford, To Lovelace. Proposes to put Belton's Sister into posfession of Belton's House for him. The Lady visibly altered for the worse. Again insists upon his promise not to molest her.
- XVII. Clariffa, To Miss Montague. In Answer to hers, No. xv.
- KVIII. Belford, to Lovelace. Has just now received a Letter from the Lady, which he incloses, requesting Extracts from the Letters written to him by Mr. Lovelace within a particular period. The reasons which determine him to oblige her.
- XIX. Belford, To Clariffa. With the requested extracts; and a plea in his friend's favour.
- XX. Clariffa, To Belford. Thanks him for his communications.

 Requests that he will be her Executor; and gives her reasons for her choice of bim for that solemn office.
- XXI. Belford, To Clarissa. His chearful acceptance of the trust.
- XXII. Belford, To Lowelace. Brief account of the extracts delivered in to the Lady. Tells him of her appointing him her Executor. The melancholy pleasure he shall have in the perusal of her papers. Much more lively and affecting, says he, must be the style of those who write in the height of a present distress, than the dry, narrative, unamimated style of a person relating difficulties surmounted, can be.
- XXIII. Arabella, To Clarissa. In Answer to her Letter, No. xi. requesting a Last Blessing.
- XXIV. Clariffa, To ber Mother. Written in the fervor of her spirit, yet with the deepest humility, and on her knees, imploring her Blessing, and her Father's, as what will sprinkle comfort thro' her last hours.
- XXV. Miss Montague, To Clarissa. In Reply to bers, No. xvii. All their family love and admire her. Their kinsman has not one friend among them. Beseech her to oblige them with the acceptance of an annuity, and the first payment now sent her, at least till she can be

pu

CONTENTS of VOL. VII. 431

put in possession of her own Estate. This Letter signed by Lord M. Lady Sarah, Lady Betty, and her Sifter and felf.

XXVI. Lovelace, To Belford. Raves against the Lady for rejecting him; yet adores her the more for it. Has one half of the house to himself, and that the best; having forbidden Lord M. and the Ladies to fee him, in return for their forbidding him to fee them. Incenfed against Belford for the extracts he has promised from his Letters. Is piqued to death at her proud refusal of him. Curses the vile women, and their potions. But for these latter, the majesty of ber virtue, he fays, would bave faved ber, as it did once before.

XXVII. From the same. He shall not, he tells him, be her Executor. Nobody shall be any-thing to her but himself. What a reprobation of a man, who was once fo dear to her! Further instances

of his raving impatience.

70

ed

.10

rs.

vbe

na-

10

irit,

her

her

All

of an

an be Put XXVIII. Lovelace, To Clariffa. A Letter full of penitence, promifes, praises and admiration of her virtue. Has no hopes of escaping perdition but by her precepts and example. All he begs for the present, is a few lines to encourage him to hope for forgiveness, if he can justify his vows by his future conduct.

XXIX. Clariffa, To Lord M. and the Ladies of his boufe. Thankfully declines accepting of their offered Bounty. Pleads for their being reconciled to their kiniman, for reasons respecting her own peace. Hopes that they may be enabled to rejoice in the effects of his reformation, many years after the is laid low and forgotten.

XXX. Belford, To Lovelace. Brief account of his expelling Thomafine, her fons, and her gallant. Further reflections on Keeping. A state not calculated for a sick bed. Gives a short journal of what had passed relating to the Lady since his last. Mr. Brand enquires after her character and behaviour of Mrs. Smith. His Starchedness, Conceit, and Pedantry.

XXXI. From the same. Further Particulars relating to the Lady. Power left her by her Grandfather's Will.

XXXII. Clariffu, To Lovelace. In answer to Letter, No. xxviii.

XXXIII. Her Uncle Harlowe's cruel Letter, in Answer to hers to her Mother, No. xxiv. Meditation stitched to it with black silk.

XXXIV. Clarissa, To ber Uncle Harlowe. In Reply.

XXXV. Miss Howe, from the Isle of Wight. In answer to hers, No. x. Approves not of her choice of Belford for her Executor; yet thinks the cannot appoint for that office any of her own family. Hopes the will live many-years.

XXXVI. Clarissa, To Miss Howe. Sends her a large packet of Letters; but (for her Relations fake) not all she has received. Must now abide by the choice of Mr. Belford for her Executor; but further refers to the papers the fends her, for her justification on this head.

XXXVII. Antony Harlowe, To Clariffa. A Letter more taunting and reproachful than that of her other Uncle. To what owing.

XXXVIII. Clariffa. In Answer. Wishes that the circumstances of her case had been enquired into. Concludes with a solemn and pathetic prayer for the happiness of the whole family.

XXXIX.

432 CONTENTS of VOL. VII.

as the imagines, intent upon her going to the Plantations. Withes her to discourage improper visitors. Difficult fituations the tests of prudence as well as of virtue. Dr. Lewen's folicitude for her welfare. Her Cousin Morden arrived in England. Further pious confolations.

L. Clarissa, In Answer. Sends her a packet of papers, which, for ber Relations sake, she cannot communicate to Miss Howe. From these she will collect a good deal of her story. Defends, yet gently blames her Mother. Asraid that ther Cousin Morden will be set against her; or, what is worse, that he will seek to avenge her. Her affecting conclusion on her Norton's divine consolations.

XLI. Levelace, To Belford. Is very ill. The Lady, if he die, will repent her refusal of him. One of the greatest felicities that can befal a woman, what. Extremely ill. His ludicrous behaviour on awaking, and finding a clergyman and his friends praying for him by his bedside.

XLII. Belford, To Lovelace. Concerned at his illness. Wishes that he had died before last April. The Lady, he tells him, generously pities him; and prays that he may meet with the mercy he has not shewn.

XLIII. Lovelace, To Belford. In raptures on her goodness to him.

His deep regrets for his treatment of her. Blesses her.

XLIV. Belford, To Lovelace. Congratulates him on his amendment.
The Lady's exalted charity to him. Her story a fine subject for Tragedy. Compares with it, and censures, The Play of the Fair Penitent. She is very ill; the worse for some new instances of the implacableness of her relations. A Meditation on that subject. Poor Belton, he tells him, is at death's door; and desirous to see him.

XLV. Belford, To Clarissa. Acquaints her with the obligation he is under to go to Belton, and (lest she should be surprised) with Love-lace's resolution (as signified in the next Letter) to visit her.

XLVI. Lowelace, To Belford. Resolves to throw himself at the Lady's feet. Lord M. of opinion, that she ought to admit of one Interview.

XLVII. From the same. Arrived in London, he finds the Lady gone abroad. Suspects Belford. His unaccountable freaks at Smith's. His motives for behaving so ludicrously there. The vile Sally Martin, entertains him with her mimicry of the divine Lady.

XLVIII. From the same. His frightful Dream. How affected by it. Sleeping or waking, his Clarissa always present with him. Hears

the is returned to her lodgings. Is hastening to her.

XLIX. From the same. Disappointed again. Is affected by Mrs. Lovick's expostulations. Is shewn a Meditation On being bunted after by the enemy of her soul, as it is intitled. His light comments upon it. Leaves word that he resolves to see her. Makes several other efforts for that purpose

L. Belford, To Lovelace. Reproaches him that he has not kept his honour with him. Inveighs against, and severely censures him for his light behaviour at Smith's. Belton's terrors and despondency.

Mowbray's impenetrable behaviour.

LI. Belford,

- LI. Belford, To Lovelace. Mowbray's impatience to run from a dying Belton to a too lively Lovelace. Mowbray abuses Mr. Belton's servant in the language of a Rake of the common class. Resection on the brevity of Life.
- LII. Lovelace, To Belford. Receives a Letter from Clariffa, written by way of allegory to induce him to forbear hunting after her. Copy of it. He takes it in a literal fense. Exults upon it. Will now hasten down to Lord M. and receive the gratulations of all his family on her returning favour. Gives an interpretation of his frightful dream to his own liking.
- LIII. LIV. From the same. Pities Belton. Rakishly defends him on the issue of a duel, which now adds to the poor man's terrors. His opinion of death, and the fear of it. Resections on the conduct of Play-writers with regard to servants. He cannot account for the turn his Clarista has taken in his favour. Hints at one bopeful cause of it. Now Matrimony seems to be in his power, he has some retro-
- LV. Belford, To Lowelace. Continuation of his narrative of Belton's last illness and impatience. The poor man abuses the gentlemen of the Faculty. Belford censures some of them for their greediness after fees. Belton dies. Serious resections on the occasion.
- LVI. Lovelace, To Belford. Hopes Belton is happy: And why. He is fetting out for Berks.
- LVII. Belford, To Lovelace. Attends the Lady. She is extremely ill, and receives the Sacrament. Complains of the haraffes his friend had given her. Two different persons (from her Relations, he supposes) enquire after her. Her affecting address to the Doctor, Apothecary, and himself. Disposes of some more of her apparel; for a very affecting purpose.
- LVIII. Dr. Lewen, To Clariffa. Writes on his pillow, to prevail upon her to prosecute Lovelace for his Life.
- LIX. Her pathetic and noble Answer.

.

0

W.

ne

lis

ın,

it.

ars

Irs.

nted

ents

cral

his

for

ncy.

ford,

- LX. Miss Arabella Harlowe, To Clarissa. Proposes, in a most taunting and cruel manner, the prosecution of Lovelace; or, if not, her going to Pennsylvania.
- LXI. Clariffa's affesting Anfaver.
- LXII. LXIII. Mrs. Norton, To Clarissa. Her Uncle's cruel Letter to what owing. Colonel Morden resolved on a visit to Lovelace.—Mrs. Hervey, in a private conversation with her, accounts for, yet blames, the cruelty of the Family. Miss Dolly Hervey wishes to attend her.
- LXIV. Clarissa. In Answer. Thinks she has been treated with great rigour by her relations. Expresses more warmth than usual on this subject. Yet soon checks herself. Grieves that Colonel Morden resolves on a visit to Lovelace. Touches upon her Sister's taunting Letter. Requests Mrs. Norton's Prayers for Patience and Resignation.
- LXV. Miss Howe, To Clarissa. Approves now of her appointment of Belford for an Executor. Admires her greatness of mind in despising Lovelace. Every-body she is with, taken with Hickman. Yet she cannot help wantoning with the power his obsequious Love gives her over him.
 - Vol. VII.

LXVI. LXVII. Clariffs, To Mifs Howe. Instructive lessons and obfervations on her treatment of Hickman.—Acquaints her with all that has happened fince her last. Fears that her Allegorical Letter is not strictly right. Is forced by illness to break off. Resumes. Wishes her married.

LXVIII. Mr. Wyerley, To Clariffa. A generous renewal of his address to her now in her calamity; and a tender of his best services.

LXIX. Her open, kind, and instructive Ansaver.

LXX. Lovelace, To Belford. Uneasy, on a suspicion that her Letter to him was a stratagem only. What he will do, if he find it so.

LXXI. Belford, To Lovelace. Brief account of his proceedings in Belton's affairs. The Lady extremely ill. Thought to be near her end. Has a low-spirited day. Recovers her spirits; and thinks herself above this world. She bespeaks her coffin. Confesses that her Letter to Lovelace was Allegorical only. The light in which Belford beholds her.

LXXII. From the same. An affecting conversation that passed between the Lady and Dr. H. She talks of Death, he says, and prepares for it, as if it were an occurrence as familiar to her, as dressing and undressing. Worthy behaviour of the Doctor. She makes observations on the vanity of life, on the wisdom of an early preparation for

death, and on the last behaviour of Belton.

I.XXIII. LXXIV. LXXV. Lovelace, To Belford. Particulars of what passed between himself, Colonel Morden, Lord M. and Mowbray, on the visit made him by the Colonel. Proposes Belford to Miss Charlotte Montague, by way of Raillery, for an husband.——He incloses Brand's Letter, which misrepresents (from credulity and officiousness, rather than from ill-will) the Lady's conduct.

YOUNG creatures, whose confidence has been obtained by oaths, vows, promises. Evil of Censoriousness. People deemed good too much addicted to it. Desires to know what he means by his ridicule with re-

gard to his charming Coufin.

LXXVII. From the same. A proper test of the purity of writing. The Lady again makes excuses for her Allegorical Letter. Her calm behaviour, and generous and useful restections, on his communicating

to her Brand's misrepresentations of her conduct.

LXXVIII. Colonel Morden, To Clarissa. Offers his affistance and service to make the best of what has happened. Advises her to marry. Lovelace as the only means to bring about a general Reconciliation. Has no doubt of his resolution to do her justice. Desires to know if the has.

LXXIX. Clariffa. In Anfaver.

LXXX. Lovelace, To Belford. His reasonings and ravings on finding the Lady's Letter to him only an Allegorical one. In the midft of these, the natural gaiety of his heart runs him into ridicule on Belford. His ludicrous image drawn from a monument in Westminsterabbey. Resumes his serious disposition. If the worst happen (The Lord of Heaven and Earth, says he, avert that worst!) he bids him only write that he advises him to take a trip to Paris. And that will stab him to the heart,

LXXXL

LXXXI. Belford, To Lovelace. The Lady's coffin brought up stairs. He is extremely shocked and discomposed at it. Her intrepidity. Great minds, he observes, cannot avoid doing uncommon things. Reflection on the curiosity of women.

LXXXII. From the same. Description of the cossin, and devices on the lid. It is placed in her bed-chamber. His serious application to

Lovelace on her great behaviour.

LXXXIII. From the same. Aftonished at his levity in the Abbey-in-

flance. The Lady extremely ill.

r

t

[-

g

s,

}-

c-

he

e-

UE

1-

Ty

n.

if

ng

of

eler-

be

im

nat

LXXXIV. Lovelace, To Belford. All he has done to the Lady, a jest to die for; since her triumph has ever been greater than her sufferings. He will make over all his possessions and all his reversions to the Doctor if he will but prolong her life for one twelvemonth. How, but for her calamities, could her Equanimity blaze out as it does! He could now love her with an intellectual slame. He cannot bear to think, that the last time she so triumphantly lest him, should be the last. His Conscience, he says, tears him. He is sick of the remembrance of his vile plots.

LXXXV. Belford, To Lovelace. The Lady alive, ferene, and calm. The more ferene for having finished, figned, and sealed her Last

Will; deferred till now, for reasons of filial duty.

LXXXVI. Miss Howe, To Clarissa. Pathetically laments the illness of her own Mother, and of her dear friend. Now all ber pertnesses to the former, she says, say in ber face. She lays down her pen; and resumes it, to tell her, with great joy, that her Mother is better. She has

had a visit from her Cousin Morden. What passed in it.

LXXXVII. From the same. Displeased with the Colonel for thinking too freely of the Sex. Never knew a man that had a slight notion of the virtue of women in general, who deserved to be valued for his morals. Why women must be either more or less virtuous than men. Useful hints to young Ladies. Is out of humour with Mr. Hickman. Resolves to see her soon in town.

LXXXVIII. Belford, To Lovelace. The Lady writes and reads upon her coffin, as upon a defk. The Doctor resolves to write to her

Father. Her intense, yet chearful devotion.

LXXXIX. Clarissa, To Miss Howe. A Letter full of pious reflections, and good advice, both general and particular; and breathing the true Christian spirit of charity, forgiveness, patience, and resignation. A just reflection, to her dear friend, upon the mortifying nature of pride.

XC. Mrs. Norton, To Clarissa. Her account of an interesting conversation at Harlowe-Place between the Family and Cosonel Morden;
and of another between her Mother and self. The Colonel incensed
against them all. Her advice concerning Belford, and other matters.
Miss Howe has obtained leave, she hears, to visit her. Praises Mr.
Hickman. Gently censures Miss Howe on bis account. Her truly maternal and pious comfortings.

XCI. Belford, To Lovelace. The Lady's fight begins to fail her. She bleffes God for the ferenity she enjoys. It is what, she says, she had prayed for. What a bleffing, so near to her dissolution, to have her prayers answered! Gives particular directions to him about her papers, about her Last Will, and Apparel. Comforts the women and him on

U 2

their concern for her. Another Letter brought her from Colonel Morden. The substance of it. Belford writes to hasten up the Colonel. Dr. H. has also written to her Father; and Brand to Mr. John Harlowe a Letter recanting his officious one.

XCII. Dr. H. To James Harlowe senior, Esq;

XCIII. Copy of Mr. Belford's Letter to Colonel Morden, to haften him

up.

XCIV. Lovelace, To Belford. He feels the torments of the damned, in the remorfe that wrings his heart, on looking back on his past actions by this Lady. Gives him what he calls a faint picture of his horrible uneasiness, riding up and down, expecting the return of his servant as soon as he had dispatched him. Woe be to the man who brings him the fatal news!

XCV. Belford, To Lovelace. Further particulars of the Lady's pious and exemplary behaviour. She rejoices in the gradual death afforded her. Her thankful acknowlegements to Mr. Belford, Mrs. Smith, and Mrs. Lovick, for their kindness to her. Her edifying address to

Mr. Belford.

XCVI. Clarissa, To Mrs. Norton. In Answer to hers, No. xc. Affiicted only for her friends. Defires not now to see her Cousin Morden, nor even herself, or Miss Howe. God will bave no rivals, she says, in the hearts of those whom He sanstifies. Advice to Miss Howe, To Mr. Hickman. Blesses all her relations and friends.

XCVII. Lovelace, To Belford. A Letter of deep diffres, remorfe, and impatience. Yet would be fain lighten his own guilt by reflec-

tions on the cruelty of her Relations.

XCVIII. Belford, To Lovelace. The Lady is disappointed at the Doctor's telling her that she may yet live two or three Days. Death from grief, the slowest of deaths. Her solemn forgiveness of Lovelace, and prayer for him. Owns, that once she could have loved him. Her generous concern for his future happiness. Belford's good resolutions.

XCIX. Mr. Brand, To Mr. John Wolton. In excuse of his credulity, and of the misreports founded upon it.

CI. Lovelace, To Belford. Bleffes him for fending him word the Lady is better. Her charity towards him cuts him to the heart. He cannot bear it. His vehement felf-reproaches. Curfes his contriving genius; and his disbelief, that there could be such virtue in woman. The world never saw such an Husband as he will make, if she recover, and will be his.

CII. Belford, To Lovelace. The Lady's pious frame. The approaches of death how supportable to her: And why. She has no reason, she says, to grieve for any-thing but the sorrow she has given to her

friends.

CIII. Lovelace, To Belford. Never prayed in his life, put all the years of it together, as he has done for this fortnight past. Has repented of all his baseness: And will nothing do? Conjures him to send him good news in his next, as he would not be answerable for consequences.

- CIV. Belford, To Lovelace. Solemn leave taken of her by the Doctor and Apothecary; who tell her she will hardly see the next night. The pleasure with which she receives the intimation. How unlike poor Belton's behaviour bers! A Letter from Miss Howe. Copy of it. She cannot see to read it. Her exalted expressions on hearing it read. Tries to write an answer to it; but cannot. Dictates to Mrs. Lovick. Writes the subscriptive part herself on her knees. Colonel Morden arrived in town.
- CV. From the same. What passes on Colonel Morden's visit to his Cousin. She enjoins the Colonel not to avenge her.
- CVI. From the same. Her filent devotion. Strong symptoms of her approaching dissolution. Comforts her Cousin and him. Wishes the had had her Parents Last Blessing: But God, the says, would not let ber depend for comfort on any but Himself. Repeats her request to the Colonel, that he will not seek to avenge ber wrongs; and to Belford, that he will endeavour to beal all breaches.
- CVII. From the same. The Colonel writes to Mr. John Harlowe, that they may now spare themselves the trouble of debating about a Reconciliation. The Lady takes from her bosom a miniature picture of Miss Howe, to be given to Mr. Hickman after her decease. Her affecting address to it, on parting with it.
- CVIII. Belford, To Mowbray. Defires him and Tourville to throw themselves in the way of Lovelace, in order to prevent him doing either mischief to himself or others, on the receipt of the fatal news which he shall probably send him in an hour or two.
- CIX. Lovelace, To Belford. A Letter filled with rage, curses, and alternate despair and hope.
- CX. Belford, To Lovelace. With the fatal hint, that he may take a Tour to Paris, or where-ever else his destiny shall lead him.
- CXI. Mowbray, To Belford. With the particulars, in his libertine manner, of Lovelace's behaviour on his receiving the fatal breviate, and of the distracted way he is in.

.

ne ne

es n, er

he as m

V.

END of Vol. VII.



Louis pleaserie result lenoted Laurend

The same of the sa

The state of the s

white the Charles Salame I we have nicked by Judian all all others have all the Was day be reached by him was the specifical Complete with white draw, we had not been the section as Dige wollde por Believe believe me Tour A Letter ly're beit Hong. Cony of he She cannot fee to reid an Armen of the wellen and cord: there's tell all and an entering of the Co. December 1900 pour a Total day see franch but rains W. Moired relices some

the state of the s agreet false and he forest pale on tarable on at their or their drawts day the day of the property of the tent of the A Supt of days on the tent of the tent of time transferry the stript of the company that such trace, country and to the state of th and the state of t the many thought the day of the state of the AND THE RESIDENCE OF THE PARK The role I may have been a supplied to the second of the second of the second in all active we half or his only to have